

# UNCLASSIFIED

April 16, 1963

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Clemens:

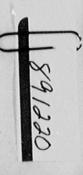
In reply to your March 29 letter asking for a favorite quote of Mark Twain, following is the quote:

"Let us be thankful for the fools.
But for them the rest of us could not succeed."

Sincerely,

UNCLASSIFIED

\* 1 APR 1981



\$1,00 A COPY

\$3.00 A SUBSCRIPTION

CYRIL CLEMENS
EDITOR

MARK TWAIN JOURNAL
ESTABLISHED 1936
KIRKWOOD 22, MISSOURI

29th March 1963

Dear General Spaatz

You may have a
Mark Twain story or quotation you
have liked through the years

I am editing the book presenting the favorite Mark Twain
piece of noted Americans and would
indeed like to include you

With all good wishes

Cyri1

Clemens

"I am a great admirer of Mark Twain who brought joy into all our lives,"

Han automo 9, Texas

Dear Tooley as you private know Tenn Lewis was The Openial Classmole 2 Mina Thompson. In writing to let you know that you have been designand of take Ferm's Mace, and I am to informing nina by cetter trace This action was taken ath Consulting with Strong Brand by either. I feet for theur ilwould hok with both you & nina, in view of your king + Close trumstrip + I want h show the must set up in our Clan booken which is about ready for the typid. Perhaps I stand explain That my original intention was h'boil down The letters neund int a pound up of the Cruse in my letter in the Frall issue, assembly, but the response was to five & decided to que our another booker (about nov. 15) timelar of the 1960 one Alemin you want h add any they to the cetter ofon sent me shoot it in migury frapoly But regards John Carruse

GENERAL CARL A. SPAATZ USAF RET CHEVY CHASE, MARYLAND Aug 30, 1962 La Sauny have given your offer but also theme to do fustice to a participation I leave liad to decide the negative une to my liking than keine with you on a board of directors, but to thank that leaffen you should have formed the U.S. hasing Litter in the Kilmal Druk o arluglow Braids. To Westerd Own and the Rogue River and expect to be there until that he wanted you to with Bill on the rive

Underful Continuation of alorholice adventurers, To Cleana and ormally. Topen Our adopted jourily prows mora effensive rackar thom less, with all the years of college looming ahead Mr. Grant G. Conrad 24 North Washington Street Boyertown, Pennsylvania

Dear Mr. Conrad

I appreciate your bringing to my attention the interest of your son, Gary, in attending a service academy. He appears to be well qualified and most deserving.

The Members of Congress are privileged by law to fill the majority of vacancies at the service academies. It is their prerogative to select the young men from their constituencies who will be nominated for appointment to most of the spaces available in each new class. Therefore, it is quite important for your son to obtain a Congressional nomination.

As you state, Gary is under consideration for nomination by Representative Rhodes. He is also entitled to apply for a nomination to both of your United States Senators. He should do this at an early date since many of the Members require their applicants to undergo the Civil Service designation examination before deciding on their nominees. If Gary is successful in receiving a nomination to the Air Force Academy, he will be afforded full consideration for appointment consistent with his nomination status and his achievements on the Academy's entrance examinations.

I extend best wishes to Gary in his endeavor to become a Cadet at the Air Force Academy.

Sincerely

CARL A. SPAATZ General, USAF (Ret)

Boyertown, Pa. August 7, 1962

Before stating my reason for writing to you personally I would like to introduce myself, I am Grant G. Conrad, living at 24 N. Wash. St., in Boyertown, Pa. I am employed by the Boyertown Auto Body Works Inc., since the end of the war as a Draftsman. I served for 3 1/2 years in the U. S. Air Force as a radio operator and mechanic both in the air and also on ground stations. I spent time in South America, The Aleutians, and The South Pacific (New Guinea, Morati, Leyte, Palawan). My Souadron was the 2nd Long Range Reconnaisance Sqdn. based at that time in Denver Colorado. (Euckley Field)

Now Sir, the nature of my lusiness: Ly Son whose name is Gary applied to Congressmen George M Rhoeds for an appointment to one of Cur Country's Service Academies. On July 5, he received his initial order to report to the Air Force Base Closest him for a Preliminary physical. He of course took this exam at Olmstead Air Force Dase at Middletown, Pa. on July 9. He then received a letter from The Air Force Academy Headquarters stating that he had minor dental defects. This has already been accomplished. I wish to know if there is any information you can forward me that may help my Son to obtain an appointment?

Perhaps you are interested in some of the boys' cualities.

He. Will graduate in June of 1963 from the Boyertown Area High School. He is a student in the Academic class and is interested in Engineering and Physical Educa on.

HA grades have always been by ter than average and he has always been participating in the accelerated class comparative to bis grade. He has very good references in the Community, attends his Church (Lutheran) regularly, and is very active in Sports.

In Junior High School he lettered in Football, laseball, and Basketball.

Thus far in Senior High School lettered in Vardity Football as a center and in track as a weight man. (Discus and Shot)

As a very interested Parent who feels this is the type of education more young men should have to enable them to be good citizens I am writing you Sir re uesting any information or help you can give me in this matter.

Thank you very kindly for anything you feel you can do for my Son. God Fless You.

Grant G. Conrad 24 N. Washington St., Boyertown, Pa.

HENRY A. GARDNER
ALFRED T. CARTON
JAMES H. DOUGLAS
ARTHUR D. CHILGREN
MORRISON WAUD
ANTHONY L. MICHEL
JAMES A. VELDE
ROBERT F. GRAHAM
LAURENCE A. CARTON
GORDON H. SMITH
LLOYD W. BOWERS
HARVEY J. CARSON
ROBERT A. GARDNER, JR.
WILLIAM J. NEALON
MARRY A. FISCHER, JR.
REY GARRETT, JR.
PETER H. MERLIN
JOSEPH P. CARR
JAMES J. MC CLURE, JR.
THOMAS ARTHUR
WILLIA J. L. MORRISON
A. WARE ADAMS
JOHN K. NOTZ, JR.
GORDON LANG, JR.
GORDON LANG, JR.
ALEX R. SEITH

TELEPHONE RANDÓLPH 6-2452 CABLE - GARCAR

#### GARDNER, CARTON, DOUGLAS & CHILGREN

FIRST NATIONAL BANK BUILDING
CHICAGO 3

May 25, 1962

General Carl A. Spaatz 5 Grafton Street Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Tooey:

Many thanks for your note. I enclose copy of a second draft. I intend no change of substance from the first draft. Changes in the second and third paragraphs are an attempt at better expression. In the third paragraph from the bottom of the second page, at Jim Strobel's suggestion I left out the words "look solely" and have substituted for them "depend." I also left out the words "or commandant" in the following paragraph.

I have just talked to Tommy White and he said you feel we should not try to get action by the board of the Association at the Colorado Springs meeting. I think this is right, particularly in view of our inability to talk to Curt LeMay. What I would like to do is to submit the report to Joe Foss so that he could discuss it with the policy committee, and leave it with the policy committee for action at the September meeting. I would also hope that at the Colorado Springs meeting or in the near future Joe Foss would release the report so that it would be well discussed before it ever comes up for action by the board of the Association.

Talking with Jim Strobel this afternoon, he thought there was much to be said for this view and that the President of the Association, if he so desired, could release the committee report as a report that he was placing before the policy committee and that would be acted upon at the September meeting.

Very sincerely,

JHD-vw Enclosure

#### SECOND DRAFT

May 24, 1962

To: The Honorable Joseph J. Foss President, Air Force Association

From: James H. Douglas, Chairman of Committee to Consider Structure of Joint Chiefs of Staff

#### COMMITTEE:

As an outgrowth of discussions of the Policy Committee and Board of Directors on March 15 you appointed the committee referred to to consider whether and how our Joint Chiefs system might be made more effective. The committee met in Washington on May 17 and there were present Generals Spaatz, Twining and White; Messrs. Garlock, Leach, and the chairman. Messrs. Curtis and Montgomery were not able to attend. Prior to the meeting the chairman had presented his general views to members of the committee by letter, and had been able to have discussions with some of the members. The committee concentrated its attention on suggested ways of assuring the Joint Chiefs' ability to provide the best available military advice to the President and Secretary of Defense.

#### PRESENT SITUATION:

The Defense Reorganization Act of 1958 aimed to provide: unified direction of the Services under civilian control of the Secretary of Defense; a clear and direct line of command to the unified and specified combat commands, and for the unified, strategic direction of the combat forces.

The law concentrated and strengthened civilian control and direction of the Armed Forces, but did little to strengthen the Joint Chiefs of Staff as advisers to the President and the Secretary of Defense. The combat forces of the Services have been integrated under unified commands, with a clear and direct line of command through the Joint Chiefs of Staff to the Secretary of Defense. This has increased the responsibilities of the Joint Chiefs as they are now responsible for operational control of the unified commands. Also the Secretary of Defense calls upon them increasingly to advise with respect to the defense budget. And although the Chiefs carry these full time responsibilities, they continue to bear the heavy administrative burdens of their separate services.

While individual Chiefs have performed their dual roles with distinction, the system is faulty in imposing two full time jobs on each Chief. This is particularly so as the dual roles are less closely related today since the removal of the unified commands from the control of the individual services as executive agents. Today the running of an individual service appears logically separable from the responsibilities of a member of the Jeint Chiefs.

Regarding the Joint Chiefs' advisory function, so long as they must play the dual role of corporate military adviser to the Secretary of Defense on the one hand and military leaders of their individual services on the other, the Secretary's military advice will continue to be the product of compromise between service positions. This is inevitable under the present system. And as the Secretary meets with a conflict of views and compromise in the Joint Chiefs, the Secretary will tend to rely increasingly upon his civilian advisers in defense decisions. The present system fails to give the civilian Secretary the best military advice available.

#### CONCLUSIONS:

It is the view of the committee that the defense organization can be strengthened and its operations made increasingly effective by freeing the Joint Chiefs from their individual service responsibilities so that they can devote full time to their duties as members of the Joint Chiefs: providing qualified, objective and timely military advice to the President and to the Secretary of Defense, and providing staff planning for the organization and direction of the combat forces.

The Joint Staff for plans and operations should be strengthened so that the members of the Joint Chiefs would depend on the Joint Staff for advice in their deliberations.

To carry out this proposal fully, legislation would be required which would provide a joint staff adequate to its broadened responsibilities, provide appropriate descriptive titles, and establish a new chief of each of the services. It is believed, however, that steps could be taken without legislation which would secure substantial benefits of the proposal. Under the Defense Reorganization Act of 1958 the Chiefs of Services have broad powers to delegate authority to their Vice Chiefs.

The proposal implies no criticism either of civilian or military officers of the Defense Department or the Services. It appears a logical step to correct a weakness in the system that has become increasingly evident as our civilian and military leadership has sought to carry out the purposes of the Defense Reorganization Act of 1958.

HENRY A. GARDNER
ALFRED T. CARTON
JAMES H. JOUGLAS
ARTHUR D. CHILGREN
MORRISON WAJD
ANTHONY L. MICHEL
JAMES A. VELDE
ROBERT F. GRAHAM
LAURENCE A. CARTON
GORDON H. SMITH
LLOYD W. BOWERS
HARVEY J. CARSON
ROBERT A. GARDNER, JR.
WILLIAM J. NEALON
HARRY A. FISCHER, JR.
RAY GARRETT, JR.
PETER H. MERLIN
JOSEPH P. CARR
JAMES J. MCCLURE, JR.
THOMAS ARTHUR
WILLIAM L. MORRISON
A. WARE ADAMS
JOHN K. NOTZ, JR.
GORDON LANG, JR.
GORDON LANG, JR.
GORDON LANG, JR.
GLEX R. SEITH

TELEPHONE RANDOLPH 6-2452 CABLE - GARCAR

#### GARDNER, CARTON, DOUGLAS & CHILGREN

FIRST NATIONAL BANK BUILDING
CHICAGO 3

May 22, 1962

General Carl A. Spaatz 5 Grafton Street Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Tooey:

It was immensely good to see you at our meeting and luncheon last Thursday. I had a good talk with Bob McNamara. He has, of course, given considerable thought to the problem we discussed and would relcome the suggestion from the Air Force Association that the Chiefs be freed from their services to devote full time to their duties as Joint Chiefs. I think he believes with conviction that it would make the Joint Chiefs more effective and give him better military advice.

I enclose a draft of report that it seems to me would be proper for the committee to make to Joe Foss. I believe it is a good thing for the Air Force Association to express itself along these lines. I have sent a copy to each member and suggested to Tommy that he show it to Curt. I have also sent a copy to Jim Strobel.

I look forward to receiving your comments and suggestions before the end of the week. Telephone me and reverse the charges if you wish.

Very sincerely,

Jim Donglas

JHD-vw Enclosure

May 22, 1962

To: The Honorable Joseph J. Foss President, Air Force Association

From: James H. Douglas, Chairman of Committee to Consider Structure of Joint Chiefs of Staff

#### COMMITTEE:

As an outgrowth of discussions of the Policy Committee and Board of Directors on March 16 you appointed the committee referred to to consider whether and how our Joint Chiefs system might be made more effective. The committee met in Washington on April 17 and there were present Generals Spaatz, Twining and White; Messrs. Garlock, Leach and the chairman. Messrs. Curtis and Montgomery were not able to attend. Prior to the meeting the chairman had presented his general views to members of the committee by letter, and had been able to have discussions with some of the members. The committee concentrated its attention on suggested ways of assuring the Joint Chiefs' ability to provide the best available military advice to the President and Secretary of Defense.

#### PRESENT SITUATION:

The Defense Reorganization Act of 1958 aimed to provide: unified direction of the Services under civilian control of the Secretary of Defense; a clear and direct line of command to the unified and specified combat commands, and for the unified, strategic direction of the combat forces. The law concentrated and strengthened civilian direction of the Armed Forces but did little to strengthen createst the Joint Chiefs of Staff as advisers to the President and the Secretary of Defense. The combat forces of the Services have been integrated under unified commands with a clear and direct line of command through the Joint Chiefs of Staff to the Secretary of Defense. This improved organization has increased the responsibilities of the Joint Chiefs as they, for the Secretary of Defense, are now responsible for operational control of the unified commands. Also, they are being called upon increasingly to advise the Secretary of Defense with respect to the defense budget. Although the Chiefs carry these heavy full time responsibilities, they continue to bear the administrative burdens of their separate services.

While individual Chiefs have performed their dual roles with distinction, the system is faulty in imposing two full time jobs on each Chief. And it should be noted that the dual roles are no longer as closely related today, since

the removal of the unified commands from the control of the individual services as executive agents. Today the running of an individual service appears logically separable from the responsibilities of a member of the Joint Chiefs.

Regarding the Joint Chiefs' advisory function, so long as they must play the dual role of corporate military adviser to the Secretary of Defense on the one hand and military leaders of their individual services on the other, the Secretary's military advice will continue to be the product of compromist between service positions. This is inevitable under the present system. And as he meets with a conflict of views and compromise in the Joint Chiefs, the Secretary will tend to rely increasingly upon his civilian advisers in defense decisions. The present system fails to give the civilian Secretary the best military advice available.

#### CONCLUSIONS:

It is the view of the committee that the defense organization can be strengthened and its operations made increasingly effective by freeing the Joint Chiefs from their individual service responsibilities so that they can devote full time to their duties as members of the Joint Chiefs: providing qualified, objective and timely military advice to the President and to the Secretary of Defense, and providing staff planning for the organization and direction of the combat forces.

The Joint Staff for plans and operations should be strengthened so that the members of the Joint Chiefs would look solely on the Joint Staff for advice in their deliberations.

To carry out this proposal fully, legislation would be required which would provide a joint staff adequate to its broadened responsibilities, provide appropriate descriptive titles, and establish a new chief or commandant of each of the services. It is believed, however, that steps could be taken without legislation which would secure substantial benefits of the proposal. Under the Defense Reorganization Act of 1958 the Chiefs of Services have broad powers to delegate authority to their Vice Chiefs.

The proposal implies no criticism either of civilian or military officers of the Defense Department or the Services. It appears a logical step to correct a weakness in the system that has become increasingly evident as our civilian and military leadership has sought to carry out the purposes of the Defense Reorganization Act of 1958.

May 1, 1962

Mr. Robert C. Candee Rohrbaugh and Company Union Trust Building Washington 5, D. C.

Dear Bob:

Thanks so much for sending me the snapshot from Ira's Castle Coombe party. I think you did very well as a photographer.

Sincerely,

General Carl Speatz USAF (ret.)

### ROHRBAUGH AND COMPANY

Investment Securities

UNION TRUST BUILDING WASHINGTON 5, D. C.

MEMBERS
PHILADELPHIA - BALTIMORE
STOCK EXCHANGE

TELEPHONE STERLING 3-7373 WA 727

April 13, 1962

General Carl Spaatz 5 Grafton Street Chevy Chase 15, Maryland

Dear General:

Here are a couple of snap shots from Ira's Castle Coombe party which you may put in your memory book or file in the ash can. I don't regard myself as a very good photographer.

Sincerely,

RCC: EP

Robert C. Candee

Christie

April 10, 1962

Major General John M. Weikert United Aircraft International, Inc. 1026 - 17th Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.

Dear P.D.:

Receipt is acknowledged of your March 28 letter with reference to the Army-Navy Town Club luncheon for Art Christie on April 19.

I am sorry that a previous engagement on that date will prevent my being present.

Mrs. Spaatz and myself both enjoyed thoroughly your dinner for Art last week. I hope there was no sound recording of the noise made by the "scrapiron quartet" on that occasion.

Sincerely,

## UNITED AIRCRAFT INTERNATIONAL

EAST HARTFORD 8, CONNECTICUT, U. S. A.

WASHINGTON REPRESENTATIVE 1026 17 # STREET, N. W. WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

METROPOLITAN 8-6425

March 28, 1962

General Carl Spaatz 5 Grafton Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear General Spaatz:

At the suggestion of several people, I am arranging a stag luncheon for our good friend, Art Christie, who is retiring and going to Spain to live. It is hoped that you can join us for this "so long until we see you again" visit with Art.

We will meet in the Sea Room at the Army-Navy Town Club at 12 noon on Thursday, April 19, 1962. The cost of this luncheon will be \$7.50. Please mail your check made payable to John M. Weikert to Room 607, 1026 17th Street, N. W., Washington 6, D. C. at your earliest convenience. If no answer is received from you by Monday the 16th, it will be assumed that you will be unable to attend.

Sincerely,

P.D.

John M. Weikert

JMW/ann

March 29, 1962

Mr. Cyril Clemens, Editor Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

My dear Clemens:

Thank you for the copy of the Mark Twain Journal.

In answer to your question, my favorite Mark Twain book is "Huckleberry Finn."

Sincerely,

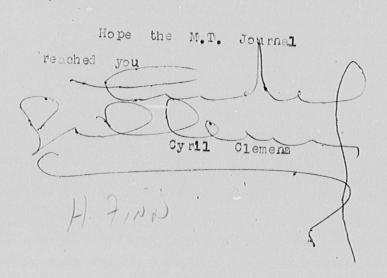
CYRIL CLEMENS, Editor MICH THAIN JOURNAL OLANGOS 22, CESTAS

18th March 1962

Dear General Spaatz

Friends tell me you have a favorite Mark Iwain story

I am editing the book
presenting the favorites of
noted Americans & would indeed
like to have you aboard



November 14, 1961

Door Curts

Bozo was here on the 11th to deliver the Veterans' Day address. His speech was most timely and inspiring and at the same time reassuring to a cross-section of people usually making up an American Legian luncheon.

There were over six hundred present and during his address there was no talk-ing, not even a cough.

A point occurred to me while thinking over his remarks which I mentioned to him. Boxo suggested my writing you.

I know practically nothing of the strategic and tactical operations in this day and time. My remarks to him had to do with public relations, and I am sure it is one of the phases of the operation of the Mr Force with which you are concerned.

My thoughts have to do with the justification of manned aircraft when almost all the news has to do with missiles, resulting in the average citizen feeling that manned aerospace-craft are obsolete and that missiles should ultimately replace them.

Although Bazo's speech handled this point exceptionally well, yet I feel more can be done.

i realize it is most difficult to talk of counter-measures, either electronic or mechanical, so that it will be understood by the average man and still not disclose classified matters. I am sure, however, that your writers can give a twist to speeches of top afficers whereby the superiority of the flexibility of a machine manned by a human brain coupled with counter-measures can far autweigh the effectiveness of missiles, particularly at the time when the anti-missile missile or anti-missile device and the tracking of the trajectory of an ICBM, have further advanced. The problem is simply to revolent the public to the fact that the ICBM is for from being the ultimate weapon that Mr. Khrushchev would like for them to think; also, that the manned aerospace-craft has a far greater capability in the future than is generally understood.

This situation was brought home when a former Assistant Secretary of Air Force said to me that the B-70 program was a mistake, that the B-70 was nothing more than a blow-torch, the heat of which would attract every anti-aircraft missile in the sky.

Paga Two

November 14, 1961

Such thinking as this leads the average person to feel that the airmen make a case for manned aircraft in the interest of empire building.

I know that none of us want the Air Force to develop a case against it such as the Navy brought on Itself with the attempt to justify the battleship.

A little explanation in speeches can circumvent the development of a similar situation for the Air Force even though the matter of counter-measures must be handled most carefully.

I am sending a copy of this letter to Bazo and will discuss with Teasy as he ex-

With best regards, I am

Sincerely,

ERC/S

Everett R. Cook

Coneral Curtis E. LeMay Chief of Staff United States Air Force Washington 25, D. C. July 12, 1961

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor-in-Chief Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Cyril:

I appreciate very much your nice invitation in your letter of June 26 to address the Mark Twain Birthday Banquet on November 30. I am very sorry that I will not be able to be with you on this occasion, much as I would like to.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

To Cynil Plemas

I wonthy desearder 5

I have wani
I have brought higher

hat old our livey

PRESIDENT JOHN F. KENNEDY'S TRIBUTE TO MARK TWAIN

Cyril Clemens, Editor-in-Chief

# Mark Twain Journal

published since 1936

Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Jeneral John F. Kennedy's Problem of Mark Twans

Bulloley Bangnet on househow 30

the Jesund John Want Law Whom

In also admine

Subscription \$3.00 per year throughout the world - Advertising rates upon request.

May 23, 1961

Brig. Gen. Harold L. Clark Building 1676 Kelly Air Force Base TEXAS

#### Dear Harold:

I have received your letter of May 19th. It was certainly a wonderful visit at the Daedalian meeting. I am glad that Robert Tobin has pub in for Hereditary Membership.

I am afraid that I cannot give you a copy of my talk since it was entirely impromptu. My memory is so bad that I cannot possibly think of what I said then.

With all good wishes to everybody.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl Spaatz

Order of Daedalians



9 May 1961

General Carl Spaatz c/o NEWSWEEK 1229 National Press Bldg. Washington 4, D. C.

Dear Tooey:

It was indeed a pleasure to see you again, and a privilege and honor to the Order of Daedalians to have you with us at the convention.

Your remarks in response to Ira's introduction were so inspiring and right down the line regarding man-controlled aerospace flight, that I think we should have a copy of it to distribute to all Daedalians. If you don't have one, please write one.

I have delayed writing this letter until I could tell you that Robert Tobin has applied for Hereditary Membership and his application was approved on  $6~\mathrm{May}$ .

With all good wishes and my best regards to Mrs. Spaatz.

Sincerely,

Harold L. Clark Brig. Gen., USAF, Ret. National Commander MERIAN C. COOPER

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California

June 30, 1961

#### PERSONAL AND CONFIDENTIAL

General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear "Tooey":

I try always, when I mention someone's name in a letter - either good or bad - to send him a copy of the letter. I am therefore enclosing copies of my letters to Jimmy Doolittle and Tex Thornton.

I am also enclosing a P.S. to my letter to Vice Admiral Frederick H. Pennoyer, USN, Ret., who was my roommate for three years at the Naval Academy and one of my close friends. As you will note, it concerns my son, Dick, who graduated this month (as you know) from the Air Force Academy.

Please give my love to Ruth and to all the family.

Cordially, your friend,

Merian C. Cooper

MCC-mmg

Enclosures:

cc Letters to Colonel Charles B. Thornton and
Lt. General James H. Doolittle
P.S. to Vice Admiral Frederick H. Pennoyer, Jr., USN, Ret.

FERSONAL AND CONFIDENTIAL For your information only, and such action, if any, you deem proper. When read, please return.

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California

June 16, 1961

Colonel Charles B. Thornton Cormerly U.S.A.F.)
President
Litton Industries
336 North Footbill Boulevard
Beverly Hills, California

Dear "Tex":

I am writing you for a definite reason. As you probably know, for over forty years I believed that the United States had one main enemy. The Communists - whether in Russia, China, or even in our own country. But I have been an optimist and still am - if we are prepared, whenever necessary, to take action. Now - these immediate days - I believe the Constitutional government of the United States is in mortal danger.

I have always thought that the Armed Forces - Army, Navy, Air Force, and Marine Corps - with a dedicated non-commissioned and commissioned Officer Corps - were one of our main bulwarks, both within and without, against the Communists who frankly and openly say that they intend to destroy our Constitutional form of government.

It was, therefore, with shock, that I read of the censure of one of our outstanding military commanders, Major General Edwin A. Walker, former Commanding Officer of the 24th Division, Germany. I believe that he has been censured for doing what he believed to be his Constitutional duty. The charges that General Walker called certain Americans prominent figures in political life - "pinks" seemed to me to be but a meagre excuse for destroying the usefulness of a dedicated officer, whose apparent actual crime in the eyes of his civilian persecutors, was an effort to indoctrinate the troops under his command as to the dangers of Communism to this country and to its citizens, and particularly to the soldiers of the 24th Division, whether they were enlisted personnel or officers.

I have taken open action by sending the attached day letter to the President, Secretary of Defense McNamara, General Lyman L. Lemnitzer, Chairman, Joint Chiefs of Staff, Mr. Elvis J. Stahr, Jr., Secretary of the Army, and General Curtis E. LeMay, Vice Chief of Staff, U. S. Air Force. (First enclosure.)

Colonel Charles B. Thornton June 16, 1961 Page 2

I am frankly trying to enlist your support in favor of the government withdrawing its censure of General Walker - as I told you over the telephone, because of your close friendship with Secretary of Defense McNamara, and because of your wonderful reputation of World War II as an outstanding Air Force officer who - when he resigned - was just about to be promoted to Brigadier General if the war had continued. I request that at your convenience you read the attached papers (enclosures) before you come to a decision on what you might consider, as your conscientious duty, to do about General Walker - who, by the way, I have not had the honor of knowing personally.

As you can see by the attached cable, I am not a member of The John Birch Society nor any other society of like nature whatever, nor do I intend to become a member of such a society at any time in the future. I have acted only following my oath of office to protect the Constitution of the United States against all enemies. Foreign and Domestic, by attempting, to the limit of my small ability, to defend a dedicated professional officer of the Army of the United States. During my period as a Midshipman at the U.S. Naval Academy, and as an enlisted man, from Private to Sergeant, and then as officer in all grades from 1st Lieutenant to Brigadier General, I have always been instructed and ordered not only to act against the enemies of the Constitution, but likewise to act strongly against those who tolerate enemies of the Constitution, The Communists.

I might add, for your personal and private information only - that General Carl "Tooey" Spaats told me only last week at the Broadmoor Hotel in Colorado Springs, Golorado, where we were both attending the "June Week" of the United States Air Force Academy, that he believed one of the great strengths of this country depended upon the long proved integrity of our Officer Corps in all services. He also said, with considerable force, that he thought that the Honor Code of all Service Academies was correct in that it not orly does not condone lying, cheating and stealing, and crimes involving moral turpitude, but also does not condone those who fail to protect the Constitution of the United States, and also does not condone those who tolerate the enemies of the Constitution.

This is the Code which every professional Army, Navy, Air Force and Marine officer is taught from his earliest days, either as a Cadet or Midshipman, or upon his taking the oath of office as an officer when being commissioned either from the enlisted ranks or from

Colonel Charles B. Thornton June 16, 1961 Pa; 3

civilian life; and this is the Code by which all - or at least the vast majority - live by until the end of their days.

General Spaatz and I did not discuss the case of General Walker at all, as I had no actual knowledge of General Walker's case, nor do I know that General Spaatz had such knowledge.

But certainly I believe that General Walker - if he be a graduate of West Point - and I think he is - was only following the duty, long taught at West Point; that an Officer must act not only against the enemies of the United States and the Constitution of the United States, but act equally as strongly against those who condone the persons and acts of such enemies - the Communists.

I know that as usual, and quite rightly so, you will make up your own mind as your sense of duty dictates. I am therefore enclosing the attached papers simply for your information. I realize that none of these papers are official - they are only a matter of opinion - but I found them of interest and you may also. I understand - but have no exact knowledge - (this is the information I gathered from the newspapers) - that General Walker was censured for allegedly having made the casual, off-hand remark, during private conversation only, and not for instruction to his troops - that certain public figures are "pink" (as I mentioned earlier). However, regardless of the direct cause of his censure, there can be no doubt that this officer has proved by his record his dedication to his duty to uphold the Constitution of the United States against all enemies. Foreign and Domestic. It seems obvious to me - on the face of it - that he is a strong Anti-Communist. That, in my opinion, is the reason he was so savagely attacked! I, for one, am convinced of it.

To repeat, it seems to me - from what has appeared in public print - that whatever the actual charges against him consisted of, he is in reality being punished for his very strong anti-Communist convictions, and for following what he believed to be his Constitutional duty in instructing the troops of his Command positively as to the danger to this country of the Communists, and of those who condons Communism.

I am enclosing three papers which have direct reference to General Walker (the first of which is mentioned above), as well as a fourth from the LOS ANGELES MIRROR, which deals only with the actual War between the United States and the Communists, but which I think is worthwhile reading. I am enclosing:

Colonel Charles B. Thornton June 16, 1961 Page 4

- My day letter of June 12, 1961 to the President, the Chairman, Joint Chiefs of Staff, the Vice Chief of Staff, U. S. Air Force, and the Secretary of the Army. The same day letter went to Secretary of Defense McNamara on June 14.
- Article entitled, "Ten Shun" from NATIONAL REVIEW, a bi-weekly conservative magazine which I believe to be honest (dated May 6, 1961).
- George Sokolsky's article on Walker of May 16, 1961,
   LOS ANGELES HERALD EXPRESS.
- LOS ANGELES MIRROR article, "We Are at War and We're Losing It" dated June 14, 1961.

As you can see from my 201 Retirement File (enclosed) I have, more than once, chucked into the discard whatever Military career I had, by my consistent, unyielding opposition to Communism.

Maybe here I go again.

I know you will use your own judgment. Hope you back my play, but nothing but the best of feeling if you don't.

The only other person to whom I am addressing a similar letter is Lt. General James H. Doolittle, Vice President, Space Technology Laboratories Inc., 5740 Arbor Vitae, Los Angeles, California.

It was good to hear your voice the other day. All the best to you.

Yours, as ever,

MCC-mmg enclosures as listed

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General, USAF Ret.

F. S. I am enclosing my 201 Retirement File to which I have attached a statement which I think may also be of interest in connection with the Communist question.

M.C.G.

P.P.S. Please return all enclosures after they have served their purpose. Each of them is, of course, personal and confidential.

M.C.C.

A Postscript to a Letter Written by me to Vice-Admiral Frederick H. Pennoyer, Jr., USN Ret. - my roommate at the Naval Academy, Annapolis, Class of 1915.

- Merian C. Cooper

P. S. Have I told you why Dick was almost six years with only a few Christmas leaves of two weeks each? He took the exams competitively in our 16th Congressional District in 1955 for the Naval Academy, West Point and the Air Force Academy (its first year just about to start). He passed one for Annapolis, one for West Point, and only an alternate for the Air Academy. He declined the appointments to the Naval Academy and West Point and enlisted as a private in the Air National Guard and applied for immediate enlisted flying training. His application was approved, and at age 18 he was off to Texas for flying training. In 1956 - while in flying training - he again took the examinations for all three schools. For the second time - now age 19 - he passed first for Annapolis; first for West Point and again only an alternate for the not yet completed Air Academy - the first class of which was housed in temporary barracks at Lowry Field near Denver. On the first time around in 1955 Dorothy and I had wanted him to accept the appointment to the Naval Academy; but Dick stuck to his guns for the Air Academy; now, the second year, 1956, over Dorothy and my requests to him - he again declined Annapolis and West Point, and continued his flying training. While still in flying training, as an enlisted Cadet in 1957, he again took the examinations

Page 2

for all three Academies - this, the third time. Again he was first for Annapolis and first for West Point, where for three years a candidate received the news about six weeks before the Air Academy. Again Dick passed, as I have said, first for the Naval Academy and first for West Point, and had to give an immediate answer, many weeks before he would know how he stood for the Air Academy; and again in the Spring of 1957 he turned down, over the now strong protests of his mother and me, the Naval Academy for the third time. He finished his flying training in late June, was commissioned a Second Lieutenant in the USAF Reserve five days, when he received word that he had been first in our district for the Air Academy also. He immediately flew to Denver, out by cab to Lowry Field, resigned his Commission as a Second Lieutenant in the Air Force Reserve immediately (only six days a Second Lieutenant) and the same day was sworn in as a regular Air Force Cadet at Lowry (his class was the last class to be in temporary quarters at Lowry Field) and moved in Dick's second year to the new, beautiful Air Academy site, some 20 miles from Colorado Springs.

Why did Dick turn down the Naval Academy three times, to which his mother and I had wanted him to go; also West Point three times? All because, since he could toddle, he wanted to go into Space!!! And he believed that the Air Academy was the best road to Space!!! Maybe he is right, or maybe it is because of me. I do not know.

All I do know is that he has heard me preach and teach since he was born, that Man's future lay in Space! Perhaps I am all wrong; but,

Page 3

Puck, I still think so, as does my far more distinguished and wiser elder brother, Dr. John Gobb Cooper of Princeton, New Jersey. I enclose an article from THE CHRISTIAN SCIENCE MONITOR (I am an Episcopalian, but The Monitor has good lay Space news). This newspaper story of May 27 sounds like the beginning - and when my overload of stuff comes down (by Railway Express to save costs) from Colorado Springs I will send you another article which spells out our national future in terms of the Space Age; in this, Dick, my brother and I are all as one. I will get it in a week or so and send it to you for your judgment.

"Tooey" Spaatz, who is another member of the "Space Educational Foundation Board of Trustees," along with my brother and me, thinks that the Conquest of Space will be slower than my brother, John, my son, Dick, and me. Perhaps he is right. But when I flew back eight years ago from New York - where I was making, "THIS IS CINERA MA" together with Lowell Thomas - to make the address on the Wright Brothers 50th Anniversary of Flight, and then spoke at the Beverly Hills Hotel Banquet Room before several hundred leaders of both the Aviation industry and the military services - Army, Navy, and Air Force, and their ladies; and I made fun of the so-called "Jet Age," as a thing of the already distant past, and predicted what I believed, that man would be in Space within ten years (Man has already made it in eight years), and on the Moon in a minimum of 20 years, maximum 25 -- and I said I thought I was too conservative -- this distinguished

Page 4

audience derided me. Only three people seemed to believe me - Jimmy Doolittle, "Chuck" Yeager and my ever-trusting wife. And then a fourth, from the East, where he was at school at The Hill School, my son, Dick.

So, Puck, perhaps I have led him astray. But Dick has played it all stops out. All the years at the Air Academy he has refused to take leave. Plebe year, of course, he had no leave, but had field and military survival training, plebe summer. His second year he chose, along with about twenty of his classmates, to take parachute training at Fort Benning; and successfully made his five jumps and was given his paratrooper badge (this year he was the only man in the Air Academy to have the right to wear pilots' wings, navigator wings, and paratrooper insignia (and I may add that he never put up any of the three). His next summer he again chose duty instead of his thirty days leave, went on tour of duty at our NATO and SAC European bases. He independently arrived at the same conclusion as I had, and this time with no coaching from me - that NATO was almost a farce, but that SAC had something; his third and last leave he kept very secret to everyone, including me as to what his duty was to be. He had written the Navy and requested (completely on his own) Submarine Duty. The Navy accepted him, and he stood Watch as a Junior Submarine Officer off Cuba last summer, and made successfully his three trial runs (if that is what they are called in Subs now). Anyhow, for the first time he showed me his Efficiency Report. The Navy had rated him as Superior. So three months before

Graduation the Navy offered him a commission, with a chance to go immediately to Nuclear school, and then to Nuclear Submarines. For the first time in his career, Dick hesitated. He had volunteered for Submarine duty his last leave the summer between 2nd Class and 1st Class years, because he believed the Submarine to be the closest thing to a Space Vehicle (as he was enclosed in a medium-water) and much of the same kind of cool, quick decisions and precise thinking were required as he and I both believe will be required in Space Vehicles in the not too distant future. And now the Navy had liked him and offered him a regular commission as an Ensign and a job which might lead to Space. For the first time he called me on the long distance telephone -I was in the East - and asked my advice. I had repeatedly told him all his life - that the Navy had a wonderful organization and a dedicated superior Officer Corps - but I knew that he had three times turned down the Naval Academy, so I told him that he was now 24 years old, and that he had made completely independent decisions since age 17, and that he alone must make this decision. It was hard for him to dothis decisive, dedicated son of mine. His goal had not changed - first, to honorably serve his country in a military service; secondly, to try for Space. Both the Navy and the Air Force filled, in his opinion, the first requirement - and he almost reluctantly decided that his best chance for Space was through the Air Force. So now he is on his first and only leave of over two weeks - and those leaves were just for four or five Christmases for about ten days to two weeks each Christmas -

and this leave he has gone to Scandinavia (I hope), thence either back to this country through the Far East or Australia, or maybe only Europe. For sixty days; I hope this sixty days he has real fun, indeed, I do, because I see for young men of his age - almost 25 now - such a time to face that we have never had to face, Puck, in our generation. And I say this, who has fought a little in three Wars - first World War I, 1917-1918; second, Polish-Russian War, 1919-1920; and the tough aftermath, 1921; then for the third time, World War II, 1941-1946. Counting my time on active duty with the Georgia Infantry in 1916-1917 on the Mexican Border, I have spent about fourteen years of my life on active duty in the field or in training (sixteen years if you include Poland) and another twenty-five or twenty-six years on call in the Reserves. I have had, in one way or another, about sixteen years of training or field service in time of War, including my time in the Polish Air Force, which gave me every decoration in its power (including the Virtuti Militari) which, in 1920, was in Poland comparable to our own Medal of Honor, or in the British Empire, comparable to the Victoria Cross.

But I tell you, Puck, that I believe all this to be nothing - nothing - to what I think young men of Dick's age must face. So believing as I do, that life will be no bed of roses for Dick's generation, I am glad he has had such a man as you to write and advise him, as you have so well done.

Again, and again, Puck, I thank you from the bottom of my heart.

I showed Dorothy only the part of this letter up to the P. S., then this P. S. has been only between you and me. The last part of this letter would frighten her; and I have given my dear wife a rough enough time already in our 28 years together, without now bothering her unduly about the future of our son.

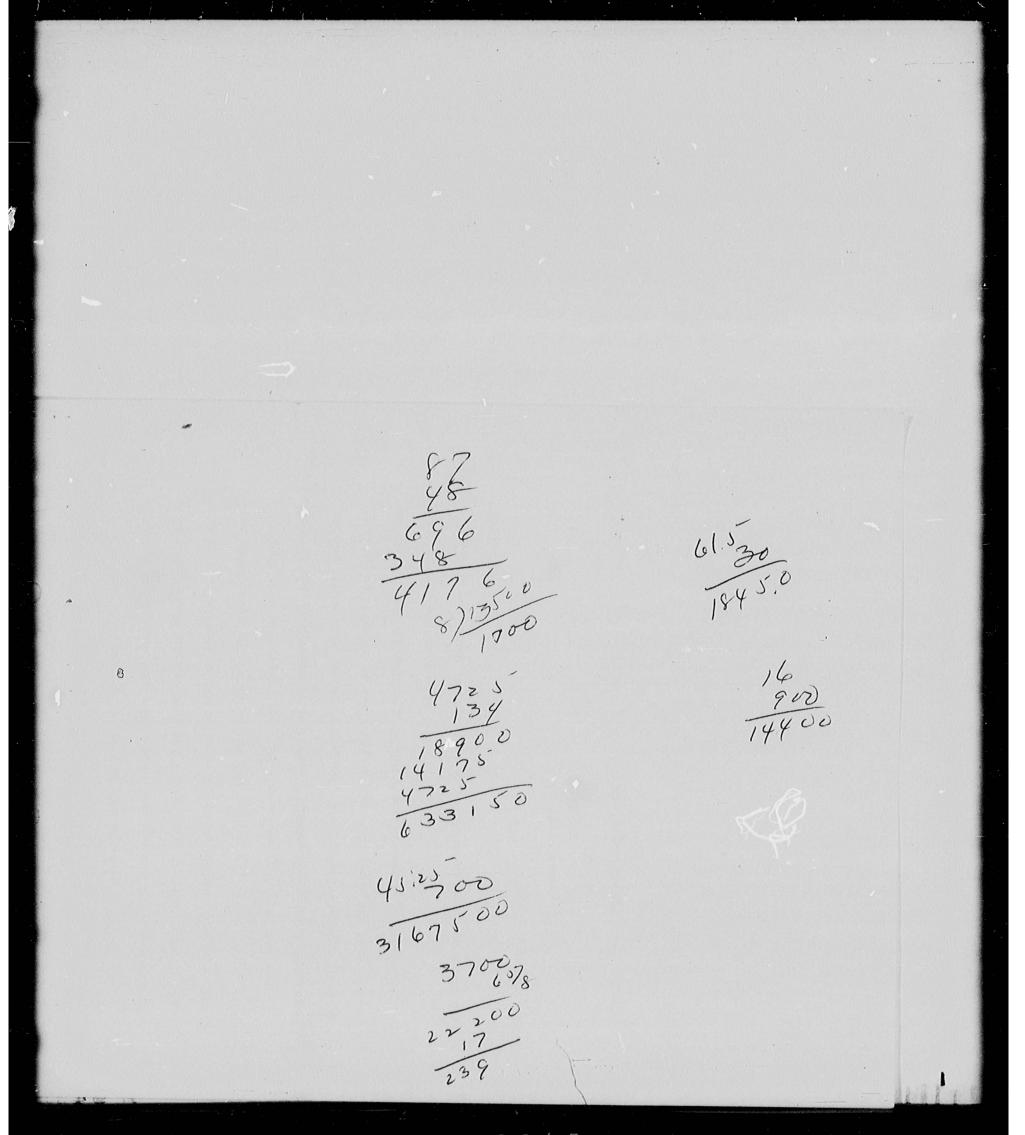
But come what may, Puck, let him follow your wise and kind advice, and your words to guide him. Let him never fear the present nor the future, but, as you wrote him, let him follow always the path of duty and of honor -- and I add, Puck, then, when the time comes to die, let him die unafraid, following the same path on which you have pointed out the way to live.

Thank you, Puck, all the best to you, and my love and every dear hope to Peg.

As ever, yours,

11 (3)

Merian C. Cooper



Respectfully request that this letter and attachments be placed in my

MAN AJ C GOPEN B/0 USAF- 1850

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California October 12, 1953

TO:

Chief of Staff

United States Air Force

Washington, D. C.

Attention:

Deputy Chief of Staff for Personnel

Lt. General Emmett O'Donnell

From:

Merian C. Cooper, Brigadier General USAF-Res.

Subject:

(a) Retention in my present position in the Reserve, (Or) (b) Retention in the Retired Air Force Reserve

- 1. Since 1916 I have believed that the military salvation of this country depended upon the rapid development and global use of Air Power. I came to this conclusion so far as I know completely independently. This belief of mine was basically the same as the one so brilliantly expounded by General William Mitchell - the first great leader in our Armed Forces of the use of Air Power - under whom I had the honor of serving in combat in 1918.
- 2. In 1919 and 1920 I became firmly convinced that the United States had one main enemy -- Russia; and that eventually the destiny of the world would depend upon a military decision between the United States and Russian Communism (then known as Bolshevism).
- Because of this belief of the danger to the United States of world Communism led by Russia - on May 19, 1919, when I was on duty with the A.R.A. in Warsaw, Poland, and was a Captain in the Air Service, I officially requested the Commanding General of the A.E.F. (see Appendix #la) as follows:
  - "1. I request to be assigned to duty either in the Air Service or the Infantry in the Archangel where our troops are in action against the enemy.
  - I request to be assigned to duty in any combat unit in any capacity in this or in any other district where our troops are actually fighting.
  - The American Food Administration is willing to release me immediately if I may be assigned to such service.
  - "4. If I can be assigned to such duty, I will be glad to serve in any capacity with combat troops regardless of the fact if the duty assigned me is commensurate with my rank.
  - I am capable of serving either in Infantry or Air Service, as I have had four years training, U.S. Naval Academy, one year on Mexican border in Infantry, and active service as a pilot in aviation at the front in France.

2

"6. If impossible to station me with our own troops, I request to be assigned to duty with any of the Allied Units in Archangel or with the Russian or Polish Armies fighting against the Bolsheviks.

M. C. Cooper Captain, Air Service"

4. In addition, though still a young man of twenty-six (33 years ago), in 1920 while stationed with the Kosciusko Squadron in the Polish Air Service at an active combat front against the Russian Communist regime, I wrote Senator Duncan U. Fletcher of Florida a long letter (see Appendix #lb) extracts of which follow:

"My dear Senator Fletcher:

#### \*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I became interested in the Bolshevik question when I was a prisoner in Germany. I was sent to a hospital way over in Silesia in a little town near Breslau. In Silesia I came to know a number of Russians, prisoners like myself, many of whom spoke English or French. From them I began to learn what Bolshevism really was, and the ambition of the Bolsheviks to bring all the world under their sway. I thought that America would one day have to fight them, and I still think so unless the Germans and Japanese swallow up Soviet Russia and thus form a great German-Russian-Japanese Alliance. In that case I know we will have to defend ourselves. We will be the only people in the world really worth plundering, and that combination would make a coalition of world adventurers who would like nothing better than to make us pay to the uttermost limit.

Because I realized that the Bolsheviks would surely try to work against America by propaganda and because I thought it very likely that we might have to take the field in Russia, I wrote to our General Staff in France offering to go into Russia, either as an American officer or to resign from the American army and join one of the White Russian armies fighting the Bolsheviks if I could bring out useful military information for our army. When this was pigeon-holed, I asked to be sent to Poland with the Food Mission on the Bolshevik front. Here I learned more about Bolshevism, and finally determined to get in the fight against it. I therefore resigned from the American Army and offered my services to Poland. Together with Major Cedric C. Fauntleroy, formerly of the American Service, I organized the Kosciusko Squadron of American pilots and came to Poland.

### \*\*\*\*\*\*

Right at present the Bolsheviks are preparing to commence a drive on this front. Dennekin and Kolchack are beaten,

so the offensive will be very strong. If Poland falls or is forced to make peace due to lack of military supplies and finances to carry on the campaign, it means quite surely one of two things - either the Bolsheviks will sweep across Europe, or the Germans and Japanese will be able to establish their alliance with Russia, and Poland will once more discontinue to exist as a nation. If Poland falls and Bolshevism sweeps Europe, or if the triple alliance is brought about by the crushing of Poland, I believe with all my heart and soul we will be plunged in war again within ten years.

3

### \*\*\*\*\*

I know that the Bolsheviks consider America as an enemy, and they will surely try, if not by force of arms then by propaganda, to overturn our government. I know that to be impossible. The American people are not of the stuff of which Bolsheviks are made. But if the Russian soviet government continues to exist, or if it forces a peace with Poland, powers will be turned loose which can cause much bloodshed in America, trouble in every direction, and most surely will harm our nation.

### \*\*\*\*

Very sincerely yours,

Merian C. Cooper"

- 5. Since the above beliefs have been basically confirmed by the passage of time, and since I still hold to these beliefs, and because I think I have had a unique experience with the Russian military mind, I hope personally that I may still use this knowledge for the good of the service, and therefore that I will not be retired, or if retired, will be placed in the Retired Air Force Reserve.
- 6. Because of these beliefs (which are now held by a large segment of the people of the United States), I have frequently been subjected to severe censure both within and without the Armed Services.
- 7. I herewith state my record:
  - (1) I resigned in my graduating year at the Naval Academy in 1915, having too many demerits and being deficient in Navigation. There was nothing dishonorable connected with my resignation. I was high-spirited, loved excitement, took chances, and got caught too many times. That was all. While in the Naval Academy, I strongly advocated the possibility of the use of Air Power. I thought I saw its future. My views were not popular.
  - (2) I enlisted as a private in Company B, 2nd Georgia Infantry about June 23, 1916, to go to the Mexican Border, immediately after President Wilson called out the Guard for active Federal duty. As soon as I reached El Paso and had been promoted to Sergeant (See Appendix #2), I made my first application for flying training. I believe this was in October 1916. It was disapproved by the Secretary of War November (2486551, A. G, O.),

and I reapplied on January 20, 1917, (See Appendix #3) because even then I believed Air Power could be developed into the weapon of decision in war.

(3) I was selected as one of the two non-commissioned officers of my regiment to be sent to the first Officers Candidate School at Fort McPherson, Georgia. While there, I was commissioned a lst. Lieutenant, 2nd Georgia Infantry (Commission Appendix #4), and chosen as either #1 or #2 of my class for a Captaincy in Infantry in the National Army. I declined to take the oath of office as a lst Lieutenant, and also declined to go forward as a Captain in the National Army because I had at almost the same time been selected as one of 9 applicants out of 128 volunteers to be given flying training as a private 1st Class, Aviation Section, Signal Corps. (See Appendix #5). General Walter A. Harris, commanding the Second Georgia Brigade, was kind enough to write my father a letter, August 27, 1917,

"I am glad he (Merian) has at last got what he wanted. All that I nave said of him is shown by his record in this command: He was considered the best soldier in the Second Georgia and that this made him the best in the Brigade, I believed and acted upon to the extent of asking for his commission as my aid." (See Appendix #6).

(4) I was the first Cedet Captain and an honor graduate of the first class to graduate from the Ground School at Georgia Tech. (See appendices #7a and #7b). I was ordered to Washington to be commissioned and take command of a ground school. I requested foreign service instead for which my Commanding Officer at Georgia Tech wired approval to the Chief Signal Officer as follows:

(See Appendix 8a)

"Chief Signal Officer Schools Division 119 D. St. Northeast Washington, D. C.

Have received orders for all honor men last weeks class to report to Fort wood for immediate service in France except Merian C. Cooper, who is best man in every respect who has yet entered school period. If he cannot be included in contingent for French Service he volunteers for Italian service as per your letter eleventh period. Request expedite action as he is waiting orders.

Richards"

Instead of permitting me to go on foreign service immediately, the Chief of Personnel ordered me to go to Mineola for flying training. I graduated and got my wings as Reserve Military Aviator on September 26, 1917. (See Appendix #8b and #8c). I was

commissioned a 1st Lieutenant in the Aviation Section of the Signal Officers Reserve Corps on October 24, 1917. (See Appendix #9).

(5) I was first sent to France as Adjutant of the 200-201 Squadron in October, 1917, and was commended at our station in Tours, France by my Commanding Officer, James Murray, Captain, A.S.S.C, U.S.A. Commanding 200-201 Aero Squadrons, and recommended for promotion to Captain (See Appendix #10). He stated:

"In many respects I consider him as capable a young officer as I have met in my twenty (20) years of experience in the regular army.

I mention these facts that the service and experience of this officer may not be lost in the assignment of Officers to duty in the present emergency, that he may be placed where his services will be of most value to the Government.

I recommend him for advancement to the grade of Captain, believing that such advancement is for the best interest of the United States."

(6) I was sent to flying school at Issoudun, where Colonel Walter G. Kilner, commanding at Issoudun, allowed me to take flying training, while also serving on the staff as Intelligence Officer and Summary Court Officer, etc. I could have gone to the front as a "pursuit" pilot, but because I was convinced that day bombardment was more hazardous and less glamorous and therefore had very few volunteers, and that bombardment gave to aviation its main purpose --- to assault the enemy -- and that if the war lasted long enough, bombardment would be a powerful weapon - perhaps a decisive one, I therefore requested Colonel Kilner to send me to Clermont-Ferrand for training as a bomber pilot. He agreed. I had no sooner graduated as a bomber pilot than I was ordered to England to take command of a newly formed squadron to be trained, with immediate promotion. This would have meant a long delay in getting to the front, and I requested that, instead of being given a ground command and promoted, my orders be changed and that I be sent to the front immediately without promotion, but to an active combat unit. My orders were changed, at Colonel Kilner's request, and I was sent to the front, in my then grade of 1st Lieutenant, to be a pilot in the 20th Squadron, 1st Day Bombardment Group, then being formed at the front. (See Appendix #11) This group of officers, listed in order, including myself, suffered one of the highest casualty lists of any squadron that I know of in World War I. The casualty list is written in my handwriting on this order as seen in Appendix #11. I wrote this casualty list sometime shortly after the Armistice. I had just joined my squadron, when I was ordered to take command of a few DH 4's (two from each DH 4 Bombardment Squadron) and report to Colonel Mitchell to command the temporary Observation Unit for his Headquarters for the Battle of St. Mihiel. This is certified to by Major Edmund C. Leonard on November 5, 1942. (See Appendix #12). I commanded this unknown and forgotten detail in the Battle of St. Mihiel, reporting personally to Colonel (afterwards Capanal) William Mitchell. The Whole let Bombardment Group General) William Mitchell. The whole 1st Bombardment Group

was commended for its work during the Battle of St. Mihiel, my portion of the Group being, as stated, personally attached to General Mitchell (See Appendix #13)

(7) After the Battle of St. Mihiel, I rejoined my Squadron, and on September 26, 1918, was shot down in flames, my observer, 1st Lieutenant Edmund C. Leonard, and I both being wounded. We crashed far behind the enemy lines. I was first reported killed in action, as my plane was seen going down in flames. (See Appendix #14). However, I was taken prisoner. For my action on this day I was recommended for the Distinguished Service Cross by the Commanding Officer of the 20th Aero Squadron, First Day Bombardment Group (See Appendix #15a) and by Colonel W. K. Kilner, A.S.A. Training Section. (See Appendices#15a and #15b) I refused on the grounds I did not deserve it. As I recall it, I personally asked the Decorations Section to write on their endorsement the words to the effect that "the hero does not deserve an award for saving his own life," or something with that meaning. I quote from distant memory. However, I have a copy of my first letter to such Decorations Section - which is not from memory - stating I could not with honor, and therefore would not, accept the Distinguished Service Cross as too many of my fellow officers in my squadron - both killed in action - and still living - deserved such award more than I did. (See Appendix #16a). I have a letter from the Comptroller of the Currency to my father saying he had a communication from the American Red Cross reporting I had been offered the Distinguished Service Cross (See Appendix #16b) as follows:

"I have the pleasure of handing you with this a letter dated March 31 from the director of the Bureau of Communication of the American Red Cross, advising me of the report which has reached him to the effect that your son, Merian Cooper of the Aviation Corps, was offered the D.S.C. on December 15, 1918, but declined it on the ground that there were others in his squadron who deserved it quite as much as he."

I received a Purple Heart for having been seriously burned in this action (See Appendices #17a, #17b, and #17c). I also enclose a letter of September 4, 1922, for my use from former President of the United States, then Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, William Howard Taft, stating what he thought of my character and actions in World War I. (See Appendix #18)

- (8) I was commissioned a Captain in the Air Service (Aeronautics) to rank from the first day of August, 1918, but was not notified of this commission until I was released from hospital in Germany, as I recall it in December, 1919, after the Armistice. (See Appendix #19)
- (9) As soon as I got out of hospital, an Armistice having been declared, I volunteered for service with the A.R.A., and was sent to Poland. I served as a Captain with the A.R.A. in Poland during the siege of Lwow (Lemberg). I was commended by Herbert Hoover (See Appendix #20a) who stated:

"Captain Cooper has given extraordinary service

to the A.R.A. He has exhibited courage - resourcefulness and tect to an unusual degree.

Herbert Hoover"

I was also commended by the commander of the Mission, Colonel Grove (See Appendix 20b), and by the government of Poland (See Appendix 20c) for my work during the siege of Lwow (Lemberg), and was given a silver medal by the Polish Ministry of Approvisation. (See Appendix 20d). I was also awarded the decoration of "The Eaglet" by the Commandant of the Army of the East, for my work during the siege of Lwow. (See Appendix 20e).

- (10) At the completion of the above duty, I was convinced that Russian Bolshevism (Communism) would sweep Europe unless defeated. I therefore and at once volunteered on May 19,1919 to serve on any front against the Communists in any combat capacity (See Appendix #21). When this request was not acted upon, I went to the Senior Air Officer in Paris and asked to resign and join the Polish Army, which was officially an ally of the United States. My request was granted with the approval of President Woodrow Wilson, when Premiere Paderewski of Poland asked him, as I understood it.
- (11) I was in active combat in Poland against the Communists from about January, 1920 to July 13, 1920. During this time, Colonel Fauntleroy and I developed a method of low level bombardment with frontal fire power, by fastening crude bombs to our fighter planes. (This afterwards became known as Attack Bombardment.) In addition to "The Eaglet" and the silver medal from the Ministry of Approvisation, I received many commendations and high combat awards from the government of Poland. (See Appendices #22s,#22b,#22c and #22d) with respect to my work, I am also enclosing a letter (See Appendix #22e) from my Commanding Officer, then Major (afterwards Colonel) C. E. Fauntleroy, stating I had been cited in dispatches and recommended for combat decorations. Colonel Fauntleroy stated about my services as follows:

"Your son and I have been fighting literally shoulder to shoulder against one of the hardest propositions that I have ever seen. Aviation in open warfare means hard, exciting, dangerous work and plenty of it. Merian so impressed the high staff with the value of his work that he has been mentioned time and again in dispatches; being especially cited for the medal of the Virtuti Militari, the highest honor that can be conferred by the Polish Government. You may take my word for it that he has more than earned it. Flying and fighting, it seemed the entire day, he seemed to be absolutely tireless and fearless. The hotter it was the better he liked it. He is already the hero of this city, because of his previous work here, and if he keeps on at the rate he is going, he will surely become one of Poland's National Heroes. I make this statement in all sincerity."

(12) I was shot down July 13, 1920 behind the Russian lines. (See Appendix #23). For the second time I was reported killed in action. (See translation from Polish newspaper 'WIEK NOWY' of September 16, 1920, announcing my death. (Appendix #24). Of course, I actually was captured by the Communists. I escaped about ten months later. I arrived in Warsaw on May 3, 1921. (See Appendix #25). In Lwow, at the unveiling of the monument in memory of American Aviators, Count Pininski, the former Governor General of Galicia, was kind enough to write the attached letter to my father (See Appendix #26a) in which he stated in part:

"It gives me a great pleasure to have thus the opportunity of addressing a few words to the father of my dear friend Colonel Merian C. Cooper. As I was obliged in my short speech at the unveiling of the memorial monument to give to my words a more general turn, it was impossible to express in it at leisure my personal feelings towards your son. The more satisfied feel I now by telling you that I am not only a friend but also really an enthusiastic admirer of your dear son - so dear to me as if he were one of my nearest in the world. Of course, we are all here in Poland exceedingly grateful to Colonel Cooper for everything he did serving our patriotic cause, bringing us help in distress and need, fighting then against the Bolsheviks with prodigious courage and suffering martyrdom during his prison in Russia. His name has become very popular everywhere all over our country. But few people were on such friendly and intimate terms with him as I was from the very beginning of his stay in Poland - nobody could appreciate him better than I did. He was just splendid in the most difficult situations, full of enthusiasm, a born hero, energetic, plucky beyond all imagination, noble-minded, idealistic in his sentiments and at the same time very practical and endowed with an excellent sharp political judgment. He will be ever for me one of the persons I love and admire most."

Attached to Count Pininski's letter is the actual text of his speech (See Appendix 26b), which I also quote in part:

"We shall especially ever cherish and honor the brilliant members of the Kosciuszko Squadron who fought for our cause. The names of their leaders, Colonels Fount le Roy and Cooper are best known. We who are living here in Lwow remember most vividly the days five years ago during the spring of 1920. We were then fighting against Bolshevik Russia - every moment the danger was more terrible - the new Polish State might have been crushed by the

invasion of the half-savage Russian red army. The American help at that time was for us really like a help from heaven. The brilliant part played then by the so-called Kosciuszko Squadron and splendid American flyers can be without exageration compared with those legendary mediaeval knights of the Grail congregation, who appeared unexpectedly when it was necessary to fight for truth and justice to defend opporessed virtue. The motives for bringing us this help were of the most noble, purely altruistic kind. Our American friends realized, much better than many of the European politicians did, that in this moment not only the existence of Poland, but also the fate of European civilization was at stake. If Poland were defeated, and perhaps even destroyed, the Bolshevik disease would have been spread throughout the middle of Europe bringing everywhere the destruction of ethics and culture. Fighting for Poland was, therefore, at the same time defending the peoples of western civilization against tarbarism and crime.

The Kosciuszko Squadron afterwards became the 303rd Squadron, and served with great distinction in the Battle of Britain. I received the attached letter of thanks from England in 1942 to the American officers who had first formed the Kosciuszko Squadron, from its Commanding Officer, Fl/Lt. Zygmunt W. Bienkowski. (See Agrendix 27)

- (13) On returning to the United States from Poland, I joined the Reserves, either in 1921 or 1922, as a Captain in the Air Corps Reserve. I am not sure of this date, but I believe I was re-commissioned as a Captain in the Officers Reserve in 1922, and served in this rank until June 10, 1941, when I was recalled to active duty.
- (14) I was a devoted believer in the concept of Air Power of General William Mitchell, who I think had considerable appreciation of my own ideas on the same subject. I went to Washington to see him, and after his resignation when he came to New York, we spent some time reviewing how to advance Air Power. I joined him in the belief that Russia would one day be the main enemy, and that the air attack against the United States -- if it came -- would possibly come over the Polar regions. Of course, General Mitchell was more brilliant than I in his thinking, but I believe I was of some real assistance to him. I loyally supported him at all times.
- (15) In 1930, '31 and '32, following General Mitchell's dictum and my own long-held belief that Air Power consists of all air -- both military and civil -- I became a director of Pan American Airways, which was our first foreign commercial air line; of Western Air Express, which was our first chartered domestic air line; and of National Aviation Corporation. (See Appendices #28a, 28b, 28c). I resigned from these companies only because of my change of residence to California, which made it impos-

was helpful in the building up of civil aviation in time of peace, which was essential in order that we might have a ready military potential in time of war. I consistently fought for Air Power, though that view was shared by very few people at that time. Most people I knew thought aviation to be a passing freak and the airplane an over-rated toy. I believed that eventually we would fight Russia by air across the North Polar cap and that not a day - not an hour - not a minute - was to be lost in building up both military and civil aviation -- in the factory, air lines, and military aircraft, air fields, research, etc.

10

- (16) In 1939 or '40, I went to Washington to see General Arnold, to urge on him that I make a picture on the big bomber, as I thought the war -- if we entered it -- could be won by air bombardment -- and that such a picture would stimulate public thinking in the United States in favor of Air Power, and that I believed we would surely go to war. Before such a picture could be made, I went back on active duty on June 16, 1941. When the first Air Staff of the Air Forces was formed well prior to Pearl Harbor I was appointed Executive Officer of A2 under General Spaatz when General Spaatz was General Arnold's Chief of Staff. During this period I initiated and developed the first "war room" as far as I know in any American military force. It was soon widely copied.
- Eaker and Hunter offered me positions on their staffs. I declined when Colonel (now Major General) C. V. Haynes told me he was taking a secret mission to the Far East. I thought that on this mission it might be possible to bomb Japan from the land side from a forward field in China, when Lt. Colonel (later General) Doolittle attacked with B 25's from carriers. I urgently discussed this with Colonel (later General) C. V. Haynes. I went with Colonel Haynes as his Assistant Executive Officer
- When we arrived at Karachi, India, we found that the field in China (from which I hoped we could take off to bomb Tokyo) was overrun by the Japanese; and our unit was then broken up. Colonel Haynes and a small staff were sent to take over the China-Burma-Assam Ferrying Command. I went along with him. This command, which as I recall it at that time consisted of only 7 or 8 C-47's became later that part of the Air Transport Command which is colloquially known in aviation history as "The Hump". Flying "The Hump" meant taking supplies by air to China from Assam. The Japanese were fast over-running Burma. I was in one of the last planes evacuating personnel out of Myitkyina and Lashio, before the Japanese captured them. During this period I was awarded the Bronze Star for helping to evacuate the women and children of the A.V.G. from Loi-Wing under imminent attack. (See Appendix #29). I reported to Chungking, on a second set of orders from General Arnold, then volunteered to join General Chennault when he inducted the A.V.G. into the American Air Corps on July 4, 1942. He made me his Chief of Staff. Again I saw the same old patterns --

11

lack of knowledge of the danger of Chinese Communists (in my opinion dominated by the Russians) coming down from the north -lack of understanding of the use of Air Power as an integrated unit --- and that a true supply line would be the one by air over "The Hump" I stuck to my beliefs, particularly on the danger of the long range view of the Communists over-running China. I loyally supported General Chennault, who strongly held these views. I was sent home -- although General Chennault wrote me a letter of high recommendation on my transfer. (See Appendix #30). Later he wrote General Kenney in the Southwest Pacific (See Appendix #31) stating:

"As you know, Colonel Merian Cooper served under me as Chief of Staff of the China Air Task Force for six months. He did a superior job during his entire assignment here and participated in quite a number of combat missions. Most of his missions were not officially recorded and to certify them I would have to depend on my memory with no other backing. However, I recommended him for the Air Medal, Silver Star and the Legion of Merit. I believed then and still believe that he had earned and deserved them."

I received many letters from my fellow officers, such as the attached one from Brigadier General Haynes (See Appendix #32) in which he states:

"The work you have done for all of us here in the C.A.T.F. has been performed in a superior manner and you deserve the highest commendation for your untiring efforts in behalf of the fighting units."

I also received from the Chinese government the "Special Necklet Paoting", which was approved by the War Department September 22, 1943. (See Appendix #33). I also received the attached citation to accompany the award of The Air Medal (First Oak Leaf Cluster). (Appendices#34a and #34b) and for the Legion of Merit (See Appendices #35a and 35b) as well as the commendation from General Chennault. (See Appendices #35c and #36).

(19) General Kenney requested me for service in the Southwest Pacific and sent me to his Advance Echelon at the front in New Guinea where General Whitehead made me his Chief of Staff. For my work in New Guinea, I was recommended for promotion to Brigadier General by General Whitehead, which was approved by General Kenney and General MacArthur, but I believe was disapproved in Washington. Attached is General Whitehead's recommendation for promotion (See Appendix #37), in which he stated:

12

"2. Colonel Cooper has been Chief of Staff of this Headquarters since he reported for duty here on May 3, 1943. During this period of eleven months he has thoroughly demonstrated his fitness for promotion to the grade of Brigadier General. He had an inexperienced young staff when he became Chief of Staff. By his intelligent leadership, his grasp of modern air warfare, and unceasing devotion to duty, he welded these inexperienced officers and men into a smooth, efficient operating and planning staff. Colonel Cooper knows how to fight modern war. In my best judgement, not only is ne a superior Chief of Staff for an Air Force in combat but is entirely qualified for high command of large Air Force units in combat.

"3. As stated above, Colonel Cooper has demonstrated his fitness for promotion through the hard school of war. It is urged that his promotion to Brigadier General be accomplished at the earliest practicable date."

Also attached is his supplementary recommendation addressed to General Kenney (See Appendix #38) in which he stated:

"By every standard which I know of, Colonel Cooper is qualified for promotion to Brigadier General. He knows how to fight modern war. His operations have been brilliant. So far as I know, he has not made a tactical or strategical error in his thinking and recommendations in more than a year of war in New Guinea. During those three or four days in February when I was in Townsville, the handling of attack bombers against the Nip attempt to evacuate RABAUL was faultless. Cooper stopped the RABAUL evacuation. In fairness to you, Advon of Fifth Air Force and to the Army Air Forces itself, Colonel Cooper's promotion should go through. On combined fighter and bomber operations, Colonel Cooper has capabilities second to no one else of whom I know."

I was also commended by General Wurtsmith, Acting Deputy Commander of the Fifth Air Force in General Whitehead's absence. His letter of April 9, 1944 is attached. (See Appendix #39). I was recommended by General Whitehead for the Distinguished Service Medal for my work, first as Chief of Staff of Advance Echelon, Fifth Air Force, and afterwards Chief of Staff of the Fifth Air Force, (See Appendices #40a and #40b) which summed up as follows:

"The broad tactical concepts repeatedly demonstrated by Colonel Cooper, his thorough knowledge of the problems of logistics in the development and operation of applied airpower, his unflagging desire to accept both combat and staff responsibilites, and his enthusiasm and determination contributed in great part to the swift achievement of Allied air supremacy in the Southwest Pacific Theater of Operations."

I also received an Air Medal. (See Appendix #41). By the fall of 1944, having burned out a number of young operations officers under me, I burned myself out by dysentery, sinus, etc., and was sent out of the tropics by General Kenney to Europe to help draw up a plan for the movement of the American units in Europe to the Pacific, for the assault on Japan as soon as the European war was finished. My work from January 7th to June 9th 1945 was rated superior while on this temporary duty with the Commanding General, Strategic Air Forces in Europe. (Certification of this attached as Appendix #42).

(20) I returned to the Philippines in July 1945 as Deputy Chief of Staff of the Far East Air Forces. I finished the war on the Missouri at the surrender. (See Appendix #43). I was convinced then -- in September of 1945 -- more than ever that the Russians meant to take over the Far East and then the World, and urged at that time (1945) a policy against demobilization of the Air Force, and favoring increasing Air Power, rather

14

than demobilizing it. The Russian danger seemed to me then, as it does now, real and imminent.

- (21) For my general services during World War II, General Spaatz, Commanding Army Air Force, May 15, 1946, commended me, and I received authority to wear the Army Commendation Ribbon. A letter from Major General Anderson is attached in confirmation of this. (See Appendix #44).
- (22) As one who has consistently fought for Air Power, and also fought consistently against Communism, I want to keep on doing so.
- (23) I believe I understand better than most men the Russian military and world power thinking, for the following reasons:
  - (a) I first came in personal contact with Russian Communism in Poland in 1919. I soon realized the war between Poland and Russia was not only a military one but an ideological one. In the city of Lwow where I was in charge of the A.R.A., it was apparent to me that the Communists, amidst hunger and confusion, were trying to take Lwow by their new method -- ideological warfare. With food as a defensive weapon, I -- as much as any other man -- kept Lwow from going Communist. (See Appendix #45).
  - (b) During 1920, I commanded a Polish air squadron against the Russian Communists.
  - (c) After being shot down in 1920 inside the Russian lines, I was held a prisoner for about ten months in various parts of Russia. During this time, I saw the Communists at first hand -- and had reaffirmed to me my belief of their ideology and goals, which seemed to me contrary to the best interests of the United States. From this study, I was firmly convinced that
    - (i) The Communist organization was brilliant and powerful;
    - (ii) Its methods utterly ruthless but effective because of their belief in their ideology.
    - (iii) Communism was not a political party, but a form of government incorporating a material philosophy tantamount to a religion.
    - (iv) The Communists' goal World Domination.

(I wish to attach again a copy of Appendix #1b, my letter to Senator Duncan U. Fletcher, as #46).

It is because of my consistent fight against Communism and unswerving support of Air Power that many officers and men in high civilian positions honestly thought this support of Air Power and this opposition to Russian Communism on my part were arbitrary and obstinate. I have always obeyed orders, but my oath of office to support the Constitution of the United States against all enemies, both foreign and domestic, has never left me a choice of action except to oppose Communism and to support my firm belief that command of the air would be decisive in any war of the future in which this country engaged.

- When some postwar resentment to the Armed Forces was being directed against the Officer Corps and was destroying respect for it, my partner in civilian life, Rear Admiral John Ford USN Ret., and I, made such pictures as "SHE WORE A YELLOW RIBBON" and "RIO GRANDE". These pictures stressed the high moral character and devotion to duty of our officer corps. I attach letters from General Carl Spaatz, USAF Ret., (See Appendix #47a), Lt. General Harold L. George, USAF Ret. (See Appendix #47b) and Lt. General Ira C. Eaker, USAF Ret. (See Appendix #47c).
- During the years 1922-1928, I gained what I believe is a unique knowledge of South Persia, parts of Northern Siam, Northern Portuguese East Africa, as well as a lesser knowledge of Arabia, Abyssinia, Dutch East Indies, and other parts of the Mid East and Far East. This knowledge was acquired while making four outdoor motion pictures, the best known of which were "GRASS" (made with the Bakhtiari tribe in Persia) and "CHANG" (made in Siam). I believe this accumulated knowledge of the Far East also should be put at the service of the Air Force, if and when called upon.
- (26) In 1952, I co-produced "THIS IS CINERAMA". The last twenty-four minutes of this picture consists solely of aerial shots of the United States. Lowell Thomas and I ended it in this manner for one and only one purpose -- to arouse the innate patriotism of the people of the United States. From the many letters and newspaper comments received I believe this thought has been general among the millions who have already seen the picture. Therefore, I believe this purpose was accomplished. I quote from Henry McLemore's column of the Los Angeles Times, July 13, 1953:

"I want to see Cinerama again, and on the Fourth of July, as I did on this Fourth, with its lump-in-the-throat hackle-lifting pictures of this country, my country and your country, and the 'Dear Lord, let me appreciate it' music of 'America, the Beautiful'. If Cinerama does not work out, if the stock hits the bottom, it will not have failed. The pictures of this lovely land have rekindled a new pride in citizens who had forgotten to remember..."

- (27) On August 11, 1950, I was commissioned a Brigadier General, United States Air Force Reserve. (See Appendix #48a). On March 31, 1953, I received my permanent commission as Brigadier General, United States Air Force Reserve. (See Appendix #48b).
- (28) On March 10, 1950 I was given a mobilization assignment as Deputy for Operations, Continental Air Command, Mitchell Air Force Base. On January 1, 1951 I was transferred to Vice Commander, Air Defense Command, Ent Air Force Base, Colorado Springs, Colorado, which assignment is still in effect.
- 8. Unless in an emergency, I would prefer not to be called to full time active duty, as I am President of one of the most successful small independent motion picture companies--Argosy Pictures Corporation; as well as Vice President and a member of the Board of Directors of the motion picture company which started the present evolution in the making of motion pictures Cinerama Productions Corp. However, I request to be kept on duty in the Reserve with a mobilization assignment to Headquarters, USAF, Washington, D. C., so that my special knowledge of the Russian military mind may be of use to the Air

16

Force and to the United States.

- 9. For over thirty years I thought that this country would have to fight Communism, and that Air Power would be the decisive weapon. I have never changed, either in war or peace, in fighting for these two points, because I believed as a young man, and still believe, the safety of this country depends on these fundamental ideas.
- 10. Hence, I request no retirement, but reassignment to the Retired Air Force Reserve. I request this reassignment only if it be impossible that I be kept in my present status in the Reserves, the latter of which I would of course prefer, because of the very real service I think I can be to the Air Force and to the United States.
- 11. I respectfully request this letter and attached documents be made a part of my 201 file.

Merian C. Cooper

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General - USAF-Res.

Warsaw, Poland, May 19, 1919.

FROI: M. C. Cooper, Capt., ir Service,

TO: Commanding General, ... . F.

SUBJOOT: Duty.

l. I request to be assigned to duty either in the Air Sertice or the Infantry in the archangel where our troops are in action against the enemy.

- 2. I request to be assigned to duty in any combat unit in any capacity in t is or in any other district where our troops are actually fighting.
- me immediately if I may be assigned to such service.
- 4. If I can be assigned to such duty, I will be glad to serve in any capacity with combat troops regardless of the fact if the duty assigned me is commensurate with my rank.
- service, as I have had four years training, U. S. Naval cademy, one year on mexican border in Infantry, and active service as a pilot in aviation at the front in France.
- 6. If impossible to station me with our own troops, I request to be assigned to duty with any of the allied Units in archangel or with the Russian or Polish armics fighting against the bolshoviks.

M. C. Cooper, Captuin, air Service.

A Certified True COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER
BRIGADIER GENERAL USAF. ROY CAN Such tage may interest you.

APPENDIX 1A ALSO # 21 1st Ind

Capt. M. C. Cooper,
U. S. Food Administration, Mission for Poland, Marsaw, Poland,
May 20, 1919.
TO: Mr. Herbert Hoover, U. S. Food Administration,
51 Aven e Montaigne,
Paris, France.

- 1. Recommending a proval.
- 2. Captain Cooper has handled a very difficult relief situation in the City of Lemberg during the siege and has the universal respect of all the parties and factions in that town. He has devoted all possible energy to the work and his administration has in every way been a credit to the American organization.
- 3. His well-known record in the Air Service would appear to entitled him to great consideration in a decision as to his future services.

U. S. Pood Administration,

By Chief of Mission.

2nd Ind.

Capt. M. C. Cooper
U. C. Food Administration, Paris, June 2, 1919 - TO: Commander-in-Chic American E. F. Chaumont.

- 1. Forwarded, for such action as the Com ander-in-Chief may determine.
- 2. The services of this officer can be spared by this Administration.

BY AUTHORITY OF HARBART HOOVER

James S. McKnight Lt.Col. of Infantry Executive Officer

JSM/NC

ACERTIFIED TRUE COPY

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. RES

APPENDIX JA

Cooper, No. Capt 3rd Ind.

W-OU

OH) MEF, France, June 4, 1919 - To the United States Food Administration, returned. If the services of Captain M. C. Cooper, M. S., are no longer desires it is requested to the be returned to France for further disposition.

For the Commander-in-Chief:

Adjutant General.

Cupt. M.C. Cooper

4th Ind.

Jerican Relief Administration, 51 Avenue Montaigne, Peris, James 6, 1919 - Per Colonel W.F. Grove, Fishion for Foliand, at compart REFERENCE

L. Inviting attention to the fird indomensus. It is requested that Cup tein iles. Copper, A.S. be undered to Ports in order to be returned to the U.S. May. of he stall despute.

BY MENICE ITY OF HIMBUT BOVES

Leosiathowa, Lt.Ool. G.B.

ANU /DO

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

Merian Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES

APPENDIX IA

Excerpts from a letter written from the Front in 1920 to Senator Duncan U. Fletcher.

KOSCIUSKO SQUADRON POLISH AVIATION SERVICE

Lwow, Poland

Senator Duncan U. Fletcher, Washington, D. C.

My dear Senator Fletcher:

I became interested in the Bolshevik question when I was a prisoner in Germany. I was sent to a hospital way over in Silesia in a little town near Breslau. In Silesia I came to know a number of Russians, prisoners like myself, many of whom spoke English or French. From them I began to learn what Bolshevism really was, and the ambition of the Bolsheviks to bring all the world under their sway. I thought that America would one day have to

fight them, and I still think so unless the Germans and Japanese swallow up Soviet Russia and thus form a great German-Russian-Japanese Alliance. In that case I know we will have to defend ourselves. We will be the only people in the world really worth plundering, and that combination would make a coalition of world adventurers who would like nothing

better than to make us pay to the uttermost limit.

Because I realized that the Bolsheviks would so ely try to work against America by propaganda and because I thought it very likely that we might have to take the field in Russia, I wrote to our general Staff in France offering to go into Russia, either as an American officer or to resign from the American army and join one of the White Russian armies fighting the Bolsheviks if I could bring out useful military information for our army. When this was pigeon-holed, I asked to be sent to Poland with the Food Mission on the Bolshevik front. Here I learned more about Bolshevism, and finally determined to get in the fight against it. I therefore resigned from the American army and offered my services to Poland. Together with Major Cedric C. Fauntleroy, formerly of the American Service, I organized the Kosciusko Squadron of American pilots and came to Poland. \*\*\*\*\*\*\*

Right at present the Bolsheviks are preparing to commence a drive on this front. Dennekin and Kolchack are beaten, so the offensive will be very strong. If Poland falls or is forced to make peace due to lack of military supplies and finances to carry on the campaign, it means quite surely one of two things - either the Bolsheviks will sweep across Europe, or the Germans and Japanese will be able to establish their alliance with Russia, and Poland will once more discontinue to exist as a nation. If Poland falls and Bolshevism sweeps Europe, or if the triple alliance is brought about by the crushing of Poland, I believe with all my heart and soul we will be plunged in war again within ten years.

\*\*\*\*\*\*

I know that the Bolsheviks consider America as an enemy, and they will surely try, if not by force of arms then by propaganda, to overturn our government. I know that to be impossible. The American people are not of the stuff of which Bolsheviks are made. But if the Russian soviet government continues to exist, or if it forces a peace with Poland, powers will be turned loose which can cause much bloodshed in America, trouble in every direction, and most surely will harm our nation. \*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

A CERTIFIED TRUE EXTRACT

MERIAN C. COOPER

Brigadier General, USAF-Res.

Very sincerely yours,

Merian C. Cooper

APPENDIX # 1 B APPENDIX # 46



To all who shall see these presents greeting:

Know De. That reposing spaced trust and confidence in the patriotism valor fidelity and abilities of Corporal merian C. Cooper, I do hordy appoint him Sergeant in Company B of the 200 Regiment of Bearges Infantry. in the service In the forwark as such from the 14th day of October enethousand nine hundred and sinter. He is therefore carefully and deligently to discharge the duty of Sorgent by doing and performing all manner of things thereunto belonging And I do strictly charge and require all . Non Commissioned Officers and Soldiers under his command to t. delient to his orders as Sergeant And he is to observe und follow such orders und directions from time to tome as he shall receive from me or the future Commanding Officer of the Regement, or other Superior Officers and Non Commissioned Officers set, over him according to the rules and discipline of War This Warrant to continue in force during the pleasure of the Commanding Office of the Regiment for the time being Given under my hand at the Head Quarters of the Regiment at Camp Harris, mecon, Se. this fourtiered & day of October in the Year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and sisteen. By the Commanding Officer Colonel 2 to Inf. Commanding the Regiment (A.90.152) Brigadier General USAF. Res Hilyulunt of the Regiment APPENDIX 2



From: Sergeant M. C. Cooper, Co. B. 2nd Inf. N. G. Ga.

Adjutant General of the Army, War Department, Washington,

Subject: Permission to take course in U. S. Aviation. school.

I. I hereby make application to be trained in the U. S. Aviation school.

- 2. I have had the theoretical and practical training of three years and eight months as a Midshipman in the U. S. Naval Academy at Anapolis, Maryland. This included a course in engineering.
- 3. My record in efficiency and conduct in this regiment has been graded "excellent" by the Major of the battalion and the Captain of the company to which I belong.
- 4. I have never failed in a physical examination while at the U. S. Naval Academy or in the National Guard. I do not take intoxicants of any kind at any time. I believe for these reasons I am physically fit for aviation work.

Ist Ind.

C. O. CO. B., 2nd Inf., N. G. Ga., Camp Cotton, El Paso, Texas, Jan 2/st 1917 To C. O. 2nd Inf., N. G. Ga., Camp Cotton, EL Paso, Texas.

I. Forwarded approved.

Hondanarters 2d Int. N. 6. of tin | Rec'd | (S. L. Conner.) Captain. 2d. Ind.

Hq. 2d. Ca. Inf. Camp Cotton, El Paso, Texas. Jan. 21, 1917 .- To Commanding General, 2d. Brigade, (Ga.) 10th. Prov. Division, Camp Cotton, El Paso, Texas.

Forwarded approved

REC'D HQ. GA. BRIG. JAN 2 2 1917 A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAF RES Colonel Commandi

Appendix #3

580,7600pe

435

3rd Ind.

HQ. 2nd HRIG. (GA.) 10th PROV. BIVISION, Camp Cetten, El Pase, Texas, January 26th, 1617. - To the Adjutant General of the Army, Mashington, D. C. (thru military channels)

l. Forwarded, approved.

2. Sgt. Geoper is an excellent soldier, far above the average of enlisted men of the Matienal Guard. I believe that he possesses the necessary qualifications for the aviation service. I should be glad to see this application approved, as the soldier's record makes his request deserve consideration and I believe that he would reflect credit upon this application and would be an acquisition to the aviation service.

REC'D. HO. JOTH PIVISION.

Walter A. Harris)
Brigodone, N.G. Condge

2204

4th Ind.

Hq. 10th Prov. Div. Camp Owen Beirne, El Paso Texas. Jan. 27th, 1917.-Te Cemmanding General, El Paso District.

1. This is a renewal of an application disapproved by the Secretary of War, November 23, 1916. (2486551, A.G.O.)

2. I have ventured to forward it after a personal inquiry into Sergeant Cooper's qualifications. The application meets with my earnest approval and I hope it may be granted.

RECEIVED HO. EL PASO DISTSICT.

JAN 29 17

Brigadier General, U.S.Army.

7253 5th Ind.

Hq. El Paso Dist., El Paso, Tex., Jan. 29, 1917 - To the Comdg. General, Southern Dept., Ft. Sam Houston, Tex., APPROVED.

Brigadier General, Commanding,

HHW-jeh

MERIAN C. Cooper

Acertified True Copy

Brigadier General USAFRES

Appendix #3

380,7 Cooper

Ath Ind.

Eq. So. Dept., February 4, 1917 - To Department Aviation Officer, for remark.

Record of previous application inclosed for information.

By command of Major General Funston:

j Incl.

Lt. Col., Adjutant General.

7th Ind.

File A 103-12 ODAO., S.Dept., February 7, 1917. - To Cammanding General, Sou. Dept., Fort Sam Houston, Texas.

Recommending approval.

It is believed, in the light of the present military emergency, that extraordinary efforts should be made to receive every available applicant for training and instruction in aviation.

Men, possessing the qualifications claimed for Sergeant Cooper, should especially be given every opportunity to receive training and instruction.

The inclosure mentioned in 6th indorsement was not received with this communication.

AJA

Dept Aviation Officer.

8th Ind.

Hq. Southern Dept., Feb. 8, 1917. - To The Adjutant General of the Army.

1. Concurring in 7th inforsement.

2. A former application by Sergeant Cooper was returned by the War Department (2486551, A.G.O.) disapproved.

Major General, Commanding.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res

R.

appendix #3

2486551/4

9th Ind.

A.G.O., Pebruary 19, 1917 - To the Chief Signal Officer.

By order of the Secretary of War:

Adjutant General.

1080 FFD 20 1917

580.7 Cooper. 10th Ind. 0.C.S.O., February 26, 1917 - To The Adjt. Gen., U.S.A.

1. If it is not the intention to muster the organization to which this soldier belongs out of the Federal Service in the near future, it is recommended that he be examined in accordance with the lst indorsement of the Surgeon General of the Army, dated July 30, 1914 (AGO 2192162).

2. Blanks are inclosed.

By authority of the Chief Signal Officer.

2 inc.

Lieut. Col., Signal Corps.

. 1

NEO'D BACK, A G.O. FEB 27 1917

2486551

lith Ind.

A. G. O., March 1, 1917 - To the Chief Signal Officer.

It is the intention of the War Department to muster out all National Guard organizations as soon as possible, in view of which fact a further recommendation in this case is requested.

By order of the Secretary of War:

A Certified True Copy

Adjutant General.

1. 11

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. REB

HISO MAR -1 1917

Appendi, #3

18th Ind.

0.C.S.O., March 7, 1917. -- To The Adjutant Concrel of the Amay.

In view of the fact that this soldier's organization is about to be materal but of the Pederal Service, reference of this application to the Olof, Militia Bureau, in connection with his detail at an aviation school as a member of the Matienal Guard not in the Pederal Service is recommended.

By authority of the Grief Signal Officer:

Lioute Col., Gival Corns.

EGB BACK. MAR 8 1917 4.0.6

2486551

13th Ind.

A.G. O., March 10, 1917. - To the Chief, Militia Bureau

MECETYLU W B. MAR 1017

14th Ind.

M.B. 580.7-Cooper.

War Dept., Militia Bureau, March 13, 1917. - To the Adjutant General of Georgia.

After Sergeant Cooper has been mustered out of the Federal service, he should be examined by a State Board of Medical Officers to determine his physical fitness to receive training in aviation. The report of the Board, accompanied by this communication, should be forwarded to this Bureau.

Wm. A. Mann, Brig.Gen., G. S. Obief of Bureau.

By

Colonel, Infantry.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-RES

Appendix #3

C/Cr

15th Indt.

580.7

State of Ga., L. G. U., Atlanta, March 17, 1917. To C. O. 2nd Megiment, thru Comdg. General, 2nd Brigade, (Georgia) 10th Prov. Division, Camp Cotton, El Laso, Texas.

1. Referred, for proper action upon muster-out, calling attention to the 14th indt. preceeding.

Jackby Mash John Mash)
The adjutant Jeneral.

435

16th Ind.

HQ. 1st BRIG. INF., GA. N. G., Macon, Ga., March 30th, 1917. - To Commanding Officer, 2nd Georgia Infantry, Macon, Georgia.

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAF-RES

APPENDIX 3

# COPY

STATE OF CHORGIA
MILITARY DEPARTMENT
ATLANTA.

SOURACTED COPY:
(Destroy copy proviously sent)

May 30th, 1917.

SPECIAL ORDERS:

No. 64.

Mational Guard is hereby annunceds

MATE:

Merian C. Cooper,

O TOE:

First Lieutenant of Infantry.

VICE:

(Original Vamanay)

RANK PROM: May 19th, 1917.

Upon subscribing to the Cath of Office.
Licutement Gooper is, in accordance with the results of his election, assigned as lide-de-Camp, Brigade Heafcuarters, and upon receipt of these orders will report to the Co manding General, let Brigade, Georgia Infantry, National Guard, (325.4)

BY ORDER OF THE G VENOR

J. Van Holt Hash The Adjutant General.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadièr General USAF-Res

Appendix #4

1917

Dear Dad:

I am at last in the Aviation Corps, after a year of trying, and I got in entirely by my own efforts. I am at the ground school at Georgia Tech (technically School of Military Aeronautics, Georgia School of Technology, Atlanta Ga.) I was one of the first nine men picked from my camp out of 128 applicants to be sent here. I turned down my commission as First Lt. in the Georgia Infantry, threw away my chances, which I think were pretty sure, of being commissioned a Captain in the Reserve Corps at 23 to come to this school. If all goes well I will be sent to a flying school within six weeks, where I will either be a Private or a Sergeant Flyer until I learn to fly, which I hope to do within six months, and then I hope to be sent to France to complete my training, and then go on the fighting line. You know my desires that way, how I feel I must at all costs see service in this war, and of my determination to do all I can to get to France as soon as possible.

I am acting Captain at school here, and have complete charge of the discipline and military organization of the company. Really a Commandant has this authority, but he hasn't even paid a visit to our quarters yet, and a set of military rules and regulations for the government of the school which I sat up nearly all last night writing and typing, were approved by the Commandant this morning.

There was a great squeal here today by a number of the men when they heard after Aug. 15 they would no longer be designated as Candidates of the Officers Reserve Training Corps, but must enlist as First Class Privates in the regular army to continue their course. I picked this choice that I made on the chance of getting to France soon. If I made a bad choice and don't get over I don't know how I will be able to go through with it.

I am sending you a couple of clippings, the personal one from the Telegraph, the other from the Constitution. I wish you would save them for me until I come back home, if I go to war.

I made S. J. Catts Jr. a Corporal here today. He has just turned in a request for leave to see his father in town tomorrow. He is the Governor's son, and a pretty good fellow.

Your loving son,

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER

Brigadier General -USAF-Res.

APPENDIX #5

Dear Dad: I am at last in the arration corps, after a year of trying, and Sgot in entirely by my own efforts. I am at the ground school at Leogia Sech (technically & chool of Omilitary acronanties, georgia School of Jechnology, atlanta Sa. ) I was me of the first nine men presed from my camp out of 125 offleants to be sent here. I humand down my commission as Hist St. in the Georgia Infrantry though away my chances, which Ithe were fretty sure, of being commissioned a Captain interpresent 23 to come to this school. I fall goes well

I will be sent to a organy school enthin six weeks, wheel will etter boa Private on a Sergeant The year will I learn to fly, which I hope to do withour six months, and then I hope to be sent to Finance to complete my having and then for it he fighting line. You know my discust that way low I feel I must at all costs so service in this war, and of my determination to do all I can to get to France as somas find possible. I am acting Coftain at school here, and have complete change of the diserflune and military organization

Austhority and houset Swent faid is wish to ongrature Jet, and a set of military rule and regulations forthe government of the school which I sat up neartayling, were aftered by the com mandant las mouring The was agrent squeather today by a number of the men when they board on by ang. 15 when they board on by ang. 15 ignated aslandedates of the officers Reserve Truing large, but must enlist as Trust Clase Privates interegular amy to continue their

Course. I field this choice that I made on the chance of getting to Je nance sour. It I much a los Choice and don't get over I don't Is wir how I will beable to yo though with it. I am sonding you a coufle of cliffings, the fersual one fun the Telegraph, the other from the constitute I wish you would save than be me until Same locks love, if I go to I made S. J. Catterfr, accorporal leetoday, the has just turned me request to be for leave to see his fallown tom two lie is the governor sun and a frety good bellow. Jour lavy sur A Certified True Copy Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Res

COPY

Macon, Georgia August 27, 1917

My Dear Mr. Cooper:

It was a great pleasure to read your letter of August twenty-second. I wanted to keep Merian with me more than I have wanted anything else since I have been in the military service, but his heart was set on flying and I am glad that he has at last got what he wanted. All that I have said of him is shown by his record in this command; he was considered the best soldier in the Second Georgia and that this made him the best in the brigade I believed and acted upon to the extent of asking for his commission as my aid. I hope that we shall be together again in France.

General Keman arrived Saturday. We will do our best to make his stay in Macon pleasant.

Merian's old company, the Macon Volunteers, has been selected as one of those to go with the "rainbow" Division and leaves for Mineola in the very near future. I know that his friends in the company will be delighted to see him when they reach Long Island.

With best wishes,

Sincerely yours,

Walter A. Harris /s

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER Brig. Gen. USAF-Res.

Appendix #6

Masonlya August 27, 1917 My Der Mr. Cooper:

It was a great pleasure to read your latter of august turnly second. I wanted to Keep Merian with me more than I have wanted anything else since I have been in the suititing service, but her heart was set on flying and I am glad that he has at lack got what he wanted. all That I have said of him is shown by his neared in This command; he was considered. The but soldier in the Season georgia and Hat This made him the best in the brigate I blisved and asked sepon to The exlead of asking for his commission as my aid. I hope that eur shall be together again in France. Jeneral Keman arrived Saturday.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General Usaf. Reb.

appendix #6

the will do our best to such his stay in Muser fleasant.

Merian's old company, the Museon Volunteers, has been selected as one of those to go with the "Vambow" division and leaves for Mineses in the day near future. I know that his primare in the company wise to delighted to see him when they work Your delaw.

the but weeks, gover, that attains.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res

Appendix\*6

### UNITED STATES SCHOOLS OF MILITARY AEROMAUTICS

#### CERTIFICATE OF GRADUATION

		that Merian		
has passed the examinations held on the eleventh				
day of _	August	191_7	7.	
at the_		chool of Tec	chnology a at which school is	located)

Approved:

By direction of Chief Signal Officer

Melon A S C II C D

Commandant.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES.

APPENDIX #74

### HEADQUARTERS SOUTHEASTERN DEPARTMENT

IN REPLY REFER TO OFFICE OF THE AERONAUTICAL OFFICER

CHARLESTON, S. C.

February 4, 1918.

From:

Captain H. H. C. Richards, Aviation Section, S.C.

Department Aeronautical Officer.

To:

Mr. Cooper (Father of Marion C. Cooper, Lt. A.S., S.E.R.C.)

Subject:

Marion C. Cooper.

- 1. It has been my desire for sometime to notify you of the good work done by your son, Marion C. Cooper, while a cadet undergoing training at the School of Military Aeronautics, Atlanta, Georgia.
- 2. Your son, then Sergeant Cooper, was assigned to my school from the training camp. By good fortune, he was selected previous to my arrival at the school and placed temporarily in charge of all the cadets in the school. I made him Cadet Captain and he filled the position of Senior Instructor of Tactics and Commanding Officer of the Student Detachment during practically the entire time of his remaining at the school. The last ten days of his course were occupied in turning over the organization to the man who was to succeed him, Lieutenant Blake of the Aviation Section, Signal Corps Reserve, late First Sergeant of Cavalry. During his entire time at the school he discharged his duties in more than a satisfactory manner. He was the best Cadet Captain that I had during the entire time that I was in command at the school.
- 3. A few days ago a letter of recommendation was written by another officer under whom your son served and contained the following remark with reference to a man whom he desired to recommend "was the best Cadet Captain I have had since M. C. Cooper". In addition to the ability with which he discharged his military duties, he was an honor graduate in studies alone and stood, as nearly as I remember, second in his class, in spite of the vast amount of work on pay rolls, muster rolls, morning reports and other necessary administrative papers.
- 4. I write this letter in order that you may know the manner in which your son performed his duties.
- 5. It was not written sooner due to the fact that I had no means of knowing your address.

A Certified True Copy FEB 16 1018 . A. D. Maptain, A.S. S.C.

Merian C. Cooper. Brig. Gen. USAF-RES

Appendix #78

COPY

Postal

Atlanta Ga August 13, 1917.

Chief Signal Officer, Schools Division, 119 D. St., Northeast, Washington, D. C.

Hvae received orders for all honor men last weeks class to report to Fort Wood for immediate service in France except Merian C.Cooper, who is best man in every respect who has yet entered school period. If he cannot be included in contingent for French service he volunteers for Italian service as per your letter eleventh period. Request expedite action as he is waiting orders.

Richards.

A True Copy

Lst. Lt. Av. Sec. S. C. Commandant

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res

Appendix #8a

AVIATION SCHOOL, SIGNAL ENLISTED RESERVE CORPS.

MINEOLA LONG ISLAND. NEW YORK September 27, 1917.

From: Pvt lcl Merian C. Cooper, A. S., S. E. R. C.

To: The Chief Signal Officer of the Army, Washington, D. C. (Through military channels.)

Subject: Foreign service.

- 1. I request that I be recommended for active duty abroad as soon as possible.
- 2. Request that my military record be considered with regard to my fitness for foreign service:-
- (a) UNITED STATES NAVY: Three years and eight months as Midshipman U. S. Navy at U. S. Naval Academy, Annapolis, Md. Cadet C. P. O. 1st class foreign cruise. Cadet Ensign and Battalien Ordnance Officer part of 1st class year. 2nd class cruise on duty in the 3rd Division of the Atlantic Fleet.
- (b) AVIATION SECTION, SIGNAL CORPS: Candidate Captain in U. S. School of Military Aeronautics, Georgia School of Technology, Atlanta, Ga., stood one in school in efficiency, conduct and studies. Passe R. M. A. test Sep. 26, 1917. Company Clerk of Detachment of Aviation Section, Signal Enlisted Reserve Corps, Signal Corps Aviation School, Mineola, L. I., N. Y.
- (c) OFFICERS' TRAINING CAMP: Stood among first three in line for commission in Company 9, 7th Prov. Rgt., Ft. McPherson, Ga. Recommended for commission as one of senior captains of infantry regiments to be formed from Company 9. Requested assignment as Private in A. S., K. E. R. C., instead. Held detail as assistant instructor Company 9, in charge of physical, signal and bayone; instruction of company. Assisted in infantry drill; coached on rifle range.
- (d) NATIONAL GUARD IN FIELD: Sergeant. Commission issued as 1st Lieutenant but declined in order to enter A. S., S. E. R. C., as private. Held detail as police sergeant and as signal instructor at Brigade Headquarters while on border. Instructor in casual company after declaration of war until sent to Officers' Training Camp. Declined promotion to 1st Sergeant several times and chance of commission twice while on border in order to remain with my own company.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Res - 1 -

APPENDIX "8B

Form 1201

CLASS OF SERVICE SYMBOL

Day Message

Day Letter Blue

Night Message Nite

Night Letter N L

If none of these three symbols appears after the check (number of words this is a day message. Otherwise its character is indicated by the symbols appearing after the check.

TELEGRAM

TELEGRAM

GEORGE W. E. ATKINS, PIRST VICE-PRESIDENT

CLASS OF SERVICE SYMBOL

Day Message

Day Letter Blue

Night Message Nito

Night Letter N L

If none of these three symbols appears after the check (assetter of words) this is a day message. Otherwise its cheracter is indicated by the symbol appearing after the check.

RECEIVED AT W. U. BLDG., COR. BAY AND LAURA STS., JACKSONVILLE, FLA. "SYAY"

130NY JO 24 BLUE

MINEOLA LI NY 1120A OCT 1 1917

J C COOPER

326 MARKET ST JACKSONVILLE FLO

SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED EXAMINATIONS FOR RESERVE MILITARY AVIATOR AM AWAITING ORDERS HAVE APPLIED ONCE MORE FOR FOREIGN SERVICE PROBABLY BE AT MINEOLA TWO WEEKS MORE

M C COOPER

1049A

A CERTIFIED True COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER BRIGADIER GEDERAL USAF RES

APPENDIX #8C



To all who shall see these presents, greeting: Know Ur, That reposing special trust and confidence in the patriotism valor fidelity and abilities of m. le. le ooper I do appoint him First Sientenant in the anistion Dection of the Signal Officers' Reserve Corps of the Army of the United States! to rank as such from the twenty-fifth day of October seventien . He is therefore carefully and nineteen hundred and diligently to discharge the duty of the office to which he is appointed, by doing and performing all manner of things thereunto belonging. And I do strictly charge and require all Officers and Soldiers under his command, when he shall be employed on active duty, to be obedient to his orders as an officer of his grade and position. And he is to observe and follow such orders and directions, from time to time, as he shall receive from me, or the future President of the United States of Inveriou, or the General or other superior Officers set over him, according to the rules and discipline of Har. This Commission to continue in force during the pleasure of the President of the United States, for the time being, and for a period of five years from date. Withen under my hand at the lity of Washington, thistwenty fitteday of October in the year of our Soid one thousand nine hundred and seventien and in the one hundred and forty-second year of the Independence of the United States

THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE ACEPTIFIED True Copy Months Merian C. Cooper William Sirelary of Hair The Adjutant General Brigadier General USAF. Res APPENDIX 9

### Copy of a copy.

Headquarters 200th and 201st Aero Squadrons.

December 23rd. 1917.

Colonel Wilson B. Burtt.

Aviation Section, U. S. A.

My dear Col. Burtt:

I have been relieved of command of the 200th and 201st Aero Squadrons to proceed to Englad, on the Staff of Colonel Morrow, in connection with the training of the Air Service personnel therest.

Before leaving I consider it my duty to bring to your notice the excellant work that has been accomplished by 1st Lieut. Merion C. Cooper, who has been relieved from duty with this command and assigned to duty at Issoudun. Lieut. Cooper acted as Adjutant, Supply and Mess Officer, of the squadrons since leaving Mineola, Long Island. The Squadrons have been thrown entirely on their resources for all supplies and pay, in every case Lieut. Cooper has been equal to the occasion. On his leaving the command the Squadrons were left supplied with several months rations and in addition an account of \$28,000 in the Bank of France, for the payment of the troops. We has shown marked administrative ability, is a thorough disciplinarian and an excellant drill master. In many respects I consider him as capable a young officer as I have met in my thenty (20) years of experience in the regular army.

I mention these facts that the service and experience of this Officer may not be lost in the assignment of Officers to duty in the present emergency, that he may be placed where his services will be of most value to the Government.

I recommend him for advancement to the grade of Captain, believing that such advancement is for the best interest of the United States.

Sincerely,

(Signed) JAMES MURRAY Capt. A.S.S.C., U.S.A.

P.S. Lieut. Cooper has had U. S. Naval Academy training.

A True Copy
H.D.LeMar,
1st Lieut., Air Service.

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPERAL USAF. RES

APPENDIX #10

Copy/ww

HEADQUARTERS ASSISTANT CHIEF AIR SERVICE ADVANCE SECTION, AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

Franco, August 31, 1918

SPECIAL ORDERS.

No. 21.

¥

1 6

X

Extract.

Par. 8. The following named officers having reported to the Commanding Officer, 1st Air Depot, in compliance with Par. 14, S.O. 228, Headquarters U.S.Troops, Paris, A.E.F., dated August 27, 1918, will, under authority from the Commanding General, HQ. S.O.S., (dated April 5, 1918), proceed from the First Air Depot to Deleuse (Meuse), reporting upon arrival thereat, to the Commanding Officer, and Bembardment Airdrone, for duty.

let Licut. B.Edwards, A.S., U.S.A.
let Licut. L.S.Hartor, A.S., U.S.A.
let Licut. R.P.Matthows, A.S., U.S.A. let Lieut. M. Stophonson, A.S., USA helled lat Lieut. W.S.Holt, A.S., U.S.A. OK 1st Liout. J.Y.Stokos, A.S., U.S.A O.K. let Lieut. J.R.Pearson, A.S., U.S.A. let Lieut. A.F.Soaver, A.S., U.S.A. let Lieut. G.M.Crawford, A.S., U.S.A. let Lieut. K.C.Payne, A.S., USA let Lieut. H.W.Wilmer, A.S., USA let Lieut. G.H.Fisko, A.S., USA Land lot. Licut. M.W. Leech, A.S., U.S.A.. 1st. Lieut. W.H. Bunkloy, A.S., USA mounded billed 1st Lieut. S.P. Mandell, A.S., U.S.A. 1st Lieut. W.F. Frank, A.S., USA holled and lieut. E.O.Munn, A.S., U.S.A. let Lieut E.C.Leonard, A.S., USA let Lieut. E.A.Parrott, A.S., USA let Lieut. J.T. Willis, Jr. A.S., USA let Liout. R.W. Townes, A.S., U.S.A. 1 let Liout. W.C. Petter, A.S., U.S.A. 1st Lieut. H.C. Preston, A.S., USA halat Liout. K.C. West, A.S., U.S.A. 1st Licut. P.S. Groeno, A.S., "SA Lited LB: Mout. P.M.Ring, A.S., U.S.A. 2nd Liout. D.McWhirter, A. 3., USA let Liout. S. Howards, A.S., U.S.A. 1st Liout. C.G. Catton, A.S., U.S.A. 2nd Liout. L.P.Koopigon, A.S., USA 2nd Lieut. E.A.Taylor, A.S., U.S.A. 2nd Liout. Goo. W. Schultz, A.S., USA lst Liout. R.F.Chapin, A.S., U.S.A. lst Liout. J.T.Tylor, A.S., U.S.A. 2nd Liout. G.W.Porry, A.S., U.S.A. lat Liout. J.C. Endler, A.S., U.S.A.

The travel directed is necessary in the military service.

•

X

x

By command of Brig.Gen.Fouldis,

J.E.PETERS, Capt., Inf., U.S.A. Acting Adjutant.

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAF. Res

Appendix #11

HMADQUARTERS 9hth BOMBARDMENT GROUP (H), AAF, Office of the Intelligence Officer, Biggs Field, N1 Pase, Texas.

Hevember 5, 1942.

SUBJECT: World War I Command of Colemel Meriam C. Cooper.

TO : Whom it may concern.

- 1. Gelonel Merian G. Gesper during the battle of St. Mihiel in September 1918 in World War I (them First Lieutenant Merian G. Gesper) commanded the detachment of airplanes from the 20th and 11th Squadrens directly under the Head-quarters of General Villiam Mitchell.
- 2. The airplanes were used for special observation missions and were  $DH_{-}k^{\dagger}s$  powered with Liberty motors.
- 3. At that time Colonel Cooper was a pilot with the 20th Squadron, First Day Bembardment Group and the writer was his bembing observer.

Edmund (Leonard, Major, Air Gerpe, Intelligence Officer.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF

Appendix #12

### COPY

### HEADQUARTERS AIR SERVICE FIRST ARMY AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

France, September 12th, 1918.

From: Chief Air Service, 1st Army.

To: Commanding Officer, 1st Day Bombardment Group (Thru C. O. 1st Pursuit Wing)

Subject: Commendation of work of 1st Bombardment Group.

- l. The work of the 1st Bombardment Group during the Battle of St. Mihiel, and in the operations after it, has been such as to bring out the praise and appreciation of all the troops and allied services participating in the operations. This Group, under most difficult conditions, with new equipment, and pilots and observers who had recently come up on the front, has shown a devotion to duty and an initiative which has not been exceeded by any troops on the front.
- 2. The work of the 1st Bombardment Group has materially aided in hindering hostile concentrations of troops, troop mevements along roads, and in sweeping the enemy's pursuit aviation back, thereby making lighter the work of pursuit aviation along the immediate front.
- 3. I desire that all members of the Group be informed of the high regard in which their work is held throughout this Army.

Wm. Mitchell, Colonel, A.S., U.S.A. C.A.S. 1st Army.

1st Ind.

Hdg. 1st Pursuit Wing, Air Service, American E, F., Sept. 20th, 1918. To: C.O. 1st Bombardment Group, American E. F.

1. F orwarded.

2. The wing Commander concurs in the sentiments of this letter.

By order of Lieutenant Colonel Atkinson.

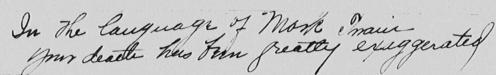
George E. Ramsay, 2nd. Lieut. Air Service, U.S.A. Adjutant.

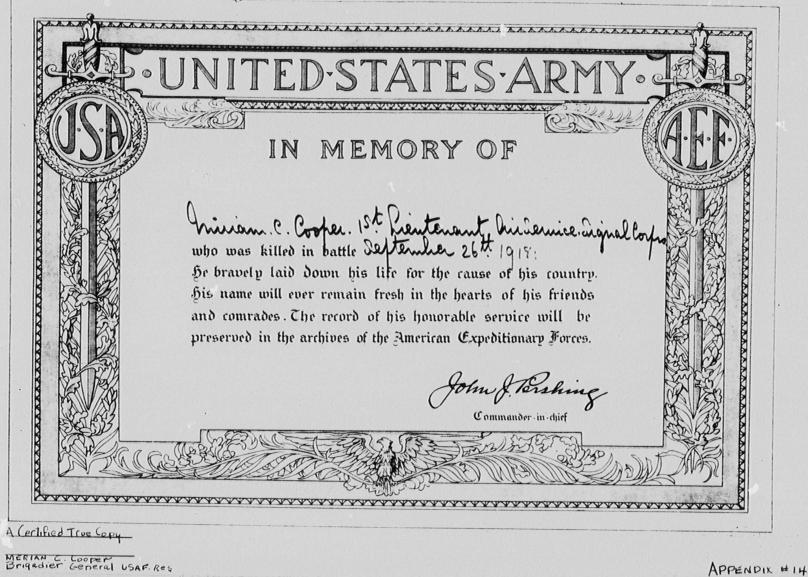
A Certified True Copy

11

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF Res

APPENDIX #13





THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526

Headquarters, 20th Aero Squadror, First Ley Bombardment Group, American E.F., France, December 8th 1918.

From:

Commanding Officer.

20:

C.O. 1st Day Bombardment Group, A.L.F., France.

Subject: Recommendation for the Distinguished Service Cross.

- 1. lat Lieut. Merian C. Cooper, A.S. U.S.A., (Pilot), is herein recommended for the Distinguished Service Cross, for extraordinary heroism on September 26th 1918.
- In the course of a bombing mission on Dun-sur-Leuse on September 26th 1916, the formation was attacked, far behind the Gorman Lines and at an altitude of 15000 feet by a formation of enemy 30out planes three times the size of our own formation. In the course of the fight which followed, five of the seven planes of our formation were shot down. In attempting to protect a plane below the formation, Lieut. Cooper took a very expended position, against overwhelming odds, and by skillfully maneuvering his plane he enabled his Observer, Lieut. Edmand C. Leonard, to bring down one enemy aircraft and assist in bringing down another. Lieut. Cooper held this position until his Observer was severely wounded and his motor burst into flames. The plane then started down out of control. Thinking his Observer dead, Lieut. Cooper climbed from his cookert, intending to jump from the plane. Upon seeing that his Observer was still alive, Lieut. Cooper showed great courage and determination despite the flames in the cookert, climbed back and succeeded in cutting of the gas supply to the motor and managed to extinguish the flames. In doing so, Lieut. Cooper was severely burned on the hands and face. Despite the fact that his hands were practically useless as a result of the plane and brought it down without further injury to himself or his Observer.
- 5. Ment. Copper's action was above and beyond the call of day in that he took this exposed position in order to give protection to the plane below the formation.
- 4. The name and address of the nearest relative of the above officer is: John C. Cooper, (Father), 326 Merket Street, Jacksonville, Florida.

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAF. RES Cario F. Turnbull.

Lewis F. Turnbull. lat Lie at . A.S., U.S.A.

APPENDIX 15A

Exact copy.

OFFICE OF THE CHIEF OF AIR SERVICE TRAINING SECTION.

11 December, 1918.

Chief, Training Section,
The Adjutant General, (Thru Channels)

Lst Lt. Merian C. Cooper, A.S.

1. It is recommended that the Distinguished Service Cross be conferred upon Lst Lt. Merian C. Cooper, A.S., for extraordinary heroism and personal bravery shown in action in the Argonne on the 26th day of September, 1918.

"1ST LT. MEFIAN C. COOPER, PILOT, AND 1ST LT. LEONARD, OBSERVER, WERE FLYING IN ONE OF THE BOOMING FORMATIONS OF \$DH48, LIBERTYS, BELONGING TO THE ZOTH AERO SQUADRON, WHEN THEY WERE ATTACKED BY TWELVE FORKERS AFTER THEIR BOMBS HAD BEEN DROPPED. A BULLET GRAZED LT. COOPER'S HEAD, THE OBSERVER WAS WOUNDED AND THE MOTOR CAUGHT ON FIRE. THE FLAMES WEPE SO PAINFUL THAT HE (LT. COOPER) UNFASTENED HIS BELT AND WAS IN THE ACT OF JUMPING FROM THE MACHINE WHEN HE REMEMBERED THE WOUNDED OBSERVER IN THE PEAR SEAT, AND, NOT KNOWING WHETHER THE OBSERVER WAS ALIVE OR DEAD, HE STAYED IN THE FLAMES, SUFFERING UNTOLD AGONIES FOR THE SAKE OF ANOTHER RATHER THAN END HIS OWN PAIN AT THE EXPENSE OF HIS COMRADE.

LT. COOPER SUCCEEDED IN EXTINGUISHING THE FLAMES IN THE AIR AND BRINGING HIS MACHINE SAFELY TO THE GROUND IN GERMAN TERRITORY."

2. Both Lt. Cooper and Lt. Leonard were prisoners in Germany until the Armistice had been signed.

(Signed) W. G. Kilner, Colonel, A.S.A.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res

APPENDIX 15B

AMERICAN RED CROSS

Hospital No 1. Newilly, France.

From: Capt. Merian C. Cooper, A.S., U.S.A.

To: Chief Decorations Section.

Subject: Distinguished Service Cross

l. I respectfully request that the recommendation made that I receive the Distinguished Service Cross be disappreved.

2. When I first understood I had been recommended I was very pleased as I appreciate the high honor, but after long thought and consideration I realise it would be unjust and unfair for me to receive any honor consideration which the six other efficers who fell in flames in the same fight, and so died, did not receive. There was absolutely nothing more courageous in my conduct than in that of the dead and living of my comrades. I consider it sufficient honor to have served with the squadron with which I did, and I would feel in receiving any honor or decoration that I would be dishenoring my dead and living friends. I therefore request the board to disappreve of this decoration which I could not with honor accept.

5. The recommendation was made as "lst Lieut. M.C. Coeper" I believe.

4. I wish to assert again my firm conviction that I am not entitled to this honor as much as many of the men in my group who gave their lives in service, and it would therefore be dishenerable for me to accept this decoration.

5. I do not wish this to effect in any manner the recommendation for my observor, Lt. Edmond Leonard, whose worthiness was far greater than my own.

Merian C. COOPER

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAFRes

Appendix #16A



## COMPTROLLER OF THE CURRENCY WASHINGTON

April Fifth 1919.

ly dear Mr. Cooper:

I have the pleasure of handing you with this a letter dated March 21 from the Director of the Bureau of Communication of the American Red Cross, advising me of the report which has reached him to the effect that your son, Merican Scoper of the Aviation Corps, was offered the D.C. 3. on December 15, 1918, but declined it on the ground that there were others in his squadron who deserved it quite as much as he.

This is an example of noble unselfishess which is entitled to the highest praise, and I congratulate you upon your son's splendid record and upon the unusual modesty which accompanies his extraordinary merit.

Jud freet waiting

John 3. Cooper, Esq., Jacksonville, Pla.

Incl.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-REG

APPENDIX # 16B

### (COPY) WAR DEPARTMENT THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

19:1B H-801

AG SCI Gooper, Meriem C. (18-5-54) Fx.

December 12, 1934.

Purple Heart

The Quartermaster General.

1. The Secretary of War directs that a Purple Heart, engraved with the name of the recipient, be issued to

Copy for

Capt. Merian C. Cooper, Air-Res., e/o R K O Studios, Inc., 780 Gower Street, Hellywood, California.

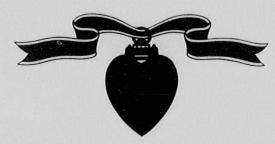
on account of wound received in action September 26, 1918, while serving as let Lieutenant, 80th Aero Squadren.

Adjutant General.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res

Appendix #17A



# THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT
THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
PURSUANT TO AUTHORITY VESTED IN HIM BY CONGRESS
HAS AWARDED THE

### PURPLE HEART

ESTABLISHED BY GENERAL GEORGE WASHINGTON AT NEWBURGH, NEW YORK, AUGUST 7, 1782

First Tieutenant Merian C. Cooper, 0 163 054, 20th Aero Squadron FOR MILITARY MERIT AND FOR WOUNDS RECEIVED IN ACTION

26 Beptember 1918

GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON

THIS 1st DAY OF September

SECRETARY OF THE ARMY

THE ADJUTANT GENERAL.

Appendix #17B

Ist Ind.

WFW-EEE

File No. 201 - Cooper, Merian C., Captain

War Dept., O.D.A.S., Washington, October 27, 1919. - To The Adjutant General of the Army.

l. It appears from the records of this office that Captain Merian C. Cooper, A.S.A., was on September 27, 1918, reported missing in action. On September 28th this officer was reported a prisoner in Germany. Copy of correspondence in the files of this office relative to the experiences of Captain Cooper indicates that he was shot down during an acrial combat with four German scout planes and that his plane burst into flames but he succeeded in extinguishing same before he erashed. It appears that his hands and face were very hadly bursted at this time and that he was treated for these burns while a prisoner of war.

2. Captain Cooper was homorably discharged at Gievres, France, August 5, 1919.

By authority of the Director of Air Service.

Wm. F. Pearson, Colonel, A.S.A., Administrative Rescutive.

Byt

RUSH B. LINCOLN
Rush B. Lincoln
Lt. Colonel, A.S.A.,
Chief Personnel Division.

AG 201-Cooper, Marion C. (Mis. Division Ball Section)

2nd Dad.

WSB/RS/LOB

War Department, A.G.O., Nov. 10, 1919.- To E. C. Leonard, 1233 Winneman Ave., Chicago, Illinois.

The records of this office show that Captain Cooper was shot down by a German plane and seriously burned for which he is entitled to wear one wound chevron.

By Order of the Secretary of War:

A Certified True Copy

WML S. BIDDLE

Adjutant General.

MERIAN C. COOPER BRIGADIER GENERAL USAF-RES.

APPENDIX #17C

Culf and other regions in that part of the world, for the purpose of writing articles for the magazine "Asia" and for Harper's Magazine. I have great pleasure in commending Mr. Cooper to the courteous consideration of anyone to whom he may submit this letter, as a man of high character and great courage, entitled to the respect and gratitude of all who value those traits, and especially of those for whom he fought in the great War - Englishmen, Frenchmen and Americans.

Sincerely yours,

My daft

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

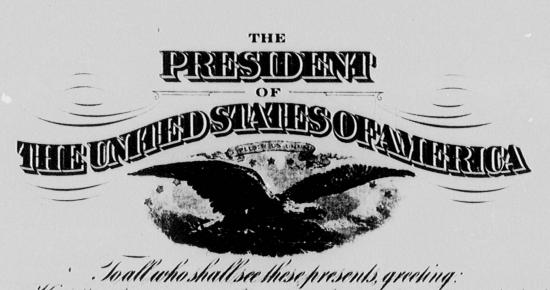
MERIAN C. COOPER BRIGADIER GENERAL USAF. RES M. Boggardia

### Supreme Court of the United States Mushington, D.C.

Fointe-au-Fic, Canada, September 4, 1922.

To Whom It May Concern:

The bearer of this note, Mr. Merian Cooper, of Jacksonville, Florida, is a young American, educated at the Maval Academy at Annapolis, and a veteran of the World War. He was in the Aviation Corps of the American army, and distinguished himself in a fight in the air during the battles of the Argonne Forest. He brought his plane to earth and saved his observer, although subjected to dreadful burning. I have come to know his worth and his character through old friends of mine. r. and Mrs. Thomas Rhinelander of You York. Mr. Cooper was a comrade of the son of Mr. and Mrs. Rhinelander, I'r. Newbold Rhinelander, who was a member of the same Aviation Corps as Mr. Cooper, and was killed in the fight in which Mr. Cooper was so dreadfully burned. hir. Cooper is a lover of adventure, a literary man, and is accompanying Captain Salisbury on a research visit APPENDIX 418



. Know Ye, that reposing special brust and confidence in the patriotism, valor, fidelity adabilities of Merian Coldwell Cooper andabilitiesof . Idoappointhim Captain, Air Service (Aeronautics) The United States Army: to rankas such from the first eighteen Heistherefore carefully and diligently to nindeen hundred and discharge the duty of the office to which he is appointed by doing and performing all

manner of things thereunto belonging. And Idustrictly charge and require all Officers and Soldiers under his command tobeobedient to his orders as an officer of his grade and position. Und he is toolserve and follow such orders and directions from time to time, as he shall receive from me, or the future President of the United States of America, or the General or other Superior Officers setwerhim, according to the rules and discipline of War.

This longuission socontinue in forceduring the pleasure of the President of the United States, for the time being, and for the period of the existing emergency, under the provisions afan Act of lingress upproved. May zighteen, nineken hundredand seventeen.

Givenundermy hand at the lity of Washington, this intheyear of our Lord one thousand minghundred and eighteen undin the one hundred and for ty-third year of the Independence of the United States

Bythe President:

The Adjutant General's Office

Scround APPENDIX#19

The Assistant Secretary of Mar.

### Remarks.

(Note: Commanding officer or any officer under whom the officer may be serving may, if he wishes, state in his own handwriting the fact that this officer has shown aptitude for any particular duty or employment, or if he has special qualifications for any particular branch of the service. A marked act of gallantry or a special duty well carried out may be mentioned. A succinct report should be made of any disciplinary action taken against this officer. These statements must be signed by the officer making the entry.)

captain Cooper has
awar extraordinary service
to the area. He has exhibited courage- resourcefulness and text to an unusual
degree. degree. Herchert Hoovers

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER BRIGADIER GENERAL USAF. RES.

APPENDIX \$20A

# UNITED STATES FOOD ADDITIONSTRATION MISSION FOR POLAND.

ADMINISTRACJA ŽYVNOSCIOWA STANÓW ZJE IDNOCZONYCH MISYA DLA POLSKI.

m--

Capt. Merian C. Cooper, U. S. Food Administration, Warsaw, Poland.

My dear Cooper:-

I want to express to you my personal ap reciation of the excellent work you have done in relieving the distress in the City of Lemberg while it was in a state of siege; the organisation there of the food supply and later your extremely energetic and efficient work in connection with organizing kitchens for feeding the undernourished children of Eastern Galicia.

I am sure the time must come when the people of Poland will appreciate even more than now your splendid work.

Very sincerely,

WRG-W

Chief of Mission

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper ... Brigadier General USAF. RES

APPENDIX #20B

COPY

To the Mission

for Delivering of Food

of the United States of America

to the hands of Mr. Grove, Esq., Colonel

#### in Warsaw

The population of the whole Poland, which is suffering since five years the consequences of the war, feels a profound and very cordial thankfulness to the Government of the United States of North America, for the proofs of sympathy which we have had in every matter from this Government, and for the assistance which has been kindly offered to our nation, in sending food for the inhabitants of our territories.

But it is especially the population of Lwow, whose gratefulness is the greatest - of this town which suffers not for the first time, the dreadful results of the war and which stands since a long time in the nearest contact with war operations.

When during the siege of the town, it was almost no food for the inhabitants, the Government of the United States of North America has offered his assistance and has send food which saved the life of a great quantity of families, softened the distress and brought in the hearts of the whole population a great and profound thankfulness for the generous and kind help of the noble Americans. The representants of the Polish Government, clergy, Community and of the charitable societies whose signatures are put on the end of this letter, are sending to the Mission for delivering of food of the United States of North America, the most cordial and grateful thanks for the generous activity. Our mediator in this case will be the representant of this Mission in Lwow, Sir Captain Merian Colwell Cooper, - who is known in our town as a true and frank friend of the suffering population of Lwow - and who worked sacrifying himself and without taking care of his own life and health - visiting the environs of Lwow where maladies reigned - for bringing bread to the hungry inhabitants.

Archbishop

(Signatures) Bilgewski

For Humanitary-Society

Leon Pinisiki

May 16th 1919

The Vice-President of the Government

(Signature) Grodiski

The President of the Town

(Signature) Joseph Neuman

- \$ 2,1153 APPENDIX # 20C

AMERICAN RELIEF ADMINISTRATION

EUROPEAN CHILDREN'S FUND.

Herbert Hoover, Chairman,

115 Broadway, New York City.

February 27, 1920.

Captain M. O. Cooper, 326 Market Street, Jacksonville, Florida.

Dear Captain Cooper:

The Polish Ministry of Approvisation has delivered to us a silver medal with rame, and diploma. (translation of which we have had made and are attaching thereto) and requests that the same be forwarded to you as a token of their appreciation of your services.

Accordingly, to are sending you these articles in todays mail, to the ad ress indicated above.

We are enclosing a sopy of Mr. Rickard's acknowedgement of a similar honor, the form of which he will be glad to have you use if you see fit.

Yours very truly,

AMERICAN RELIEF ADMINISTRATION

BY: W. J. Myers.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. RES

APPENDIX #20 D



MOLISH TRANSLADION.

For the brother in arms Centain II rian C. Cooper for bravery and faithful performance of duty for the native land in memory of the fighting in defence of Lwow and the east frontier in the year 1918-1919. I give this insignia of honor, "The Reglet."

ACERTIFIED True Copy

The Commendant of the Army of the Wort

MERIN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAFIR Rosweidowski.

APPENDIX 20E

Warsaw, Poland, May 19, 1919.

PROI: M. C. Cooper, Capt., .ir Service,

Commanding General, ... . F.

SubJoon: Duty.

20:

l. I refuest to be assigned to duty either in the hir Sertice or the Infantry in the archangel where our troops are in action against the enemy.

2. I request to be assigned to duty in any combat unit in any capacity in t is or in any other district where our troops are actually fighting.

me immediately if I may be assigned to such service.

4. If I can be assigned to such duty, I will be glad to serve in any capacity with combat troops regardless of the fact if the duty assigned me is commensurate with my rank.

Service, as I have had four years training, U. S. Naval houdemy, one year on hexican border in Infantry, and active service as a pilot in aviation at the front in France.

6. If impossible to station me with our own troops. I request to be assigned to duty with any of the allied Units in archangel or with the Russian or Polish armies fighting against the bols oviks.

M. C. Cooper, Captain, Mir Service.

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. COOPER
BRIGADIER GENERAL USAF REGION Such! The lot I mil. on the.

APPENDIX 1A ALSO # 21 1st Ind

Capt. M. C. Cooper,
U. S. Food Administration, Mission for Poland, Marsaw, Poland,
May 20, 1919.
TO: Mr. Herbert Hoover, U. S. Food Administration,
51 Avenue Montaigne,
Paris, France.

- 1. Recommending a proval.
- 2. Captain Gooper has handled a very difficult relief situation in the City of Lemberg during the siege and has the universal respect of all the parties and factions in that town. He has devoted all possible energy to the work and his administration has in every way been a credit to the American organization.
- 3. His well-known record in the Air Service would appear to entitled him to great consideration in a decision as to his future services.

U. S. Food Administration,

By \_\_\_\_\_\_ One R. Grove, Ohief of Mission.

2nd Ind.

Capt. M. C. Cooper U. S. Food Administration, Paris, June 2, 1919 - TO: Commander-in-Chie American E. F. Chaumont.

- 1. Forwarded, for such action as the Com ander-in-Chief may determine.
- 2. The services of this officer can be spared by this Administration.

BY TUTHORITY OF HARBART HOOVER

James S. McKnight Lt.Col. of Infantry Executive Officer

JSM/NO

ACERTIFIED TRUE COPY

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. RES

APPENDIX JA

Gooper, No . Cap? Srd Ind.

1570-W

CH: AEF. France, June 4, 1919 - To the United States Food Administration, returned. If the services of Captain H. C. Cooper, A. S., are no longer desires it is requested that he be returned to France for further disposition.

For the Commender-in-Chief:

Adjutant General.

Capt. M.C. Cooper

4th Ind.

American Relief Administration, 51 Avenue Montaigne, Merie, des 6, 1919 - Por Colonal V.E. Grevo, Mission for Folund, at arpass

L. Inviting attention to the Erd indermement. It is requested that Cuption lief. Copper. Asia he preferred to Paris in order to be returned to the U.S. Many. of he al-like specie.

BY MANICELLY OF HERBOR HOUSE

Leo.Mathewa, Lt.Ool. G.S.

DEC VIEW

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES

APPENDIX IA

AMBASADA RZECZYPOSPOLITEJ POL. W WASZYNGTONIE

ATTACHÉ WOJSKOWY

POLISH EMBASSY 2640-1614 STREET, N.W. WASHINGTON THE MILITARY ATTACHÉ

No. 161/T/41

### CERTIFICATE

I hereby certify that Merian C. Cooper served in the Polish Ukrainian War at the Seige of Lwow, 1919 with the rank of Captain for which he received from General Rozwadowski, the Commandant of the Army of the East, the insignia of honor "The Eaglet" ("Orleta") and that he served in the Polish Russian War of 1919, 1920 and 1921, first as Captain, Flight Commander, then as Squadron Commander and finally as Lieutenant Colonel and as Group Commander for which he was given the following military decorations.

- 1. Order of Virtuti Militari V. Class
- 2. Military Cross with 2 bars
- 3. Medal of War 1918 1920
- 4. Cross of the Polish Soldiers from America.

Colonel Wrodzimierz Onacewicz, Military and Air Attache.

Military and Air Attache.

WASHINGTON, D.C. September 5, 1941.

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAF. RES

Appendix 22A

BENGERMAN NAOZ.DO./.NP.

Nr. LEG. 2930

LEGITYMACJA

Kpt:pil.C.COGPER Marjan

(ODDZIAŁ 7.08k. myśliwrawnionym JEST DO NOSZENIA "KRZYŻA WALECZ- ZATWIERDZENIE NADANIA NASTĄPIŁO
DEKRETEM NACZELNEGO WODZA
NR. OGŁOSZONEGO W DZIENNIKU PERSONALNYM M. S. WOJSKOWYCH
Z DNIA

OKUCEMI OKOZKAZEM NR. 15. Nacz.

(PODPIS)

KPCA SZKFA SZTABU GEN.

Saneral podpovucznik.

XXXX NACTELNE DONODITO.TP.



LEGITYMACIA

v.owużniająca Kpt.pil.C. COOPER

Marjana

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper
Brigadier General USAF-Res.
Zekt. Gref. Nacs. Dow. Nr. 2281. 10000. 1 111.21.

APPENDIX 228

CHIEF OF STAFF, POLICH ARMY. Nr. of Leg. 2930

LEGITIMATION

CAPTAIN PILOT C. COOPER, Merian,

from the 7 Scout Squadron

has the right to wear the order of

" CROSS OF THE BRAVE" with two bars

given him by the Chief of State by the Decree Nr. 15

I. CHIEF OF CEMERAL STAFF

/-/ Signature

Lt. General.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES

Appendix 220

The Chancellar of the Order

Tolomia Restituta states herewith

that the Sterident of the Republic

ly the decree of January 28 1942

Imported placed Colonel M. Carper

on the roll

Tomorder of the knights of the arder

Emander of the knights of the arder

bolomia Restruta and destowed on

him the insignia of the Care Commander

Cross of that Order

Chancellar Karineier Svankouras Seeretary A. Ovsin'adi Generas

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. R&

Appendix #22 Bs

### KOSCIUSKO SQUADRON POLISH AVIATION SERVICE.

Lemberg, Poland, June 20, 1920.

Mr. Jnb. C. Cooper,

Jacksonville, Fla.

My dear Mr. Cooper:

We have just returned after being at the front for about three months, working very hard and with quite a bit of success. Begause of this, I did not receive your letter containing your donation to the Children's Fund until very recently. Permit me to extend my tardy thanks for this splendid donation to what we consider a very worthy cause.

Your son and I have been fightinh literally shoulder to shoulder against one of the hardest propositions that I have ever seen. Aviation in open warfare means thard, exciting, dangerous work and plenty of it. Merian so impressed the high staff with the value of his work that he has been mentioned time and again in despatches; being especially cited for the medal of the Virtuti Militari, the highest honor that can be conferred by the Polish Government. You may take my word for it that he has more than earned it. Flying and fighting, it seemed the entire day, he seemed to be absolutely tircless and fearless. The hotter it was the better he liked it. He is already the hero of this city, because of his previous work here, and if he keeps on at the rate he is going, he will surely become one of Poland's National Heroes. I make this statement in all sincerity.

donation.

Again permit me to thank you for your splendid

Believe me to be

Very sincerely yours.

(Signed) Cedric E. Faunt-le-Roy

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Res

Appendix #22 E

Roseiusseo Squadron, Polemd, August 4, 1920.

Mr. John O. Cooper, Jacksonville,

Florida, U.S.A.

Dear Mr. Coopert-

With deep regret, I must tell you that your son Capt. Merian C. Cooper has been missing from this squadron since July the thirteenth.

The facts of the case are these. After a three weeks rest and reorganization period in Lwow, the squadron was again ordered to go to the front. Holoby a small villiage on the rail road line Luck-Kowel was selected as the new stand of the squadron. Supply trains were sent to that point on the twelfth of July.

On the thirteenth of July, the pilots of the squadron were ordered by the Chief of Air Service, Z of A, to make an observation flight over the front Brody, Dubno, Luck; landing on the new field in Holoby. Merian was flying a new Italian type Ballila At single seater. He had previously tried this machine in test flights totaling five hours and it was in perfect condition.

As he was C.O. of the squadron at the time, he decided to make the last flight, flying alone. He did not land at Holoby and we have had no news of him since.

The next morning and in the days following, many planes went over the route followed by Merian, but none saw any traces of his plane on the ground. The whole Polish intelligence service is working on the case and notes have been dropped in enemy territory, asking for exchange of information on missing pilots. Thus far ,we have had no success.

Appendix \$ 23

To my mind, this is a good sign; because in the case of every pilot, heretofore killed or captured by the Bolshevists, the news came back almost immediately
I have delayed writing you before this, for fear of unnecessarily exciting you,
and also, I disliked to write with so little definate information.

Everyone in the squadrom confidently expects Merian to come back safely.

We have had pilots return, after being reported missing for a period of two months.

Owing to the size of the country and the looseness of the warfare, it is entirely possible for a pilot to land behind the Bolshevist lines, burn his plane and live with friendly peasants; without being able to cross the lines, or get news of his whereabouts back to his friends.

Capt. Cooper was second in command of the American pilots in Poland. He is known thruout all Poland for his bravery and capabillity and has been recommended many times for decorations.

I am at a total loss without him. If the proposed armistice or peace with the Bolshevists comes off in the near future, I shall immediately set out with a motor car in search of him. Any information which comes in will be sent to you at once.

Believe me, I am yours to verve, Codric & Faunt la Roy Major Pilot, J.P.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. RES

Appendix # 23

#### TRANSLATION FROM "WIEK NOWY" OF SEPTEMBER 16TH 1920

Captain Pilot Merian Cooper, the American, who met with such a tragic end on the field of glory, arrived in Lemberg in February 1919, as Delegate of the Food Mission and immediately earned the gratitude of the inhabitants of our town by a speedy and well-aimed food action for the starving children of the town. This action was incited not so much by humanitarian motives as by a real love for Poland of which his life and his death were proofs.

This fine, active youth knew and loved Poland from his earliest years, there were traditions in his family from the years of the struggle for the independence of America, when Pulaski gave his life for the cause of freedom in the other hemisphere, when Cooper's great grandfather fought side by side with General Pulaski who was killed at the seige of Savannah.

The heroic American was brought up from infancy with a love for Poland and when an opportunity arose decided to serve her with his life. When the food action for the starving Lemberg children was already established Captain Cooper left for Paris where with General Rozwadowski's assistance he formed the Kosciuszko flying squadron which contained 12 Americans all decided to serve Poland.

This squadron rendered real service to Poland during the war with the Bolshevik invaders as the decree of the Chief Command testifies full of praise and regognition for the heroism of the American aviators and the service rendered by them. During the fiercest moments when it bombarded and threw bombs on Budienny's cavalry causing a panic among the Cossacks, his aeroplane was shot and fell on the enemy side, together with its heroic pilot.

Captain Cooper was very interested in the Lemberg defence action, and gathered conscientiously materials concerning the fighting youth and organized an action bringing up at his expense and that of his comrades, thirty orphan defenders ---

Honor to his memory.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. RES

Appendix 424

## BROADWAY NATIONAL BANK

OFFICE OF THE PRESIDENT

June 16, 1921.

Mr. John C. Cooper, 326 Market St., Jacksonville, Fla.

My dear Mr. Cooper:-

I was one of the persons in Warsaw that greeted the arrival of your Son on May third, from his escape from Moscow. He received a great ovation and it was a pleasure indeed to be one of the persons there to participate in that ovation.

I have had many talks with your son being constantly with him, and I want to tell you how proud I was to have been associated with him during my stay in Warsaw. He is certainly an upright man of the highest character, and with a smile that you cannot rub off. In spite of what he has passed through he is just as cheerful as though he was not a party to the thrilling experience that he went through. Permit me to congratulate you on being the father of this wonderful boy.

I am sending you under separate cover, by fegistered mail, medals presented to your son by the President of the Polish Republic, Gen. Pilsudski, and want to say at this time that I was present at the palace of the President when the medals were presented. I am also sending you other documents that he asked me to forward to you. Will you please be good enough to acknowledge receipt of this as well as receipt of the registered package, and also advise your son to the effect that you have received them.

With kindest regards, I am, believe me,

A Certified True Copy

Sincerely,

Merian C. Cooper MMN/FVR Brigadier General USAF. Res

APPENDIX #25

Lwow 2/1 926

Letter from Count Leon **Pininski**Former Governor General of Galicia
to my father
John C. Cooper
326 **Ma**rket Street, Jacksonville, Florida

My dear Sir

Acknowledging the receipt of the copy of my speech I thank you for the extremely kind words you are adding to it in your letter. It gives me a great pleasure to have thus the opportunity of addressing a few words to the father of my dear friend Colonel Merian C. Cooper. As I was obliged in my short speech at the unveiling of the memorial monument to give to my rords a more general turn, it was impossible to express in it at leisure my personal feelings towards your son. The more satisfied feel I now by telling you that I am not only a friend but also really an enthusiastic admirer of your dear son - so dear to me as if he were one of my nearest in the world. Of course, we are all here in Poland exceedingly grateful to Colonel Cooper for everything he did serving our patriotic cause, bringing us help in distress and need, fighting then against the Bolsheviks with prodigious courage and suffering martyrdom during his prison in Russia. His name has become very popular everywhere all over our country. But few people were on such friendly and intimate terms with him as I was from the very beginning of his stay in Poland - nobody could appreciate him b etter than I did. He was just splendid in the most difficult situations, full of enthusiasm, a born hero, energetic, plucky beyond all imagination, nobleminded, idealistic in his sentiments and at the same time very practical and endowed with an excellent sharp political judgment. He will be ever for me one of the persons I love and admire most. I had a letter from him some weeks ago from Bangkok and wrote to him addressing to the American Consulat there. Let's hope he will return quite safe and in good health from his newest exploratory expedition and will publish some interesting book about it. If you have news from him and are sending him a message, please don't forget to join also warm heartfelt greetings from me.

Believe me, Dear Sir, with best regards,

Yours very truly

Leon Pininski

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER

Brigadier General - USAF-Res.

Appendix #26A

Love 2/I 926

My seer Lir

Besnowledging the receipt of the copy
of my speech I shaws you for the extense
Birst words you are adding to it in your
latter, It gives me a greet solesoure
to have thus the apportunity of
addressing a few words to the father
of my sear friends Colonel cherien l.
Cooper. As I was obliged in my short
speech at the numericity of the memorial.
monument to give to my words a more
seneral turn, it was impossible to express

in it at leisure my personal feelings towards your son The more satisfied feel I now oby telling you shat I am not only a frient but also really an enthusiastic admirer of your vear son - so ver to me as if he were one of my nearest in the most. If course, we are all here in Polant exceedingly grateful to Colousl Cooper for everything he vist serving our patriatic cause, bringing us less in sixtress as next, fighting Then against the Bolahewills with producing his prior a suffering mentyroom slaring his prior in Russia. His name has become very APPENDIX #26A

propular everythere all over our country. Part few people were on such friendly a intimate terms with him as I was from the very beginning of his stay in yosland, nobody sould appreciate him better than i viv. The was just splendid in the most of fficult situations, full of entimes as and all imagination, nobelimbly bearintic in his sentiments at the same time very prectical a embount with an excellent sharp political informat, the woll be ever for me one of the persons I love of admire most.

ago from Bangbook & wrote to him obbressing to the american Consult there. Let's hope he will between gute safe & in good health from his newest exploratory expedition & will publish come interesting book about it. If you have news from him & are sending him a message, please don't forget to join also warm heartfelt greetings from me. Believe me, dear Sir, with best regards yours very truly A Certified True Copy

Morian C. COOPER Brigadier General USAF. RES APPENDIX 4264

COPY - of text of Speech made by Mr.Pininski, At the unveiling of the monument in memory of American Aviators, at Lwow, Foland, on May 30, 1925.



The American squadron had for Poland not only a very great moral value, it brought us also an exceedingly efficient support in war. We had in our scarcely formed young army almost no aviators at ail, and the American flyers were quite prodigiously plucky and skillful. When the result of the war after enormous difficulties and dangers was at last favorable for us, it was certainly in a considerable part their merit. If there had been at all any debt of gratitude to be paid, American certainly paid it during the wars and afterwards in a most generous and splendid way. We shall never forget that it was the Government of the United States and the highminded President Woodrow Wilson who proclaimed the restoration of an independent united Poland as one of the conditions of the peace in Europe. We shall always remember the most generous help given to our country by the relief organized by the great bemefactor of the world, Herbert Hoover. The noble American nation in that way was bringing us support both in peace and in war, and we have not the slightest doubt that these friendly feelings toward us are still existing in the United States in the same degree. The American generosity was so prodigious that now we are the debtors, and shall never be able to requite this great debt of gratitude.

But

APPENDIX 26 B

- 2 -

But we do not mind it, knowing that our generous and mighty creditor does not need anythervice from us, and will be content with only our hearffelt thanks as a payment. These will never fail - as we have the honor and privilege of seeing today among us, the honorable official representative of the American Government, I can assert it in the name of us all: The Pelish people may have many faults but ingratitude is not one of them, that is sure.

We shall especially ever cherish and hener the brilliant members of the Kessitsske Squadren who fought for our cause. The names of their leaders, Colonels Fount le Roy and Cooper are best known. We who are living here in Lwow remember most vividly the days five years age during the spring of 1920. We were then fighting against Belshevik Russia - every moment the danger was more terrible - the new Polish State might have been crushed by the invasion of the half-savage Russian red army. The American help at that time was for us really like a help from heaven. The brilliant part played by the so-called Kescinsako Squadron and splendid American flyers can be without exageration compared with those legendary mediaeval knights of the Gragi congregation. who appeared unexpectedly when it was necessary to fight for truth and justice to defend oppressed virtue. The metives for bringing us this help were of the most noble, purely altruistic kind. Our American friends realized, much better than many of the European politicians did,

that

- 3 -

that in this mement not only the existence of Poland, but also the fate of European civilization was at stake. If Poland were defeated, and perhaps even destroyed, the Belshevik disease would have been spread throughout The middle of Europe bringing everywhere the destruction of ethics and culture. Fighting for Poland was, therefore, at the same time defending the peoples of western civilisation against barbarism and crime. But our American friends at this time, besides a clear political judgement, had some purely idealistic metives. They intended to prove the gratitude of the American nation toward Poland for the help some remarkable Folish heroes brought to america by fighting for its independence in the great memorable war. It is difficult to find anything more beautiful and touching than this feeling of gratitude which was still so vivid in the heart of the American nation almost a century and a half after the clease of the war of independence. The names of these Americans in Foland ought to be as dear to us as are the names of Koseiuszko and Fulaski in the United States.

a splendid leader and organizer, and did not cease even after the war to make efficient propaganda for Foland. Merian Gooper, our enthusiastic friend, this chivalrous and hereis modern Bayard "sans peur at sans rangealles brought to our cause the greatest sacrifices, suffered martyrdom in the casemates of a Bolshevik prison, and escaped death only by a miracle. And also the names of the other members of the squadron are known in our country and are dear to our memory. They returned to their country with the conviction of having done a good

APPENDIX 26B dood

deed and er led the gratitude of the ple Pelish nation.
But to these young unhappy herees who lest their lives
for Peland we can prove our gratitude only by shedding
tears on their graves and bringing flowers to adorn this
mommment. We shall forever cherish and honor their memory,
this we do selemnly premise today!

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Res

Appendix 26B

F1/Lt. Zygmur W.Bieńkowski 303 Squadron Air Ministry, London, England. 30.5.1942.

Dear Colonel Cooper,

I should like to take this opportunity of thanking you and your American Colleagues personally on behalf of the pilots in the 303 Kościuszko squeadron.for your appreciation of and interest in our achievements in this war. I am writing this letter also because it is my earnest wish, and I think, that of all my fellow pilots, to renew your association with our squadron. We remember with pride your magnificent and brave work in the early days of its history. We can never forget the unselfish motives which actuated you in your fight against our enemies from 1919 to 1921, and now that the fame of the Kościuszko Squadron is established for all time, we do feel that we owe our greatest debt to you for what you did and for what you created. The Polish Air Force grew from that nucleus of the Kościuszko Squadron, and your names will always be remembered when any history of the Polish Air Force is written.

But, I remeat, it is our earnest wish that we may be able to turn back the pages of history. We would like to hear personally from all the American officers associated with the Kosciuszko Squadron whereever they may be. Since it is my plan to have a complete memoir of the squadron, it could never be complete without a personal record of the American volunteers in the early days. You may remember that we have some memoirs containing your signature, and even a short resume of the early happenings of the squadron which I am afraid is so brief and impersonal that we cannot learn from it as much as we should like, and if there are any other records left in Poland they are probably destroyed or at least inaccessible because of the war.

So please forgive me for making this request and for causing you any trouble. We should esteem it a personal honour if any of your former colleagues would communicate with us, telling us what they remember of their experiences with the squadron, what happened to them day by day in those early years, and where it is possible, sending us photographs of themselves and their old machines. These personal reminiscences would then give us our first volume in our record of the Kościuszko Squadron.

Perhaps, later, I shall be able to send you all a detailed memoir of our history, and I look forward to the day when we might all be able to meet in order to honour the name of the Kościuszko Squadron. We, on our part, may be able to tell you of our share in this war, while you can tell us of your share in the last.

We send you our warmest greetings. Meanwhile we shall continue the fight "For Your Freedom and Ours"!.

Yours very sincerely

A Certified True Copy

Friedkoutoh.

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res

Appendix 27

# AVIATION CORPORATION OF THE AMERICAS 122 East 42nd Street, New York

February 10, 1932

Mr. Merian C. Cooper Federal Aviation Corporation 122 East 42nd Street New York, N. Y.

Dear Mr. Cooper:

We take pleasure in informing you that at the regular meeting of the Board of Directors of Aviation Corporation of the Americas and of Pan American Airways, Inc., held on January 27, 1931, you were elected a director of each of such Companies, to fill an existing vacancy.

For your information, a regular meeting of the directors of each Company is held at the office of Pan American Airways, Inc., 122 East 42nd Street, New York City, on the last Tuesday of each month, the Aviation Corporation of the Americas meeting being held at 4:30 P.M. and Pan American Airways, Inc. meeting at 4:45 P.M. It has been our practice to forward notices of these meetings about one week in advance.

We would appreciate your advising us of your acceptance of these directorships, and furnishing notices of the meetings sent.

Very truly yours,

AVIATION CORPORATION OF THE AMERICAS

By J. T. Trippe s/ Vice-President

A CERTOFOED TRUE COPY

PAN AMERICAN AIRWAYS, INC.

By J. T. Trippe s/ President

MERIAN C. COOPER Brig. Gen. USAF-Res.

Appendix 28A

WESTERN AIR EXPRESS
117 W. Ninth St.
LOS ANGELES

March 16, 1931

Mr. M. C. Cooper, Vice-Fresident Federal Aviation Corporation 122 East 42nd Street New York, New York

Dear Mr. Cooper:

It gives me pleasure to advise that at the annual meeting of stockholders of Western Air Express Corporation, held today, you were elected a Director of this corporation.

Yours very truly,
WESTERN AIR EXPRESS CORPORATION

H. M. Wright, /s/ Secretary

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER Brig. Gen. USAF-Res.

Appendix 28B

COPY

NATIONAL AVIATION CORPORATION 52 BROADWAY NEW YORK

March 14, 1932

Merian C. Cooper, Esq. 780 Gower Street Los Angeles, California

Dear Sir:

Please be advised that the annual meeting of the stockholders of National Aviation Corporation held Wednesday, March 2, 1932, at 52 Broadway, New York, you were elected a Director of the Corporation, to serve in accordance with the By-Laws.

Yours Very Truly,

NATIONAL AVIATION CORPORATION

By Frank F. Russell Secretary

FFR.L

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER Brig. Gen. USAF-Res.

Appendix #280



## THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AUTHORIZED BY EXECUTIVE ORDER, FEBRUARY 4,1944 HAS AWARDED

### THE BRONZE STAR MEDAL

TO

Colonel Merian C. Cooper, AO 163 054, N & A F

FOR

MERITORIOUS ACHIEVEMENT IN GROUND OPERATIONS AGAINST THE ENEMY India-Burma-China Theater, 29 April 1942

GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON THIS 8th DAY OF February 1949



APPENDIX 29

HEADQUARTERS, CHINA AIR TASK FORCE Office of the Commanding General

> Kunming, China, November 30, 1942

Colonel, Merian C. Cooper, A.C. KUNMING, China.

Dear Colonel Cooper,

Upon the occasion of your transfer from my command to duties in the United Lates, I desire to express my appreciation for the services which you have rendered to the China Air Task Force.

For more than four and one half months you have served as Chief of Staff and Chief of the INtelligence Section, A-2, for the China Air Task Force. During this period you have continued to discharge your duties, although at one time you were seriously ill with dysentery for more than a month and you have suffered from severe colds at other times. You have collected and evaluated intelligence in a superior manner so that Units of the China Air Task Force were employed against the enemy most effectively.

As Chief of Staff you directed the execution of the decisions and plans made by me from time to time in such manner as to insure the maximum effectiveness. Specifically, during the early part of August 1942 you visited the combat airdromes in South China and arranged for the withdrawal of our small units which were subjected to constant Japanese attacks so that complete withdrawai was effected without loss or injury of a single man. Again in the early part of October, 1942, you confirmed my estimate that the enemy were preparing to attack the Dinjan area - the western terminus of our air transport supply route. Acting on your own initiative during my temporary abasence from Kunming, on October 25th-26th, 1942, you directed the successful defense of the Kunming area from enemy attacks which were coordinated in time with his attacks in the Dinjan area. This was done so effectively that two large enemy formations which attempted to reach Kunming on October 25th-26th were intercepted and turned back from a point 100 miles from Kunming. You r know+edge of logistical and operational conditions in China is so extensive that you are peculiarly fitted for duty as Executive or Chief of Staff of any Air unit in this area. If your physical condition permits, I specially desire to have you return to China to serve under my command.

Copy of this letter will be placed in your 201 File.

Wishing you every success in the future,

I am, yours sincerely,

C. L. CHENNAULT Brig. General, A.U.S. Commanding

A TRUE COPY

A. H. Alexander /s/
A. H. ALEXANDER
Lt. Colonel, AC
A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Res

Appendix #30

HEADQUARTERS FOURTEENTH U. S. AIR FORCE OFFICE OF THE COMMANDING GENERAL A. P. O. 627, c/o POSTMASTER NEW YORK CITY, NEW YORK

9 December 1943

Lieut. General George C. Kenney, Commaniding General, 5th U. S. Air Force, A. P. O. 502, c/o Postmaster, New York City, New York.

Dear George,

As you know, Colonel Merian Cooper served under me as Chief of Staff of the China Air Task Force for six months. He did a superior job during his entire assignment here and participated in quite a number of combat missions. Most of his missions were not officially recorded and to certify them I would have to depend on my memory with no other backing. However, I recommended him for the Air Medal, Silver Star and the Legion of Merit. I believed then and still believe that he had earned and deserved them. At that time the China Air Task Force did not have authority to make awards and General Bissell's Headquarters disapproved the recommendation for the Air Medal and General Stilwell's Headquarters disapproved the recommendations for the Silver Star and the Legion of Merit.

The Fourteenth Air Force was authorized to make awards in April, 1943, and Colonel Cooper left in December, 1942. Therefore, I don't see how I can decorate him now without putting a very broad construction on my present authority to make awards, and, in addition, reflecting on the judgement of the Theater Commander.

I am telling you all this because I do believe he is worthy and in the hope that, with this past history, plus what he is doing for you at present, you may be able to reward him better than I did.

Sincerely,

C. L. CHENNAULT, Major General, U.S.A., Commanding.

3 encls:

Incl. 1 - Recommendation for Air Medal.

Incl. 2 - Recommendation for Legion of Merit.

Incl. 3 - Recommendation for Silver Star.

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER Brig. Gen. USAF-Res.

APPENDIX #31

HEADQUARTERS ROWBER UNIT CHIMA AIR TASK FORCE

> Eunming, China, September 29, 1942.

Colonel M.C. Cooper, Chief of Staff, CATF, Poishiyi, China.

Dear Coopers

Today Raker and I leave for India and the new assignment. Sailey and Sgt. Now will follow later. Before departing I want to thank you and express my deep appreciation for what you have done for Bomber Com and of the China Air Task Force. The work you have done for all of us here in the C.A.T.F. has been performed in a superior manner and you deserve the highest commendation for your untiring efforts in behalf of the fighting units.

Your experience in three wars well qualifies you for the job at hand and I know of no one that I would rather have on my staff in any espacity.

Will be over from time to time when the planes are ready and a nice juicy target is ripe. Will see you then and when you come to India will have a place for you.

Best of luck,

C. V. HAYMES, Brigadier General, A.U.S.

A TRUE COPY

Athlusudes

A.H. ALEXANDER Lt. Colonel, AC

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Res.

Appendix 32

rm/2504

3-7752

#### WAR DEPARTMENT

THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

AG 201 Cooper, Merian C. (22 Feb 44)PD-C AS# 0-163,054

22 February 1944.

SUBJECT: Chinese Decoration.

To

Colonel Merian C. Cooper, AC.,
Headquarters, 5th Air Force,
APO 929, c/o Postmaster,
San Francisco, California.

- l. The War Department is in receipt of a Chinese decoration, "Special Necklet Paoting", which has been awarded to you by the Government of China.
- 2. The acceptance of the Chinese decoration "Special Necklet Paoting" by you has been approved by the War Department, in accordance with AR 600-45, Paragraph 33 b, dated 22 September 1943.
- 3. This decoration is being held in this office and it is requested that you advise what disposition should be made of it.
- 4. The award of this decoration to you has been made a matter of official record in the War Department.

By order of the Secretary of War:

Chords A. Flenning Adjutant General.

A Certified True Copy



Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAFRES

Appendix 33

#### CITATION TO ACCOMPANY THE AWARD OF

THE AIR MEDAL (First Oak Leaf Cluster)

TO

MERIAN C. COOPER

Colonel Merian C. Cooper, 0163054, Air Corps, Army of the United States, distinguished himself by meritorious achievement in aerial flight on an operational bombing mission against the enemy in the vicinity of Canton, China, on 27 November 1942. As Intelligence Officer of the China Air Task Force, Colonel Cooper volunteered to accompany this mission for the purpose of evaluating bombing results, fighter tactics, and escort efficiency. The data compiled by Colonel Cooper while exposed to heavy anti-aircraft fire contributed immeasurably to the successful accomplishment of the mission of the China Air Task Force. The superior skill, courage, and devotion to duty displayed by Colonel Cooper reflect great credit upon himself and the United States military service.



MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAFRES. Appendix #34A



### THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AUTHORIZED BY EXECUTIVE ORDER, MAY 11, 1942 HAS AWARDED

### THE AIR MEDAL

(and One Oak Leaf Cluster)

TO

COLONEL MERIAN C. COOPER, 0163054 Air Corps, Army of the United States

#### FOR

MERITORIOUS ACHIEVEMENT WHILE PARTICIPATING IN AERIAL FLIGHT

Asiatic-Pacific Theater of Operations 27 November 1942 GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON

24th

DAY OF

March

Adjutant General

Merian C. Cooperal USAF. RES



Appendix 34B

The President of the United States of America, authorized by Act of Congress July 20, 1942, has awarded the Legion of Merit to,

COLONEL MERIAN C. COOPER, U S A F

for exceptionally meritorious conduct in the performance of outstanding services:

Colonel Cooper performed exceptionally meritorious service as Chief of Staff and Assistant Chief of Staff for Military Intelligence of the China Air Task Force from July to December 1942. He worked untiringly in both capacities to enable small American air units in China to frustrate large Japanese forces. Colonel Cooper directed fighter operations against an enemy formation threatening an air attack on an important China Air Base. So complete was his diagnosis of the situation, that the attacking formation was intercepted one hundred miles from its objective and turned back. Colonel Cooper's capacity for work and ability to accomplish tasks despite adverse conditions were an inspiration to the officers and men who served with him.



Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. RES

Appendix 35A



# THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT
THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ACTHORIZED BY ACT OF CONGRESS JULY 20,1942
HAS AWARDED

## THE LEGION OF MERIT

TO

Colonel Merian C. Cooper, AO 163 054, H & A F

FOR

EXCEPTIONALLY MERITORIOUS CONDUCT IN THE PERFORMANCE OF OUTSTANDING SERVICES

India-Burma-China Theater, July - Becember 1942

GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON THIS 8th DAY OF February 1949

Edwar O Winter

The Adjutant General

Merian C. Cooper Brigapier General USAF. RES.



Becheraly of MAN The ATMY

Appendix #35 B

#### HEADQUARTERS FOURTEENTH U. S. AIR FORCE A. P. O. 627, C/O POSTMASTER NEW YORK CITY, NEW YORK

C/RAW/jak.

14AF 201

15 October 1943.

SUBJECT: Recommendation for Legion of Merit.

- TO: Commanding General, Forward Bohelon, U. S. Army Forces, China, Burma and India, Chungking, China.
- 1. In accordance with Circular 11, dated 8 May 1943, Rear Echelon, U. S. Army Forces, China, Burma and India, and pursuant to instructions contained in classified Radio, Forward Echelon, dated 24 September 1943, in the award of the Legion, of Merit is recommended for Colonel MERIAN C. COOPER, 0163054, for his service with the China Air Task Force.
  - 2. Citation:

"For exceptionally meritorious conduct in the performance of an outstanding service in carrying out duties as Chief of Staff and assistant Chief of Staff for Military intelligence of the China Air Task Force from July 18, 1942 to December 1, 1942. Colonel Cooper worked untiringly in both capacities to enable small American air units in China to frustrate large Japanese forces. He displayed marked aptitude for collecting coordinating and evaluating information on which to plan tactical operations. His thorough knowledge of aerial combat tactics, gained through voluntary participation in bombardment missions, aided greatly in thwarting enemy plans for destruction of American units and bases, On October 25, 1942, Colonel Cooper directed fighter operations against an enemy formation threatening an air attack on an important China Air Base. So complete was his diagnosis of the situation, the attacking formation was intercepted one hundred miles from its objective and turned back. By his devotion to duty and work, he gained a complete understanding of logistical and operational conditions in the China Theater which he used effectively in assisting to plan bombardment missions. His capacity for work and ability to accomplish tasks despite acverse conditions were an inspiration to the officers and men who served with him. His accomplishments were in accordance with the finest traditions of the American military service."

3. While serving with the China Air Task Force the services of this officer were honorable and exemplary.

Recommendation for the Legion of Merit (Cont'd)

4. Name: Merian C. Cooper, 0163054, Colonel, Air Corps.
Hext of kin: Mrs. Merian C. Cooper (Wife).
Home address: 308 Queen Street, Alexandria, Va.

as Chief of Staff and assistant Chief of Staff for Military intelligence of the China Air Task Force from July 18, 1942 to December 1, 1942. Colonel Cooper worked untiringly in both capacities to enable small American air units in China to frustrate large Japanese forces. He displayed marked aptitude for collecting coordinating and evaluating information on which to plan tactical operations. His thorough knowledge of aerial combat tactics, gained through voluntary participation in bombardment missions, aided creatly in thwarting enemy plans for destruction of Ameri units and bases, On October 25, 1942, Colonel Cooper directed fighter operations against an enemy formation threatening an air attack on an important China Air Base. So complete was his diagnosis of the situation, the attacking formation was intercepted one hundred miles from its objective and turned back. By his devotion to duty and work, he gained a complete understanding of logistical and operational conditions in the China Theater which he used effectively in assisting to plan bombardment missions. His capacity for work and ability to accomplish tasks despite adverse conditions were an inspiration to the officers and men who served with him. His accomplishments were in accordance with the finest traditions of the American military service."

3. While serving with the China Air Task Force the services of this officer were honorable and exemplary.

#### Recommendation for the Legion of Merit (Cont'd)

- Name: Merian C. Cooper, 0163054, Colonel, Air Corps. Next of kin: Mrs. Merian C. Cooper (Wife).
   Home address: 308 Queen Street, Alexandria, Va. Date of birth: 24 October 1893.
   State from which appointed: Jacksonville, Florida.
   Awards since December 7, 1941: None.
- 5. I have personal knowledge of the facts contained herein.

C. L. CHENNAULT, Major General, U. S. A., Commanding.

A True Copy.

Stanley V. Szapiel.

ACertified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF. Rcs

Appendix #35 C

210.5

1st Ind.

/amv

174

HEADQUARTERS CHINA AIR TASK FORCE, Kunming, China, December, 1942. To: Commanding General, Tenth U.S. Air Force, Delhi, India.

l. Col. Cooper, throughout his service in the CATF has shown a marked aptitude for collecting, coordinating and evaluating information and planning tactical operations based thereon. In addition Col. Cooper has a thorough knowledge of aerial combat tactics, and has on several occasions made very constructive suggestions concerning air operations. In volunteering to go on several missions with the bombers during recent operations he was able to observe both bomber and fighter tactics and make suggestions which were largely responsible for the eminently successful bombing and fighter action over Canton on November 27th. On this occasion our fighter attack was timed and coordinated with the bombing attack in such a manner as to effectively protect our bombers and at the same time give our fighters a maximum advantage. This almost perfect action was largely the result of observations made by Col. Cooper on immediately preceeding missions.

- 2. Col. Cooper would not be required to go on these missions in the normal performance of his duties. He full well realized the dangers, yet did not hesitate to volunteer for any extra duty where his knowledge and experience might be of value. By this devotion to duty and his efforts for the common good, Col. Cooper rendered an outstanding and meritorious service while participating in aerial flight.
  - 3. This recommendation is approved.

/s/ C. L. CHENNAULT, Brigadier General, A.U.S., Commanding.

A TRUE COPY

JOHN R. CURRIER /s/

JOHN R. CURRIER, CAPTAIN, AIR CORPS.

A TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER Brig. Gen. USAF-Res.

Appendix #36

HO DAU RTERS
ADVANCE ECHELOM
FIFTH AIR FORCE
APO 713, UNIT 1

5 April, 1944.

AG 201 - COOPER, Merian C. (0)

SUBJECT: Promotion of Colonel Merian C. Cooper, 0-163054.

TO : Commanding General, Fifth Air Force, APO 925.

1. Recommend that Colonel Merian C. Cooper, 0-163054, Chief of Staff, Advance Headquarters, Fifth Air Force, be promoted to the grade of Brigadier General (temporary), U. S. Army.

2. Colonel Gooper has been Chief of Staff of this Headquarters since he reported for duty here on 3 May, 1943. During this period of eleven months he has thoroughly demonstrated his fitness for promotion to the grade of Brigadier General. He had an inexperienced, young staff when he became Chief of Staff. By his intelligent leadership, his grasp of modern air warfare, and unceasing devotion to duty, he welded these inexperienced officers and men into a smooth, efficient operating and planning staff. Colonel Gooper knows how to fight modern war. In my best judgement, not only is he a superior Chief of Staff for an Air Force in combat but is entirely qualified for high command of large Air Force units in combat.

3. As stated above, Colonel Cooper has demonstrated his fitness for promotion through the hard school of war. It is urged that his promotion to Brigadier Gene: I be accomplished at the earliest practicable date.

/e/ ENHIS C. WHITEHEAD,
/t/ ENNIS C. VHITEHEAD,
Major General, USA,
Deputy Commander,
Fifth Air Force.

A CHRITIFI D T UE COPY:

7 Hers Clay the

H. C. E. GLAGHTT, JR., Lieutenent Colonel, Air Corps.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES APPENDIX 37

HEADQUARTERS ADVANCE ECHELON FIFTH AIR FORCE APO 713 UNIT 1

13 June, 1944.

Lieutenant General George C. Kenney Commanding, Fifth Air Force A.P.O. 925

Dear General Kenney:

COLONEL COOPER'S PROMOTION. I note that all went to the Senate excepting Colonel Cooper's nomination. You are undoubtedly familiar with the reason for this. I would certainly appreciate it if this can be cleared up in Washington. By every standard which I know of, Colonel Cooper is qualified for promotion to Brigadier General. He knows how to fight modern war. His operations have been brilliant. So far as I know, he has not made a tactical or strategical error in his thinking and recommendations in more than a year of war in New Guinea. During those three or four days in February when I was in Townsville, the handling of attack bombers against the Nip attempt to evacuate RABAUL was faultless. Cooper stopped the RABAUL evacuation. In fairness to you, Advon of Fifth Air Force, and to the Army Air Forces itself, Colonel Cooper's promotion should go through. On combined fighter and bomber operations, Colonel Cooper has capabilities second to no one else of whom I know.

Sincerely,

ENNIS C. WHITEHEAD, Major General, USA, Deputy Commander, Fifth Air Force.

EUGENE R. SWARTLING, Major, A. G. D., Adjutant General.

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Origadier General USAF. RES

APPENDIX 38

HEADQUARTERS V FIGHTER COLLAND AFC 713 Unit 1

9 April, 1944

SUBJECT: Commendation.

TO : Deputy Commander, Fifth Air Force, APO 713 Unit 1.

1. It is the desire of the undersigned to commend Colonel LERIAN C. CCCPER for the superior manner in which he performed his duties as Chief of Staff from 13 March to 30 March, 1944. Throughout this period he displayed exceptional professional knowledge, ability and a keen perspective of the situation.

2. The decisive strike against the Japanese convoy 19 harch 1944 and the devastating raid on Hollandia 30 harch, 1944 are fine examples of the skill with which he conducted the duties of his office.

3. Colonel Cooper's concepts of strategical and tactical principles were of the utmost aid in formulating and executing operational plans during the above period.

FAUL B. MURTEN ITH,

Brigadier General, USA, Commanding.

AG 201

1st Ind.

HEADQUARTERS, ADVANCE BOHELON, FIFTH AIR FORCE, APO 713, Unit #1, 12 April, 1944.

TO: Colonel Merian C. Cooper, Chief of Staff, Advance Echelon, Fifth Air Force, APO 713, Unit #1.

1. I desire to add my commendation to that of General Murtsmith. The superior manner in which you have carried out your duties as Chief of Staff, advance Headquarters, Fifth Air, Force, is a credit not only to yourself but to the Army Air Forces.

2. Request that you note the foregoing and return to this Headquarters for inclosure in your 201 file.

/s/ Ennis C. Whitehead /t/ ENNIS C. WHITEHEAD, Major General, USA, Deputy Commander, Fifth Air Force.

TRUE COPY:

A. N. HOLDSWORTH, 2nd Lt., Air Corpe, Actg. Acct. Adj. Gem.

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAFRES

A Certified True Copy

Appendix #39

HEADQUARTERS
ADVANCE ECHELON
FIFTH AIR FORCE
APO 713, UNIT 1

8 March 1944. A-1/ECW/JCH/nlp.

SUBJECT: Recommendation for Award of the Distinguished Service Medal.

TO : Commanding General, Fifth Air Force, APO 925.

1. Under the provisions of AR 600-45, it is recommended that Colonel Merian C. Cooper, 0-163054, Headquarters, Advance Echelon, Fifth Air Force, be awarded the Distinguished Service Medal for exceptionally meritorious service to the Government in a duty of great responsibility between 18 May and 28 September, 1943.

2. As Chief of Staff of this Command, Colonel Cooper was a key figure in the conception and planning and a vital and driving force in the tactical execution of aerial operations which resulted in the destruction of the bulk of massed Japanese airpower assembled on the left flank of the New Guinea theater, cleared the way for the occupation by Allied Forces of Iae, Salamaua, Finschhafen and the Markham Valley, and advanced the Allied fighter and bombardment line more than 250 miles.

To establish immediate air superiority in the Lae area and to enable American fighters to cover bombardment strikes against the distant Japanese master base at Newak, it was determined to establish an advanced airdrome at Marilinan in the Waipat Valley, only 40 miles from enemy-occupied Lae.

Charged with the supervision of all logistics as well as much of the tactical maneuver involved in the operation, Colonel Geoper created the important base with rapidity, skill and economy of effort. He succeeded, by a diversionary ruse, in screening the development of Marilinan so perfectly it was not discovered by enemy recommaissance until 24 hours before the opening of the aerial offensive against Newak on August 16th.

Four serviceable runways, enough aviation gasoline to support all projected Allied air moves, and a tactical force of 84 aircraft and 2,500 men had been concentrated at Marilinan before the energy became aware of the bold outflanking stroke. The entire force at Marilinan was carried 200 miles from Port Loresby by air transport alone, marking the first time in listory a major air base had been developed entirely by an air-borne move. This move was accomplished in the face of consistently adverse weather conditions and during a peak period of Japanese airpower strength in the Southwest Pacific.

65487

6009

Appendix #40A

During this same period, Colonel Cooper established a limiton between the Air Force and all other armed services engaged in the battle for New Cuinea which was to prove invaluable in the conduct of future operations a paint the enemy.

In mid-September, with the lower reaches of the Larkhan Valley in Allied hands, heavy rains and lack of supplies threatened the success of a second air-borne operation designed to seize (heap and advance the Allied fighter-bomber line another 75 miles nearer to Japanese strongholds on the north coast of New Guinea.

The Commanding General, Advance Echelon, Fifth Air Force, ordered Colonel Cooper to Madzab, Headquarters of the Markhan Valley air and ground Command, with instructions to determine the devisability of continuing the move. Following a hazardous flight through tropical thunderheads and a damperous landing on rain-scaled Madzab airdrome, Colonel Cooper met with the heads of services engaged in the Gudap drive.

He immediately decided the attack must be continued and returned to Fifth hir Force Headquarters the same night, again through prevalent thunderhead conditions, with a recommendation for a plan of operation. This plan was subsequently put into effect and the seizure of dusap was completed in the first week of October.

The broad bactical concepts repeatedly demonstrated by Colonel God or, his thereof handled to of the problem of logistics in the development and operation of applied air over, his unflagging desire to accept both co but and staff responsibilities, and his enthusiasm and determination contributed in great part to the swift achievement of allied air surreacy in the Southwest racific theater of operations.

2. The services of Colonel Cooper subsequent to these services has been entirely honorable.

4. At the time of these services, Colonel Ocoper was an officer of the named Forces of the United States.

- 5. The undersigned has personal buowledge of the above stated facts.
- 6. Home address: hrs. Herian C. Cooper (Mife) 5930 Franklin Avenue Hollywood 28, California

A Certified True Copy

Line CWhitelie of
Anis C. Alland,
Lajor General, U.S. Aray,
Deputy Air Force Constanter.

MERIAN C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-RES 2 -

Appendix # 40A



## THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT
THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
AUTHORIZED BY ACT OF CONGRESS, JULY 9, 1918, HAS
AWARDED

### THE DISTINGUISHED SERVICE MEDAL

TO

Colonel Merian C. Cooper, 0 163 054, Air Corps

FOR EXCEPTIONALLY MERITORIOUS AND DISTINGUISHED SERVICES IN THE PERFORMANCE OF DUTIES OF GREAT RESPONSIBILITY

Hay 1943 - October 1944
GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON
THIS 1st DAY OF September 1948

RECORDED IN THE OFFICE OF THE ADJUTANT GENERAL

Major General
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL

SECRETARY OF THE ABOUT

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES

Appendix 40B



## THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA PURSUANT TO EXECUTIVE ORDER NO. 9242-A, SEPTEMBER 11, 1942, HAS AWARDED

### THE AIR MEDAL

TO

Colonel Merian C. Cooper, 0 163 054, Air Corps

FOR

MERITORIOUS ACHIEVEMENT WHILE PARTICIPATING IN AERIAL FLIGHT Bacific Theater of Operations, 3 September 1943 GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON 1947

THIS 236 DAY OF July

The Adjutant General

A Certified True Copy

MERIAN C. Cooper Brigadier General USAFRES

Resper

Appendix #41

25 August 1945

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN:

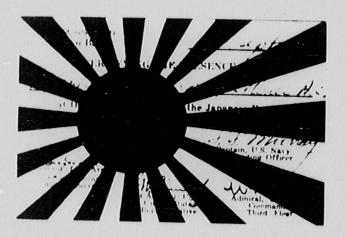
I certify that during the period of January 7th to June 9th, 1945 (approximately) I was serving on temporary duty with Commanding General, Strategic Air Forces in Europe, and that I was given an official letter by his Chief of Staff, Major General Edward P. Curtis, rating performance of duty as Superior.

MERIAN C. COOPER Colonel, Air Corps

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General USAFRES

Appendix # 42



A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res.

AFFERNIY. # 43

₩AY 1 5 1946

Colonel Merian C. Cooper General Staff Corps Army of the United States 6103 North Sente a/o Mrs. Teresa Jordan Los Angeles, California

Dear Colonel Coopers

A survey of World War II records, efficiency r ports, and individual comment from interested commanders, has recently been conducted in this Mandquarters as respects colonels of the Air Corps Reserve, and the Army of the United States, who have served with the Army Air Forces in World War II.

T e Commanding General, Army Air Forces, has been most pleased to note the material contribution made by you in the World Har II effort and has taken personal cognisance of your outstanding record, your devotion to duty, and your willingness to accept responsibility.

General Speaks has instructed me to inform you of his personal appreciation for these past services, to commend you officially for your World War II efforts, and of his anticipation that during the approaching peacetime you will continue to maintain your interest in Army Air Forces affairs.

May I take this opportunity of adding my personal appreciation to General Speats' commendation. It is also my privilege to inform you that you are hereby authorised to wear the Army Commendation Ribbon (or oak leaf thereto if applicable) by direction of the Secretary of War, and that a copy of this letter will be placed in your efficial file.

F. L. ANDERSON Major General, USA Assistant Chief of Air Staff-1

Inclosure

A true Copy One C. Cooper Col USAF Reserve

Appendix 44

COPY.

To the Mission

for Delivering of Food

of the United States of America

to the hands of Mr. Grove, Esq., C o l o n e l

in Warsaw

The population of the whole Polant, which is suffering since five years the consequences of the war, feels a profound and very cordial thankfulness to the Government of the United States of North America, for the proofs of sympathy which we have had in every matter from this Government, and for the assistance which has been kindly offered to our nation, in sending food for the inhabitants of our territories.

But it is especially the population of Lwow, whose gratefulness is the greatest - of this town which suffers not for the first time, the dreadful results of the war and which stands since a long time in the nearest contact with war operations.-

When during the siege of the town, it was almost no food for the inhabitants, the Government of the United States of North America has offered his assistance and has send food which saved the xxxx life of a great quantity of families, softened the distress and brought in the hearts of the whole population a great and profound thankfulness for the generous and kind help of the nobel Americans.— The representants of the Polish Government, clerrgy Community and of the charitable societies whose signatures are put on the end of this letter, are sending to the Mission for delivering of food of the United States of North America, the most cordial and grateful thanks for the generous activity. Our mediator in this case will be the representant of this Mission in Lwow, Sir Captain Merian Colwell Cooper,—who is known in our town as a true and frank friend of the suffering population of Lwow—and who worked sacrifying himself and without taking care of his own life and health—visiting the environs of Lwow where maladies reigned—for bringing bread to the hungry inhabitants.

Lwow May 16th 1919

Archbishop

The Vice-President of the Government

(Signatures) Bilgewski

(Signature) Grodiski

For Humanitary-Society:

The President of the Town

Leon Pinisiki A Cerlified True Copy (Signatures) Joseph Neuman

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAR Res.

APPENDIX # 45

LWOW, Sunday April 27, 1919

#### CHWILA (The Moment)

Political, Social and Cultural Daily

PUBLIC ACTION TO SAVE THE FAMISHED POPULATION FROM STARVATION.

We have received the following letter:

Captain Merian C. Cooper Air Service U. S. Army

AMERICAN REELEF ADMINISTRATION Mission to Poland

Dr. Gerszon Zipper Editor of "Chwila" L w 6 w.

The main tawk with which, at this moment, the city of Lwow is being faced, consists of securing enough food for the population. The local newspapers point out in their reports that the distribution of food is defective and, on many occasions, they have expressed their desire to see it improved. Yet, the newspapers themselves are the best means to achieve that improvement. A well known proberb says: "The pen is stronger than arms". If that is true, then, whoever uses the pen and, 'through the medium of the press, influences the public opinion as well as the minds in a big city, is responsible before the people.

Every leading Editor should regognize that responsibility. In spite of that, I am seeing daily in the Lwow papers announcements pertaining to the distribution of food, restricted to a few words and hardly noticeable, hidden somewhere on the last page. It seems to me that for a hungry inhabitant of Lwow is far more important to find out how he can get the much needed food, than to read long reports about what happened in distant Paris at a conference of "The Three" or "The Four". That is why I take the liberty of soliciting your help, as an Editor, in this under the prevailing conditions, all important action of feeding the population. I believe that it could be done in the following manner:

- 1. The daily announcements informing about the distribution of food should be prominently displayed. These announcements should not be hidden from the eyes of the public is some obscure part of the paper, and should not be restricted to a few words which the public can hardly understand.
- 2. The war against unscrupulous profiteers, selling food at exorbitant prices, should be constant and pitiless. Do not indulge in generalities. You should hire your own detectives. Use your reporters as investigators. Find out through them where that food, at such high prices, is being sold. Having established the facts, the names of the thieves who steal from the poor should be used as headlines, the names of the vile extortioners, their addresses, what they sold, and at what prices, should be made public. They should be branded as thieves and murders of children and the poor. Such

APPENDIX # 45A

Such a relentless war should be conducted day after day. Let us have the name of each individual charging exorbitant prices printed in every paper and stygmatized as an enemy of both civilization and mankind. An article against profiteers, if conceived in general terms, is useless. The names have to be discovered, each day new names added, and they have to be covered with infamy, day after day. Let us make them feel ashamed that their mother has brought them to this world. Such a public action we call in America: "Publicity Campaign". I have seen many irregularities eliminated, many mistakes corrected just through such a campaign. For the success of such a "Publicity Campaign" it is indispensable to have those names printed in the newspapers, prominently displayed to catch the eye of the public and that, regardless of fear, wealth or position of the individuals that have to be exposed.

Should you, Sir, make use of your power in the manner described above, you would render an immense civic service to the great public action of saving the famished masses from the scourge of starvation.

With thanks and with kindest regards,

Merian C. Cooper, Captain, Air Service U.S. Army Representative of the American Relief Mission for Galicia

To these lofty ideas of a noble American we add the following:

The Jewish Citizen's Committee has started not long ago a special "Cheirem" action aimed at the extermination of profiteering. From this action, gaining daily in intensity, benefits derive for the whole population, regardless of nationality. Unfortunately, the final goal is still far ahead.

Complying with the noble appeal of Captain Merian C. Cooper, we invite the Co-operation of all our readers in assisting us in the public action which we plan to undertake. Whoever is aware of some hidden stocks of food supplies, or knows about exorbitant prices being charged, is hereby invited to share with us that information. The task of detectives, mentioned by our gracious correspondent, should be taken over by our readers. Through a united effort we can destroy profiteering and eliminate abuse, thus aiding the tormented population to get enough food and that, without emposing it to an undue financial strain.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General - USAF-Res.

APPENDIX 45A

Excerpts from a letter written from the Front in 1920 to Senator Duncan U. Fletcher.

KOSCIUSKO SQUADRON POLISH AVIATION SERVICE

Lwow, Poland

Senator Duncan U. Fletcher, Washington, D. C.

My dear Senator Fletcher:

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I became interested in the Bolshevik question when I was a prisoner in Germany. I was sent to a hospital way over in Silesia in a little town near Breslau. In Silesia I came to know a number of Russians, prisoners like myself, many of whom spoke English or French. From them I began to learn what Bolshevism really was, and the ambition of the Bolsheviks to bring all the world under their sway. I thought that America would one day have to fight them, and I still think so unless the Germans and Japanese swallow up Soviet Russia and thus form a great German-Russian-Japanese Alliance. In that case I know we will have to defend ourselves. We will be the only people in the world really worth plundering, and that combination would make a coalition of world adventurers who would like nothing better than to make us pay to the uttermost limit.

Right at present the Bolsheviks are preparing to commence a drive on this front. Dennekin and Kolchack are beaten, so the offensive will be very strong. If Poland falls or is forced to make peace due to lack of military supplies and finances to carry on the campaign, it means quite surely one of two things - either the Bolsheviks will sweep across Europe, or the Germans and Japanese will be able to establish their alliance with Russia, and Poland will once more discontinue to exist as a nation. If Poland falls and Bolshevism sweeps Europe, or if the triple alliance is brought about by the crushing of Poland, I believe with all my heart and soul we will be plunged in war again within ten years.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

A CERTIFIED TRUE EXTRACT

MERIAN C. COOPER Brigadier General, USAF-Res. Very sincerely yours,

Merian C. Cooper

APPENDIX # 18

October 3, 1953

Dear Merian:

Ira Eaker has told me of your retirement at the end of this month. This brings back many memories of our service together in two world wars.

Having served with you in France in the first World War, and knowing something of your service in the Pacific with General Kenney in the second World War, I am sure that you have done as much as any patriotic American can do for his country in times of peril.

I feel that the service you rendered in the years between the wars in influencing the motion picture industry to do constructive pictures about the Armed Services, and particularly your making of such outstanding military pictures as "She Wore a Yellow Ribbon", "Fort Apache" and "Rio Grande" did tremendous good in a critical time, in influencing the American theater going public to a proper conception of the officer corps of the Armed Services.

I shall be wishing you continued success and hoping that you continue your lifetime battle for the proper role of aviation, civil and military, in our country.

Sincerely,

Carl Spaatz
General, USAF (Ret.)

Brigadier General Merian C. Cooper USAF Reserve 4024 Radford Avenue North Hollywood, California

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF RES.

Appendix #47A

HUGHES AIRCRAFT COMPANY

September 29, 1953

General N. F. Twining Chief of Staff United States Air Force Washington, D. C.

Dear Nate:

I have learned recently of the retirement in the near future of Brigadier General Merian C. Cooper, United States Air Force Reserve. On active military duty, and in the reserve, Merian Cooper has always worked to maintain and advance the dignity of the military.

His constant activity in the interest of his country, in air power and in military, I believe, should especially be considered at this time of General Cooper's retirement. In his production of motion pictures, such as "She Wore a Yellow Ribbon", "Fort Apache", and "Rio Grande", the American public was given greater confidence in the military establishment, and particularly in the integrity of the officer corps.

It is my understanding that during the years 1946 through 1951, Merian Cooper participated in numerous discussions with George Kenney and Ennis Whitehead considering the air offense and defense of our nation. It may be possible that such effort, supported by General Kenney and General Whitehead, would be recognized as constructive service in the Air Force point system toward retirement, or reassignment to the Retired Reserve Section, Headquarters USAF.

In reviewing Merian Cooper's contribution and service of long years, and on active duty in two wars, I believe that special recognition is due him at his retirement. His loyalty and service have always been for the best interests of the military service.

With best personal regards.

Sincerely

Harold L. George Lt. Gen. USAF (Ret.)

A Certified True Copy

Merian C. Cooper-Brigadier General USAFRES

Appendix # 47B

September 28, 1953

Dear Rosy:

Recently I learned of the retirement about the end of October of Brigadier General Merian C. Cooper, United States Air Force Reserve. It may be that you have available to you the information which follows. However, in event you have not, I think it is only justice to an American, who has fought for air power and fought for his country when the chips were down, at every possible opportunity, that it be presented to you to be considered at the time of Merian's retirement.

Merian Cooper has made a number of pictures, such as "She Wore a Yellow Ribbon", "Fort Apache, and "Rio Grande" about the old Army. I have seen these, and I am sure an examination by any average American will indicate that they were all designed to give the theater-going public a greater confidence in the military establishment, and particularly in the integrity of the officer corps. Some of these appeared, as for example "She Wore a Yellow Ribbon", in the days immediately following the second World War when a concerted Communistic effort was being made to discredit the military, and particularly its officers.

In my judgment, this consistent effort of Cooper's, over a long period of years, plus his own active military duty in both wars, indicates the type of service of a very high order. I hope he will be given every consideration at the time of his retirement, and that some suitable recognition can be given of his long time loyalty and faithful service.

Sincerely,

Ira C. Eaker Lt. Gen. USAF (Ret.)

Lt. General Emmett O'Donnell Deputy Chief of Air Staff, Personnel United States Air Force Washington, D. C.

A CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

O Ineran C. Cooper

Merian C. Cooper Brigadier General USAF-Res.

Appendix #47C



Toutt who shall see these presents, greeting.

Know Ge, that reposing special must and confidence in the patriotism valor, fidelity and abilities of Alerian Coldwell Cooper . Tilo Brigadier General, inthi

appoint him

United States Air Force Beserve

# Air Force of the United States

to date wouch from the eleventh dayof August nineleen hundred and fifty . This Officer well therefore carefully and diligently discharge the duties of the office to which appointed by doing and performing all manner of things thereunto belonging.

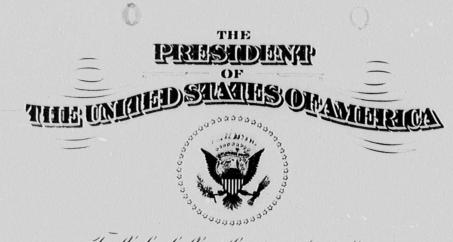
Ind Idestrictly charge and require those Officers and other personnel of lesser rank to render such obedience as is due an officer of this grade and position. Ind this Officer is to observe and follow such orders and directions, from time to time, as may be given by me, or the future President of the United States of University, or other Superior Officers acting in accordance with the laws of the United States of Umerica. This commission is to continue in force during the pleasure of the President of the United States of Inerica for the time being under the precisions of those Rublic Jans relating to Officers of the Armed Forces of the United States of America and the component thereof in which this appointment is made

I one at the City of Hashington, this eleventh day of August in the year of our Sord one thousand ninehundred and fifty and of the Independence of the United States of Umerica the one hundred and seventy-fifth

By the President.

A Certified True Copi

Appendix # 48A



Ivall who shall see these presents, greeting:

Know Ge, that reposing special mest and confidence in the patriotism valor, fidelity
and abilities of Alerian Goldwell Gooper Jdo

appoint him

Brigadier General Reserve of the

United States Air Force

to date assuch from the thirty-first day of March nineteen hundred and fifty-three This Officer will therefore carefully and diligently discharge the duties of the office to which appointed by doing and performing all manner of things thereands belonging.

Ind Ido strictly charge and require those Officers and other personnel of lesser rank to render such obedience as is due an officer of this grade and position. Ind this Officer is to observe and follow such orders and directions, from time to time, as may be given by me, or the future President of the United States of University, or other Superior Officers acting in accordance with the laws of the United States of University.

This commission is to continue in force during the pleasure of the President of the United States of Inverior, for the time being under the provisions of those Rublic Saws relating to Officers of the Armed Forces of the United States of America and the component thereof in which this appointment is made.

Done at the City of Hashington, this thirty-first day of March in the year of our Sord one thousand nine handred and fifty-three and of the Independence of the United States of Unerica the one hundred and seventy-seventh.

. By the President.



Drigadier General USAF. RES

Appendix #48B

inthe

GEN. SPAATZ \_\_\_ HOLD :FOR APRIL 14

March 24, 1961

Brig. Gen. Harold L. Clark, USAF, Ret. National Commander Order of Daedalians Bldg. 1676 Kelly Air Force Base, Texas

Dear Clark:

I have just returned to Washington after a month's absence and find your letter of February 24.

I am planning to be present, as you know, at the meeting of the Order of Daedalians.

I have not as yet checked in with the powers that be in the Air Force to find what arrangements for air transportation will be made. I will try to be present from the start on Friday the 14th through the dinner on Saturday the 15th. Mrs. Spaatz, however, will not be able to come with me.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

### Order of Daedalians



24 February 1961

Gen. Carl A. Spaatz, USAF, Ret. 5 Grafton Street Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Toosy:

The Order of Daedalians, in cooperation with the United States Air Force, is planning to have you as an honored guest at the annual convention of the Order, which convenes April 14-15, 1961.

The convention starts with a cocktail party from 6 to 8 p.m., on Friday, the Lith; the business meeting on Saturday, the 15th; and the principal function takes place at 12:30 p.m., on the 15th, when the presentation of trophies is made to the various winners. The trophies are: (1) The Daedalian Safety of Flight Trophy and Award to the Major Air Force Command having the best safety record during the calendar year 1960; (2) The Daedalian Civilian Safety Trophy and Award to the commercial airline pilot, whose outstanding achievement during the year has contributed most to the safety of commercial flying; and (3) The Major General Clements McMullen Weapon System Maintenance Trophy and Award to the Air Force Wing having the best maintenance record for the year 1960.

The presentation of these Trophies and Award is an annual affair, but on this occasion they are secondary to the honoring of Gen. Carl Spaatz as one of the pioneers of military aviation.

This is an official invitation to be present at the convention, and we hope that you can be here from the start on Friday, the 14th, through the dinner on Saturday night, the 15th.

From a personal standpoint, I am highly honored to be in a position to offer this invitation to one whom I have admired throughout my military career.

Sincerely,

Harold L. Clark Brig. Gen., USAF, Ret. National Commander March 23, 1961

Colonel Benjamin F. Castle 3042 N Street, N. W. Washington 7, D. C.

Dear Ben:

I have just returned from a month's absence from Washington and find your letter of February 23.

I certainly was delighted to read what O'Hara had to say about Margraten. Thanks for letting me read the letter, which I am returning to you.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

### BENJAMIN F. CASTLE

3042 N STREET, N.W. WASHINGTON V. D. C. 23 February 1961.

General Carl Speatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Twoey,

The enclosed letter from J.B. O'Hara, whose son was killed in action over Holland, will be interesting to you because of his remarks in the fourth paragraph. This seems very impressive to me and I certainly agree with your thought that the pay-off from the European standpoint is the fact that American boys gave up their lives in defense of Western Europe.

I enjoyed being with you at the Castle-Combe dinner the other night and assure you that I consider it always a privilege being with that Group.

Best regards.

Benjamin F. Castle

Enclosure

February 14, 1961

Mr. Laurence K. Callahan 209 South LaSalle Street Chicago, Illinois

Dear Larry:

Under separate cover I am mailing you the Air Force literature on all of its activities insofar as youngsters are concerned. There is a considerable amount of it and I have not attempted to digest it, hoping that you would find time to find what you want.

We had a nice time with Hank and Cookie at Jock Whitney's several weeks ago. The weather was lousy, however.

We will certainly let you know if we pass through Chicago.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

3350 449 16 492

LAURENCE K. CALLAHAN 209 S. LA SALLE ST. CHICAGO

January 26, 1961

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oakland Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Touy:

You may remember my speaking to you of a problem that I have in advising some young men just graduating from high school this year as to what they should do upon graduation.

I said that I was considering advising them to enlist for four years in the Air Corp but had no specific knowledge about the type of training and experience they might get there. You were good enough to say that you would refer this subject to a qualified person in Washington, who, in turn, would communicate with me or tell me whom to talk to here.

 $\,$   $\,$  I would greatly appreciate your doing this as time for a decision is getting short.

It was, as usual, a great pleasure seeing you and Ruth at the duck hunt. Be sure and let me know if you are ever in Chicago - naturally in advance, if possible.

My best to you oth.

Sincerely,

dans

LKC MMN

February 14, 1961

Mr. Alex G. Cardini Calle Madrid 21-H Mexico 4, D.F.

Dear Alex:

It was very nice to hear from you after all these years.

which you had in your aviators room in Tijuana.

I am enclosing an autographed photograph which you requested in your letter.

Mrs. Spaatz joins me in very best to you and we will certainly look you up in case we get down to Mexico.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Restaurant Alex Cardini Calle Madrid 21-H México 4,D.F.

Mr. General Carl Spaatz News Week Building Madison Avenue New York, N.Y.

Dear General Spaatz:

No Doubt you will be surprised to receive a letter from me after so many years.

First of all I hope that **you** and charming Mrs. Spaatz are in good health.

I have written to you twice before to different addresses but infortunately have not received
and answer. But through the kind attention of Colonel
Richard Conant Harris, Air Attaché of the Embassy of the
United States of America, I was able to obtain your address.

The reacon for my taking the liberty of writing to you now is that you will probably remember that in 1931 or 1932 after one of our annual Army Aviators pic-nics at Rosarito Beach you and General Happy Arnold, General Foulcise, General Thinker and other Army pilots gave me a Liberty Propeller signed by all of you and which I put in my aviators room in Tijuana. In 1933 I was Called by the then President of México General Abelardo Rodríguez to come to Tehuacán. Most unfortunately after leaving Tijuana my place was damaged by fire and I lost all my souvenirs and insignia but the propellor was not much damaged except that the signatures were all ersed.

Now, I would be very much obliged to you if I could have a photograph of you in uniform or civil your autograph and dedications, as I am now making an aviators

-2-

room here in my restaurant where I shall place the mentioned propeller and I should like to have your photograph as a rememberance of old times.

I hope that you and Mrs Spaatz will come to México City some Time soon and will visit me both here at my restaurant and at my home.

Hoping of having the pleasure of hearing from you and with kindest regards and best wishes for both Mrs. Spaatz and yourself, I remain.

Sincerely Yours

ACG/ham

September 8, 1960

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Clemens:

Thanks so much for sending me the summer issue of the Mark Twain Journal. I always enjoy reading it and appreciate your considering me.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

May 11, 1960

Mr. William S. Cousins Vice President Morgan Guaranty Trust Company of New York 14, Place Vendome Paris I, France

Dear Cousins:

Thanks ever so much for your letter of May 5 telling of the arrangements at the Berkeley. I believe Ruth has been in touch with Julian since your letter and the arrangements you have made for our reservations at the Berkeley from July 11 to July 20 are hereby accepted and confirmed.

I am sorry we have given you so much trouble in connection with our forthcoming visit but hope that a drink or two with you may ameliorate the situation.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Aj mail

MORGAN GUARANTY TRUST COMPANY
OF NEW YORK

14, PLACE VENDÔME, PARIS (1st)

CABLE: MORGANBANK PARIS

R. C. SEINE 55 B 5498 - 0 E Nº 51

Paris May 5, 1960

General Carl SPAATZ, 7405 Oak Lane, Chevy Chase. Maryland U.S.A.

My dear General,

You will recall that, at the end of January last, you had been in contact with Julian and had asked him if it would be possible to reserve rooms at the Berkeley Hotel here for you. The dates that he indicated at the time to us were from the 1st to the 8th of July. I wrote Julian on the 1st of February, who was in New York, and told him that we had been able to effect the reservation and asking that he would eventually let us know if the dates were correct.

A day or so ago, Julian saw Norstadt who informed him that the dates that you planned to be in Paris had been altered from those given above to: from July IIth to 20th.

We were able to reserve an apartment consisting of a twin bedded room with bath and a salon giving on the Avenue Matignon for that period.

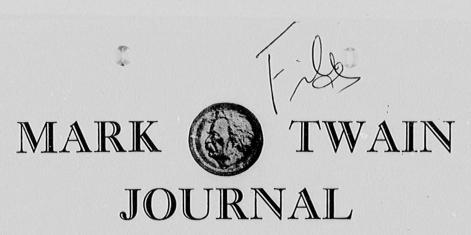
Colonel Donaldson, who is in General Norstadt's by the SHAPE Liaison Office at the Pentagon to make reservations for you here some days ago and that, the only Hotel that was able to give him satisfaction, was the Hotel Claridge on the Champs-Elysées. In a conversation with him, we agreed that the Berkeley is much more suitable and attractive than the Claridge and therefore, he will cancel the reservations obtained in the latter Hotel.

If you are in agreement with the reservations we made at the Berkeley, both as to the dates and the accommodations, would you kindly confirm to us as early as possible.

All of us look forward to seeing you here in July and, with all best wishes, believe me,

Yours sincerely,

WSC/SN



OFFICE OF DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

Brown Palace Hotel Denver 2, Colorado July 29, 1952

Dear Mr. Clemens:

Thank you very much for your very kind letter of recent date.

I value highly the Knight of Mark Twain membership card, and want you to know how honored I feel for having been made a Member of the Order.

Also, it is heartwarming to learn of the interest which the youngsters of America, like little Ada Long, are taking in this crusade. It certainly brings home very realistically the great feeling of responsibility.

Sincerely,

Mr. Cvril Clemens, Editor

Presidents William H. Taft, Herbert C. Hoover, Franklin D. Roosevelt, and Harry S. Truman; Vice Presidents John N. Garner, Henry A. Wallace, Alben W. Barkley, and Richard M. Nixon; and Chief Justices William H. Taft, Charles Evans Hughes, Harlan F. Stone, Fred M. Vinson, and Earl Warren are also Knights of Mark Twain.

Summer, 1960

Price One Dollar

Published since 1936

## THE MARK TWAIN JOURNAL

Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Vol. XI

**SUMMER**, 1960

No.

#### Cyril Clemens, Editor-in-Chief

Beginning in early boyhood, I have read virtually everything of Mark Twain's that has been published, and I have always been a great admirer of both the man and his work.—Dwight D. Eisenhower.

Best wishes for continuous achievement in perpetuating Mark Twain's memory.—General Omar N. Bradley.

Subscription Rates: \$3.00 per year throughout the world, Advertising rates upon request.

### $C\ O\ N\ T\ E\ N\ T\ S$

Will Rogers - Dwight D. Eisenhower
Wild Roses in China (Verse) - Celesta Pirwitz
Sherwood Anderson's Debt to Huckleberry Finn - Seymour L. Gross
The Last Time I Saw Mark Twain Willis C. Pratt, as Told to Gertrude Valliere King
Mark Twain Meets a Lady from Finland - Ernest J. Moyne 9
Mark Twain's "Plug" and "Chaw": An Anecdotal Parallel Cecil D. Eby, Jr
The Challengers (Verse) - Grace Hollowell11
Restoration of a Howells Letter - Leo P. Coyle
Mark Twain and Ring Lardner - Howard W. Webb, Jr13
My First Book - Sir Philip Gibbs16
Mark Twain and the Man from Maine - Cyril Clemens17
A Connecticut Yankee as a Revolutionary Document - John D. McKee18
Joseph Conrad and Huckleberry Finn - Frederick R. Karl21
Tributes to Mark Twain on Dedication of Birthplace Shrine - Dwight Eisenhower, Richard Nixon, Herbert Hoover, Harry S. Truman, and Christian A. HerterBack Cover

We are respect fo

His car scene def member o not identi he did no he, in any preacher, adventure of each; farm, an sight into or distres an uncan the funda ophy as cloistered standing His favo though s He climb to reach of us to responsit

Within that mar our nort end. The Wiley Personal the sought seemed to avoid the should rewords, to search

To el edged pl

## RNAL

Vn 9

Mark Twain's er of both the

Mark Twain's

es upon request.

	1
	2
Gross	3
	6
	9
1	1
1	1
1	
1	
1	
1	7
McKee1	8
2	1
Back Cove	r

### Will Rogers

DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

We are gathered here out of affection and respect for Will Rogers, a great American.

His career and his place in the American scene defy exact classification. He was a member of no particular profession; he was not identified with the trades or scienceshe did not seek political preference, nor was he, in any formal sense, constructor, teacher, preacher, lawyer, farmer, or soldier. Yet an adventurer at heart, he seemed something of each; a smiling wanderer through city, farm, and village. He possessed a keen insight into the things that concerned, amused, or distressed his fellows, and was gifted with an uncanny ability to relate these things to the fundamental business of making a living, of maintaining freedom, of pursuing happiness. He gave to millions who regard philosophy as something of interest only to the cloistered professor a better balanced understanding of their place in modern society. His favorite tool was the witty barb-but though sharp, to puncture pomposity, it was never poisoned to leave a lasting wound. He climbed to fame on the lazy twirls of a cow-puncher's rope-and he used his fame to reach while he entertained, to goad each of us to think about the heritage we possess-of our opportunities, our rights, our responsibilities.

Within a year, I have seen the lonely cairn that marks the spot, on the bleak borders of our northernmost frontier, where he met his end. There, with his gallant companion, Wiley Post, he had gone, following still his bent of probing into things outside the limit of everyday conscious knowledge. Just what he sought I do not know — but fitting it seemed to me that his passing should still avoid the commonplace — that his leaving should remind us, as had in life his pungent words, that there still exists a need to seek, to search, to know.

To class Will Rogers with the acknowledged philosophers of the ages would be as

false as to relate him in Thespian art to Booth, Marlowe, Jefferson, or Sothern. He himself would have ridiculed any such attempt. He was an observer rather than a profound thinker, entertainer rather than interpretive actor. But though he belonged to neither of these fields, he invaded both; and in so doing, gave to his contemporaries thought for everyday consumption, bits to spur our minds even as we smiled at the package in which we received the gift.

He knew those the world called great but stood in awe of no man. Purists, grammarians, even scholars and statesmen may have at times deplored his flagrant disregard of the particular dogmas each of them held dear. But the only Americans who failed to gain some inspiration, some mental quickening, some quiet chuckle from Will Rogers were those few totally devoid of a sense of humor and completely blind to the foibles that a mental mirror always shows. With these he was not concerned—but to the millions he brought fun and stimulus, and so he deserved what he gained, a big place in our hearts, a secure niche in our admiration.

He was a common man with uncommon qualities, and common men never failed to appreciate what he had to give. In one sentence, under the glint of a wisecrack, he could pack a century and a half of history and salt it down with an ageless truth. He once observed.

"The United States never lost a war or won a conference,"

doubtless to remind his fellow citizens that while a united America can develop irresistible power in defense of principle, rightness of principle cannot of itself assure success over human selfishness.

Most interesting it is to speculate on what he would have to say about things that trouble us today. What wisecrack would be have shot at us on a dozen differences in the

What he would and could have done, none of us can know; none of us is Will Rogers! But certain it is that he would have triedhe would have brought to us such understanding as was granted to him. He would have done it for his love of America, his devotion to human freedom, his concern for his fellow citizens, his faith in humanity. And even more certain it is that he would have brought smiles to our faces-for he did not believe that to be earnest is to weep, that recognition and performance of duty is possible only to a doleful face. We would have squirmed under the spurs he may possibly have applied to our complacency, but we would have warmed to his infectious grin, and tried the harder to meet the requirements of our age.

He has gone—the problems remain, and he would be the first to remind us that thus it has always been. A loved one goes—even leaders that may temporarily seem to acquire the quality of indispensability—but life continues to encounter the storms that loved ones or leaders shared with us or pointed the way to avoidance. Ours alone is the responsibility of meeting the issues of our time, but the memory of those we have lost brings inspiration to the daily task.

It is fitting that we should try to communicate to others still to come something of this inspiration born of affection, faith, and admiration. A pictorial likeness, a statue, can help to do so for it will endure long after we, gathered here today, have joined the one it commemorates. And in the day of our children's children and beyond their time, it will still testify that a sense of humor and a neighborly spirit can greatly lighten life's burden.

Will Rogers may be smiling now at the thought of capturing in a figure of bronze his humor, his humaneness, his discernment, his friendliness. Yet, if so he does, then also he knows that this statue had its birth in a friend's affection and esteem for him, and in generosity and concern for others. Knowing this, he would approve and, though vain pride of self did not mar his daily living, he would be proud in the just pride that, having harmed no man, and helped so many, those who knew him found him worthy of timeless tribute.

Ladies and gentlemen, it is my high honor to unveil to the friends who love him, this statue to the memory of a great American, Will Rogers.

### WILD ROSES IN CHINA Celesta Pirwitz

I picked wild roses today Along a country highway And arranged a bouquet.

Earth, man and heaven bent, Mountain and meadow lent Oriental arrangement.

### Sherwo

Although in a general on Sherwood attempted to that influence son. Anderson who feel comp they imagine, ality, readily older author courted it. He that he had t old cheese me type of man attributed the Fool" to the immaturity," best."<sup>3</sup> For best" meant Finn: "Shoul the real man he wrote Bro

Anderson cause he felt Finn shared experience. A Twain"5 bec of primitive mechanistic spirits of n crushing the into "grotes cause he star than the end tradition, graphic in societal disto impulse is th on the train burg forever dent of the yout for the both George ing space fo may temporarily seem to acnality of indispensability—but s to encounter the storms that or leaders shared with us or way to avoidance. Ours alone sibility of meeting the issues of t the memory of those we have aspiration to the daily task.

ng that we should try to comothers still to come something ration born of affection, faith, tion. A pictorial likeness, a help to do so for it will endure we, gathered here today, have he it commemorates. And in the children's children and beyond t will still testify that a sense I a neighborly spirit can greatly burden.

rs may be smiling now at the apturing in a figure of bronze is humaneness, his discernment, ss. Yet, if so he does, then also it this statue had its birth in a ction and esteem for him, and and concern for others. Knowwould approve and, though vain did not mar his daily living, proud in the just pride that, and no man, and helped so many, new him found him worthy of ute.

I gentlemen, it is my high honor the friends who love him, this memory of a great American,

### D ROSES IN CHINA

Celesta Pirwitz

ed wild roses today a country highway urranged a bouquet.

, man and heaven bent, tain and meadow lent tal arrangement.

## Sherwood Anderson's Debt to Huckleberry Finn

Seymour L. Gross University of Notre Dame

Although several critics have commented in a general way on Mark Twain's influence on Sherwood Anderson's fiction, 1 no one has attempted to assess the kind or extent of that influence in a particular work of Anderson. Anderson, unlike many other authors who feel compelled to deny influences lest, as they imagine, it detract from their individuality, readily admitted his attraction to the older author and, on occasion, deliberately courted it. He once wrote Van Wyck Brooks that he had tried to write a story about an old cheese maker who was to be "Twain's type of man." And at a later date he attributed the "wide acceptance" of "I'm a Fool" to the fact that it was "a story of immaturity," much like "Mark Twain at his best."3 For Anderson, "Mark Twain at his best" meant almost exclusively Huckleberry Finn: "Should not one go to Huck Finn for the real man, working out of real people?" he wrote Brooks in 1918.4

Anderson was drawn to Twain chiefly because he felt that the author of Huckleberry Finn shared his own point of view toward experience. Anderson could say that he understood "the rather child-like pessimism of Twain" because he too felt the same kind of primitive despair at the spectacle of a mechanistic civilization riding herd over the spirits of naturally decent human beings, crushing them, crippling them, making them into "grotesques." Of course, Twain, because he stands toward the beginning rather than the end of the pessimistic-naturalistic tradition, is neither as explicit nor as graphic in his depiction of the victims of societal distortion as Anderson, but the same impulse is there. George Willard as he steps on the train that is to take him from Winesburg forever is surely the spiritual descendent of the young boy who has "got to light out for the territory ahead of the rest": both George and Huck have to find breathing space for their souls.

Professor Irving Howe in his Sherwood Anderson asserts that Twain's influence on Anderson can be most clearly seen in the early portions of Poor White (1920) and in some of the stories in The Triumph of the Egg (1921). It seems to me that one of the stories in that collection, "I Want to Know Why," owes more to Huckleberry Finn than any other piece of fiction Anderson wrote.<sup>6</sup>

One of the immediately striking similarities between the story and the novel is the same use of an ironic point of view. It is not merely that both stories are told by boys who are morally finer than most of the white world which they are describing, but rather that both youngsters believe that those judgments of theirs which run counter to the accepted opinions of society are wrong, and those of society right, even though they themselves cannot see the "sense" in the view taken by society. Each boy feels-and herein lies the irony—that his own opinion is in error, either through natural wickedness or lack of maturity, and that if he were a better person or more grown up, he would be able to see that society's view made sense. Consequently, in both stories the narrator's touching humility serves as an ironic commentary on the rest of the world. What more devastating indictment of society could be made than that in it moral goodness is so "unnatural," so out of place, that it can "adjust" only by convincing itself that it is moral error?

Huckleberry Finn is, of course, saturated with this kind of inversion, but nowhere is it so poignantly ironic as in those passages in which Huck ponders the "sinfulness" of his helping the runaway slave Jim, culminating in his heroic decision to save Jim at the price of damnation. Anderson utilizes the same kind of ironic inversion, although, admittedly, in a lower key. The boy knows that Negroes are kinder, more trustworthy,

"squarer" than whites, that they have a more sensitive enjoyment of life, that they have a deeper insight into experience; but still he accepts his society's attitude toward "niggers" as immutable: no use in asking his father if he can be a stable boy --only niggers do that. Even as he wishes that he himself "was a nigger" so that he could be around horses more, he admits that "It's a foolish thing to say." The same kind of irony pervades the passages dealing with Rieback's father, a professional gambler. The boy knows that Henry's father is "a nice man and generous," but he is also aware of the fact that the respectable fathers don't want their sons to play with Henry. And just as Huck "accepts" the cruel (and to him senseless) precepts of his society as being God ordained and sanctioned, so does the boy concede that "I guess the men know what they are talking about," even though he himself cannot see what Henry's father does for a living has "to do with Henry." Like Huck, Anderson's boy consistently miscalculates his goodness.

Anderson organizes the world of "I Want to Know Why" around a symbolic dichotomy similar to that used by Twain in Huckleberry Finn. Just as Twain structures the largest portion of his novel around the contrast between the "free and easy" life on the raft and the "cramped up and smothery" narrowness of life on the shore, so Anderson contrasts the expansive loveliness of the race track with the pinched restrictiveness of the town. Both race track and raft, each construable as symbols of a life free of cruelty, chicanery, and moral dessication, are described in remarkably similar terms. In each, the quiet descriptions of rich smells, music muted by distance, and far-off images evoke an atmosphere of peace and goodness and beauty. Huck luxuriates in the odors of the "corn-dodgers and buttermilk, and pork and cabbage and greens" Jim cooks on the raft, and Anderson's boy revels in the "lovely . . . smells [of] coffee and . . . bacon frying and pipes being smoked out of doors on a morning" at the track. The boy is moved by the

sounds made as the "niggers sing and giggle" in their sheds as he sits on the fence, just as Huck was by the strains of the occasional "fiddle or song" coming from a nearby craft. From the raft Huck can now and then catch a glimpse of a candle in a cabin window, and the boy can glance into a far-off field and see a solitary figure plowing his field. And for both boys the ecstasy of their lives breaks out in exactly the same kind of inarticulate rapture: "It's lovely to live on a raft," Huck exclaims; "it's lovely to be there," the boy says of the race track.

Moreover, the "lovely life" in both Twain and Anderson is somehow equated with the Negro, who becomes a kind of moral center. The manliness, loyalty, honesty, and decency of Jim has been too well discussed to need elaboration here; it is sufficient to say that Jim is the conscience of Huckleberry Finn, the substitute father from whom Huck learns to refine and free those good instincts of his which society has tried to stifle. Although Anderson's boy's relationship with Negroes in general and Bildad in particular is not as explicit as Huck's association with Jim, essentially the same kind of affinity is presented. When the boy has sneaked off to Saratoga, he goes to Bildad, whom he knows he can trust, and who, like Jim, attends to the boy's needs in an uncomplicated and directly kind manner. "Niggers are all right about things like that. They won't squeal on you. Often a white man you might meet, when you had run away from home like that, might appear to be all right and give you a quarter or a half dollar or something, and then go right and give you away. White men will do that, but not a nigger. You can trust them." The general untrustworthiness of whites essayed here has various analogues in Huckleberry Finn and reminds one of the passage in which Jim tells Huck that he was "de on'y white genlman dat ever kep' his promise to ole Jim." Moreover, as was indicated above, the Negro, as in Twain's novel, is the index of goodness and truth, toward whom the boy, like Huck to Jim, instinc-

tively gravitate horses from and Sunstreak because "the r sure that the "lay them all "two or three post-time bugle runs "to get a niggers." Whe filthy spectac matically reve reference: "A a place." And having seen hi the same kind as he had wi in a tormented with "the nigg trust in, and c is precisely th various exper cruelty on sho to be free ag with Jim on bother us."

The world outside the ra and small cru and joys ar (which Huck but "trash"), pain or humil tale, because figure, Harr respectable P coterie of pre work, but like and get up the boy very cigar if he w be a jockey, the river cap smaller craft who set dogs tine on stray cans to dog the animals

ide as the "niggers sing and gigeir sheds as he sits on the fence,
Huck was by the strains of the
"fiddle or song" coming from a
aft. From the raft Huck can now
catch a glimpse of a candle in a
low, and the boy can glance into
field and see a solitary figure
is field. And for both boys the
their lives breaks out in exactly
ind of inarticulate rapture: "It's
live on a raft," Huck exclaims;
to be there," the boy says of
rack.

, the "lovely life" in both Twain on is somehow equated with the becomes a kind of moral center. ss, loyalty, honesty, and decency been too well discussed to need here; it is sufficient to say that conscience of Huckleberry Finn, te father from whom Huck learns nd free those good instincts of riety has tried to stifle. Although boy's relationship with Negroes nd Bildad in particular is not s Huck's association with Jim, he same kind of affinity is prein the boy has sneaked off to goes to Bildad, whom he knows and who, like Jim, attends to eeds in an uncomplicated and manner. "Niggers are all right like that. They won't squeal n a white man you might meet, run away from home like that, r to be all right and give you a half dollar or something, right and give you away. White at, but not a nigger. You can The general untrustworthiness yed here has várious analogues y Finn and reminds one of the ich Jim tells Huck that he was genlman dat ever kep' his Jim." Moreover, as was indihe Negro, as in Twain's novel, goodness and truth, toward , like Huck to Jim, instinc-

tively gravitates. That there never were two horses from Beckersville like Middlestride and Sunstreak is established as a "fact" because "the niggers said so." The boy is sure that the new colt Strident is going to "lay them all out," although only he and "two or three niggers" think so. When the post-time bugle blows, the boy instinctively runs "to get a place by the fence with the niggers." When the boy is outraged at the filthy spectacle of the brothel, he automatically reverts to his moral frame of reference: "A nigger wouldn't go into such a place." And finally, the boy's agony at having seen his idol, Jerry Tillford, display the same kind of rapture with the prostitute as he had with Sunstreak manifests itself in a tormented desire to have stayed behind with "the niggers and the horses." The boy's trust in, and desire to be with, "the niggers" is precisely the reaction Huck has after his various experiences with the white man's cruelty on shore: " . . . it did seem so good to be free again and all by ourselves [i.e. with Jim] on the big river, and nobody to bother us.

The world outside the race track, like that outside the raft, is rotten with small minds and small cruelties. There, natural pleasures and joys are replaced by joyless jokes (which Huck learns from Jim are nothing but "trash"), the sole fun of which is in the pain or humiliation inflicted. In Anderson's tale, because it is only a short story, one figure, Harry Hellinfinger, the son of the respectable Postmaster, stands for the whole coterie of practical jokers, liars and cheats in Twain. Hellinfinger, who is "too lazy to work, but likes to stand around in the street and get up jokes on boys," and who made the boy very sick by telling him to eat a cigar if he wanted to be stunted enough to be a jockey, is obviously spiritual kin to the river captains who enjoy running down smaller crafts or the town loafers in Twain who set dogs on nursing sows, pour turpentine on stray dogs and then light it, or tie cans to dogs' tails and laughingly watch the animals run themselves to death.

But both boys have to suffer more than small cruelties: there is yet a darker dimension to their experiences. Each boy, against his will and inclination, suffers initiation into realms of moral horror for which he is unprepared-realms which give them both the "fantods" (a word which Anderson probably took from Twain). The whole of Huck's trip down the river is, from one point of view, a "sad initiation" into the stark realities of human corruption.8 "Human beings can be awful cruel to one another," Huck says in stunned bewilderment. Likewise, Anderson's boy encounters an instance of human corruption that not only bewilders him but spoils his idyllic world as well, much as the presence of the King and Duke corrupts the raft for Huck. And both boys, understandably enough, for neither is in a position to view his initiation as morally curative, wish that they had never encountered the terrible things they have. When Huck sees the boy Buck murdered because of an idiotic feud, much the most terrible experience he has to undergo, he passionately laments his lost innocence: "I wished I hadn't ever come ashore that night to see such things." The boy's reaction to seeing Jerry in the brothel is precisely the same: "I wished I hadn't gone away from the tracks . . . " Neither boy, however, is ever going "to get shut" of his initiative experiences: Huck "dreams about them," and the boy "keeps thinking about it." In both Twain and Anderson there is the same kind of inevitability: you have to come ashore, you have to come to town.

Finally, both boys' experiences culminate in the same kind of isolation and withdrawal. Neither boy, of course, can assess adequately the moral implications of his awareness, but both realize, however dimly, that they are in a new relationship to their environments, that "things are different." Fundamentally, there is no difference between Huck's "light[ing] out for the territory ahead of the rest" and the boy's hanging around the track where now "the air don't taste as (Continued on page 24)

## The Last Time I Saw Mark Twain

Willis C. Pratt, as told to Gertrude Valliere King

It was during one of Mark Twain's frequent bouts with bronchitis that I went to interview him. There had been a dearth of live news for several days. That happens sometimes in newspaper offices. It was two o'clock in the afternoon, and more than half of the members of the Herald's news staff were sitting around waiting for possible assignments. Paul Drane, who ran the "day desk," was searching through a pile of clippings taken from his "future book" in the hope that he might find something worth following up. Evidently he was unsuccessful, for he threw down the clippings with an impatient gesture, and going to the window beside his desk, stood for a few minutes thoughtfully gazing at the crowd on Broadway. Evidently there was no inspiration in that, either. Then, as I was passing his desk:

"How long since you have seen an interview with Mark Twain?"

"Don't remember any; at least, not for several years."

"Do you suppose you could get him to tall; about anything?"

"Maybe, for about a dollar a word. Otherwise, the betting is a hundred to one he won't stand for an interview."

"Let's try, anyway. How about a subject? Got an idea?"

(Even editors are careless about their grammar, unless they are writing something.)

"How about politics? There's the municipal election coming on soon."

"Fine. See if he will discuss the possibility of the elimination of the boss in politics."

It was taking a long chance, but I accepted the assignment with that show of enthusiasm which always seems to please the "desk."

I rang the bell of Mr. Clemens's house, the one with the diamond-paned windows, at the corner of Fifth Avenue and Eighth Street. The door was opened by the author's eldest daughter. Yes . . . Mr. Clemens was at home, but had been quite ill. She would see whether he would receive me. After a few minutes of waiting in the darkened lower hall, I was informed that Mr. Clemens would be pleased to see the Herald reporter.

1

Miss Clemens led me up the stairs to the door of a room on the second floor, on the Eighth Street side. She knocked, and discreetly retired. A voice, with the familiar drawl which had fascinated Mark Twain audiences all over the world, bid me enter.

"The room was very large, high ceilinged, and not too well lighted by narrow windows with diamond panes. The author was in bed. He lay, bolstered up by two great pillows against the mahogany head board. He wore a white night shirt, and only a sheet covered his slender legs. A bedside table, within easy reach, bore a tobacco jar, two pipes, one larger than the other, matches, a bottle of Scotch whiskey, a siphon of carbonated water, and a tall glass.

"Well, what entitles me to the honor of a visit from the Herald?" The greeting was hearty and encouraging. "Sit down and tell me all about it."

I thought it best to plump it right at him: "The Herald wants to know if you believe it possible to stop political bossism, and if so, how can it be done?"

The bright eyes, under the great bushy brows, glanced at me keenly for a moment, and then turned their gaze to the ceiling. It was a full minute before the humorist looked at me again, and then his only reply was:

"Umph."

Just then my chances for getting an interview didn't look good. I waited. Mr. Clemens drew up his knees, tucked the sheet under them, and reached for the biggest pipe. He jammed it full of tobacco, lighted it, and blew several clouds of smoke, into which he gazed thoughtfully.

"It could be done, but it would be a mighty hard job."

(The odds were better now. Even money I would get a story.)

"Of course, in bed?"

I said I tho
"Yes, this i
just recovered
bronchitis. Thi
I am feeling pr
first time in
to dinner."

Mr. Clemen small drink of squirted a gen water into it, a "Of course,

I said, "Of "Of course and took a si against had knock at the "Come in!" sharp.

Miss Cleme spectfully, and hands at her "Mr.

memory) teler will be his gue evening at his After a few

said:
"Say to Mi recovering fr

impossible for Again, Mi the room to curt message

The odds way up, and Clemens the o denly said, p of his bed:

"Sit over the let's talk about Surreptition for my note pencil when I ing finger."

were authors

I had met a

alliere King

he would receive me. After a of waiting in the darkened lower informed that Mr. Clemens would to see the Herald reporter.

mens led me up the stairs to the coom on the second floor, on the eet side. She knocked, and disred. A voice, with the familiar h had fascinated Mark Twain ll over the world, bid me enter. m was very large, high ceilinged, well lighted by narrow windows d panes. The author was in bed. stered up by two great pillows mahogany head board. He wore t shirt, and only a sheet covered egs. A bedside table, within easy a tobacco jar, two pipes, one the other, matches, a bottle of skey, a siphon of carbonated a tall glass.

at entitles me to the honor of the Herald?" The greeting was encouraging. "Sit down and tell

it best to plump it right at Herald wants to know if you ssible to stop political bossism, w can it be done?"

t eyes, under the great bushy ed at me keenly for a moment, rned their gaze to the ceiling. Il minute before the humorist again, and then his only reply

ny chances for getting an interok good. I waited. Mr. Clemens knees, tucked the sheet under sched for the biggest pipe. He ll of tobacco, lighted it, and louds of smoke, into which he

be done, but it would be a job."

were better now. Even money story.)

"Of course, you have noticed that I am in bed?"

I said I thought I had noted that fact. "Yes, this is my last day here. I have just recovered from my annual attack of bronchitis. This one was a hum-dinger. But I am feeling pretty pert today, and for the first time in three weeks I'm going down to dinner."

Mr. Clemens thereupon poured a very small drink of whiskey into the tall glass, squirted a generous portion of carbonated water into it, and holding it up, said:

"Of course, you don't use this?"

I said, "Of course not."
"Of course not," repeated the humorist, and took a sip of his highball. (The odds against had gone up. There was a soft knock at the door.)

"Come in!" The command was short and sharp.

Miss Clemens entered. She curtsied, respectfully, and then stood very erect, with hands at her sides.

"Mr. -— (the name has escaped my memory) telephones to ask if Mr. Clemens will be his guest at dinner next Wednesday evening at his home."

After a few puffs at his pipe, Mr. Clemens said:

— that Mr. Clemens is "Say to Mr. recovering from an illness, and it will be impossible for him to accept the invitation."

Again, Miss Clemens curtsied, and left the room to transmit her father's rather curt message.

The odds against seemed to me to be way up, and I was about to recall to Mr. Clemens the object of my visit when he suddealy said, pointing to a chair at the foot of his bed:

"Sit over there, where I can see you, and let's talk about getting rid of this boss.'

Surreptitiously, I reached in my pocket for my note pad, and was fumbling for my pencil when I saw Mr. Clemens raise a warning finger. Then I remembered that there were authors who shared with some others I had met a prejudice against being taken down verbatim. I put away the pad, and prepared to listen with both ears.

Blowing clouds of smoke to the ceiling, Mr. Clemens began to talk, between puffs, and with an occasional recrossing of his legs under the sheet. An infrequent sip from the tall glass seemed to help the flow of his ideas. For a full half hour that voice, with its usual drawl entirely absent, poured forth a torrent of political wisdom. The little man, lying there in bed, crossing and recrossing his lean shanks, and changing from one pipe to the other as the one he was puffing became too hot, first drew a word picture of New York's then reigning political boss, Richard Croker. There was not an angle to the man's character, nor an incident of his career either worthy or reprehensible, with which Mr. Clemens appeared unfamiliar. He expressed his appreciation of the fact that political organization of the right brand was a necessity. The machine, through which the various branches of municipal and state government must function, had to have a guiding hand, but a hand that was always open for inspection, never hidden beneath the cloak of the spoiler.

Yes, it was possible to eliminate the political boss, but only under conditions which up to that time seemed to be beyond the power of man or the Almighty to bring about, namely, the complete cooperation of conscientious voters in the selection of their candidates for public office, and in their exercise of the franchise. It was the election day slacker, Mr. Clemens declared, who was responsible for the conditions which had brought into existence the political boss. It was the man who, although fully aware of the results of his dereliction of duty, failed not only to use his power to aid in the selection of representative men as delegates to conventions, but who, through sheer laziness or maybe a disinclination to put on rubbers and carry an umbrella, hung around the house instead of going to the hustings or to the polling places on election day.

About this time I found myself wondering. Was this Mark Twain, the humorist? So far There was much more of it, and finally, with a characteristic motion, as if sweeping the whole subject aside, Mr. Clemens let me know that the interview was over.

I rose to go, and was expressing my appreciation of his friendly response to my request for an interview, when he interrupted me with:

"Wait a minute. I want to tell you something that I wish you would put somewhere in your story, if you think the Herald will print it. But maybe it's no use. You see, having a reputation as a professional humorist works to one's disadvantage. Very often when I am in dead earnest, people insist that I am trying to be funny.

"Summer will soon be here, and with it will come that very serious complaint, dysentery, that carries off hundreds of children and many grown-ups. I know an unfailing remedy for that illness, one that has never failed to cure members of my own family since I learned of it seventeen years ago. Two thick slices of fine ripe watermelon will cure any case of dysentery if the patient can get them down. And do you know what would happen if I should offer to supply Bellevue Hospital with the best Carolina melons, at three cents a car load? Why, they'd have me put up in the psychopathic ward for examination within twelve hours. Now, run along and write your piece."

I turned in my story before six o'clock. I had written a column and a half. Drane looked up as I laid the copy on his desk, and grinned, I thought a little knowingly.

"Did he say all this?" he asked, shuffling the seven pages of copy. "You must be a wizard."

The implication was plain, but I let it pass. Ten minutes later, as I was about to

go out for dinner, an office boy told me Mr. Lincoln wanted to see me. I found the city editor of the Herald reading the last page of my story. He glanced at me, as I thought, very keenly.

"This is a very good story. You must have found Mr. Clemens unusually responsive."

"The interview speaks for itself," I replied.

"I want to give this a good display," continued the chief, "and I think in this case we'll have to observe the rule Commodore Bennett has laid down that all interviews with important persons must be O.K.'d by the person giving it."

He handed me the copy, and in no very pleasant frame of mind, I started on my distasteful errand.

I found Mr. Clemens up and dressed for dinner. He received me in a small room on the first floor. He greeted me with a hearty handshake and said:

"Well, well, what are you back for?" I told him.

"What did you do? Write too good a tory?"

I handed him the copy and asked him to run over it and see if I had misquoteo him in any particular.

"No," he said, "you read it, and I'll listen."

As I read, the author paced back and forth the length of the rug, his noticeably short arms swinging vigorously as he walked. Along in the middle of the second page I paused and took out my pencil to change a word which I thought to be tautological.

"Hey, there! What are you doing?" Mr. Clemens had stopped short, and was looking at me sharply from under his shaggy brows. I said I wanted to write a word synonymous with one that I had used twice in the same sentence.

"Hold on, there. There is nothing the matter with that word. Will you let me tell you something? I have written a few pieces in my time, and when I find a word that ex-(Continued on page 23)

ood display," con-

our negro dialect, s an idea of what the was like. I told he Smith's negro stor copy of Harper's it. She translated it paper, but by an as the author of it was very sorry for a good lashing in which would have but for that mistal that Boccaccio h story, in his curt five hundred years hold of it and mad

Mark T

In 1894 Mark Tv North American Rec

the "Private History

Story." He opened the Five or six year

Finland asked me t

The lady from Fin sight, exposed Marking in the Swedish Alexandra Gripenber author. Born in 18 Swedish-Finnish fami Finland's woman sumovements.<sup>2</sup> In 1888 the international worington, D. C., and extensively through

thing out of it.1

According to A 1 World,<sup>3</sup> the account published after her randra Gripenberg's Twain was an especishe met Twain in where three of Ame Charles Dudley Wastowe, and Mark Twime. Although the to entertain the distito the United State

-8-

an office boy told me Mr. see me. I found the city ald reading the last page anced at me, as I thought,

y good story. You must demens unusually respon-

speaks for itself," I re-

this a good display," conand I think in this case rve the rule Commodore down that all interviews rsons must be O.K.'d by it."

he copy, and in no very mind, I started on my

mens up and dressed for I me in a small room on greeted me with a hearty

are you back for?"

do? Write too good a

copy and asked him to if I had misquoted him

"you read it, and I'll

author paced back and the rug, his noticeably vigorously as he walked. e of the second page I t my pencil to change a ht to be tautological. at are you doing?" Mr. I short, and was looking under his shaggy brows.

ite a word synonymous

used twice in the same

here is nothing the mat-Will you let me tell you written a few pieces in I find a word that exl on page 23)

### Mark Twain Meets a Lady from Finland

Ernest J. Moyne University of Delaware

In 1894 Mark Twain published in the North American Review an article called the "Private History of the 'Jumping Frog' Story." He opened the essay as follows:

Five or six years ago a lady from Finland asked me to tell her a story in our negro dialect, so that she could get an idea of what that variety of speech was like. I told her one of Hopkinson Smith's negro stories, and gave her a copy of Harper's Monthly containing it. She translated it for a Swedish newspaper, but by an oversight named me as the author of it instead of Smith, I was very sorry for that, because I got a good lashing in the Swedish press, which would have fallen to his share but for that mistake; for it was shown that Boccaccio had told that very story, in his curt and meager fashion, five hundred years before Smith took hold of it and made a good and tellable thing out of it.1

The lady from Finland who, by her oversight, exposed Mark Twain to "a good lashing in the Swedish press" was Baroness Alexandra Gripenberg, well-known Finnish author. Born in 1857, of an illustrious Swedish-Finnish family, she was a leader in Finland's woman suffrage and temperance movements. In 1888 she was a delegate to the international women's congress in Washington, D. C., and afterward she traveled extensively through the United States.

According to A Half Year in the New World,<sup>3</sup> the account of her visit to America, published after her return to Finland, Alexandra Gripenberg's encounter with Mark Twain was an especially memorable event. She met Twain in Hartford, Connecticut, where three of America's famous authors, Charles Dudley Warner, Harriet Beecher Stowe, and Mark Twain, were living at that time. Although the Clemenses were unable to entertain the distinguished Finnish visitor to the United States in their home because

of the illness of one of their daughters, they took particular pains to make her acquaintance. The meeting occurred in June, 1888, at the home of the Charles Dudley Warners.

When Alexandra Gripenberg arrived at the Warners' at eight o'clock in the evening, she found that Mr. and Mrs. Clemens were already there. She was immediately impressed by Mark Twain's tanned and weather-beaten appearance and by the dense clouds of tobacco smoke which enveloped him. His facial features were sharp and fine; according to our Finnish author, Twain's face was that of a typical prospector, full of countless small and large wrinkles and furrows. His hair was thick, curly, grayish; his penetrating eyes were deep-set; his gestures were abrupt but at the same time slow. His clothes fitted him indifferently as though they knew that their wearer did not care how they looked on him. A brilliant red silk kerchief dangled round his neck in a peculiar manner.5

Mark Twain shook hands heartily but in a somewhat clumsy way, and answered very briefly the customary compliments which Alexandra Gripenberg paid him in the process of the introduction. As for Mrs. Clemens, she took the lady from Finland completely by surprise; Baroness Gripenberg felt that almost any woman at all in the world could better be taken for Mark Twain's wife, that is, if one forgets that les extremes se touchent. Although Alexandra Gripenberg was herself of Swedish-Finnish nobility, she found Mrs. Clemens, whom she describes as refined and perhaps even intelligent, a bit too aristocratic. She noted that the husband and wife treated each other kindly and that Mrs. Clemens seemed to listen contentedly to even the slightest sacrificial praise placed on the altar of her husband's fame.6

Focusing her attention entirely on Mark Twain, Baroness Gripenberg observed that he was in good humor and that the company,

--9

all but herself old friends, inspired him. He sat in a big armchair, in a peculiar shriveled up and twisted position, and puffed briskly at his pipe. Our author notes that smoking is not permitted in America if ladies are present, but that of course Mark Twain had the right to be an exception. At first he sat in silence until the conversation had become livelier, and then he began to talk, slowly in the beginning, mumbiing with his pipe between his teeth. Gradually becoming more and more animated, he finally took his pipe out of his mouth, and it disappeared into his gesticulating hand.7

During the course of the evening the conversation turned to Negroes, particularly to Frederick Douglass, and to Uncle Tom's Cabin. Harriet Beecher Stowe's sister, who was present, related that Harriet was so hated because of her book that many pastors warned their parishioners to avoid her sinister influence. These clergymen accused her of trying to overthrow God's order of things in the world.

At this point Mark Twain broke in, saying, "I guess that by now they [the ministers] have seen how much she changed our Lord's order in the world. Well Copernicus and Galileo . . . It's the same story over again. But if her sowing sprouted hatred, its harvest has been love. One day I stood on a street corner as Mrs. Stowe was boarding a streetcar. Next to me stood a young man in shabby clothing—obviously he was a tramp, a vagrant. For amusement I asked him, 'Do you know who that lady was?'

"'No,' he answered, surprised.

"Well, that was Uncle Tom's Cabin."

"'Do you mean that she was Mrs. Stowe?"

"Exactly, Mrs. Stowe herself.

"The man glanced at me a bit suspiciously and then ran after the car and shouted for the driver to stop it. I saw him climb aboard, and, smiling to myself, I went on my way. A few days later I met the same man by chance. He recognized me immediately, tipped his hat, and, eyes gleaming, said, 'Didn't you point out Mrs. Stowe to me, sir? I am very much obliged to you, sir.

I had the honor to sit next to her and to help her off the car." "8

Commenting on Mark Twain's manner in talking, Alexandra Gripenberg found it similar to that of a Finnish peasant. At the beginning of a story Twain, speaking slowly and eloquently, was very reserved, but by the end of his tale amusement and good-heartedness shone from every wrinkle in his face.

The conversation shifting from Negroes to Negro songs and stories, Mark Twain, in his incomparable way, told the following story in a Virginia dialect. This story is a condensed version of the one by Hopkinson Smith which Mark Twain had read in Harper's Magazine.9

"A colored cook was just about to send the roast into the dining room when his sweethcart came to see him. The roast was a rare, juicy goose, and the girl cast longing glances at it. Temptation overcame the poor cook. He cut off one of the legs and gave it to his ladylove.

"When the master began to carve the roast at the table, he immediately discovered the fraud. His brow clouded over, but he did not say anything. After dinner he went out into the kitchen and inquired for the chef. The cook approached, shivering with

"'Sam, how dare you pilfer the legs from my geese before you send them to the table?"

"'I don't understand what you mean,

"'Tll teach you to understand. How did you dare cut off the leg of the goose which we had for dinner today?"

"'I didn't cut it off, massa."

"Is that so? So you didn't cut it off? How come the goose had only one leg?"

" 'How—well—presumably it was created that way.'

"Like that? You believe, then, that there are one-legged geese?"

" 'I believe so, massa.'

" 'Well, good. Come with me.'

"The master and the cook stepped into (Continued on page 25)

Mark

After H Arkansas dote per habits of

Store these fe leaf twi they de knife, b their to and tu till they the one mournfi and sa

"Her the plug. Although been cone change he his days however, camps of for at lead of in the (1885).

In Aug ern write in Denver One of Strother private Twain's. business ed it with ing camp cinct that

First baccer his plu says, that cl Althou

or to sit next to her and to be car." "8

on Mark Twain's manner in ndra Gripenberg found it t of a Finnish peasant. At of a story Twain, speaking quently, was very reserved, I of his tale amusement and ss shone from every wrinkle

ation shifting from Negroes s and stories, Mark Twain, rable way, told the following inia dialect. This story is a on of the one by Hopkinson Mark Twain had read in zinc.9

ook was just about to send the dining room when his e to see him. The roast was oose, and the girl cast longit. Temptation overcame the cut off one of the legs and idylove.

master began to carve the le, he immediately discovered brow clouded over, but he thing. After dinner he went tehen and inquired for the approached, shivering with

lare you pilfer the legs from you send them to the table?' derstand what you mean,

ou to understand. How did the leg of the goose which er today?'

it off, massa.'

So you didn't cut it off? cose had only one leg?' -presumably it was created

ou believe, then, that there eese?'

massa.'
Come with me.'
and the cook stepped into
led on page 25)

# Mark Twain's "Plug" and "Chaw": An Anecdotal Parallel

Cecil D. Eby, Jr. Washington and Lee University

After Huckleberry Finn has landed in an Arkansas town, lie relates the following anecdote pertaining to the tobacco-chewing habits of the village loafers:

Store tobacco is flat black plug, but these fellows mostly chaws the natural leaf twisted. When they borrow a chaw they don't generly cut it off with a knife, but they set the plug in between their teeth, and gnaw with their teeth and tug at the plug with their hands till they get it in two— then sometimes the one that owns the tobacco looks mournful at it when it's handed back, and says, sarcastic—

"Here, gimme the chaw, and you take the plug."

Although no Twain scholars appear to have been concerned with a possible source, most would doubtless assume that the verbal exchange had been remembered by Twain from his days on the Mississippi. The anecdote, however, had circulated among the mining camps of Colorado (and perhaps Nevada) for at least twelve years before it was printed in the Adventures of Huckleberry Finn (1885).

In August of 1873 an excursion of Eastern writers, editors, and naturalists stopped in Denver on their way to Salt Lake City. One of the excursionists, David Hunter Strother ("Porte Crayon"), recorded in his private journal a story very similar to Twain's. It was told to him by a Denver business man, Bela M. Hughes, who presented it with several others as a sample of mining camp humor. This version, more succeinct than Twain's, is as follows:

First loafer: "Gimme a chaw of tobaccer, will ye?" The miner hands out his plug. Loafer helps himself. Miner says, "Well, mister, if ye'll only gimme that chaw ye may keep the plug."<sup>2</sup> Although Strother did not use the anecdote in any subsequent writing which could have been seen by Mark Twain, the two men did meet during the centennial celebration at Philadelphia in 1876.<sup>3</sup> That the anecdote might have been exchanged at that time is a possibility, for Strother was a noted raconteur. In any case, the similarity of the two versions, particularly the final lines of each, would indicate either that Twain borrowed from Strother or that the story was already well known in the seventies.

(Notes on page 25)

# THE CHALLENGERS Grace Hollowell

(Inspired by Pasternak's Dr. Zhivago) Many are the sweepers The keepers Of willow-bright halls Their peace and quietude Their rhythmic sweeping Uphold . . even as they challenge The willow in behalf of The king of the whippoorwills Of all purple-coated ones Holding the shadowy courts there From any intruders coming By way of the green Holding . . or dashing out Into golden palaces That other swift sheen of light Cool-simulators of the broken rhythm Dragging wing . . . leading all other Intruders away from their own Intrepid innocent ones Joining the enemy's columns Of light . . to summon to the bar No other starry-eyed King But the centuries To plead there only for more Singers in limitless praise To God For willow-bright halls To dust.

--11

During the course of the evening the conversation turned to Negroes, particularly to Frederick Douglass, and to Uncle Tom's Cabin. Harriet Beecher Stowe's sister, who was present, related that Harriet was so hated because of her book that many pastors warned their parishioners to avoid her sinister influence. These clergymen accused her of trying to overthrow God's order of things in the world.

At this point Mark Twain broke in, saying, "I guess that by now they [the ministers] have seen how much she changed our Lord's order in the world. Well Copernicus and Galileo . . . It's the same story over again. But if her sowing sprouted hatred, its harvest has been love. One day I stood on a street corner as Mrs. Stowe was boarding a streetcar. Next to me stood a young man in shabby clothing—obviously he was a tramp, a vagrant. For amusement I asked him, 'Do you know who that lady was?'

"'No,' he answered, surprised.

"'Well, that was Uncle Tom's Cabin."

"'Do you mean that she was Mrs. Stowe?'

"Exactly, Mrs. Stowe herself."

"The man glanced at me a bit suspiciously and then ran after the car and shouted for the driver to stop it. I saw him climb aboard, and, smiling to myself, I went on my way. A few days later I met the same man by chance. He recognized me immediately, tipped his hat, and, eyes gleaming, said, Didn't you point out Mrs. Stowe to me, sir? I am very much obliged to you, sir.

I had the honor to sit next to her and to help her off the car." "8

Commenting on Mark Twain's manner in talking, Alexandra Gripenberg found it similar to that of a Finnish peasant. At the beginning of a story Twain, speaking slowly and eloquently, was very reserved, but by the end of his tale amusement and good-heartedness shone from every wrinkle

The conversation shifting from Negroes to Negro songs and stories, Mark Twain, in his incomparable way, told the following story in a Virginia dialect. This story is a condensed version of the one by Hopkinson Smith which Mark Twain had read in Harper's Magazine.9

"A colored cook was just about to send the roast into the dining room when his sweethcart came to see him. The roast was a rare, juicy goose, and the girl cast longing glances at it. Temptation overcame the poor cook. He cut off one of the legs and gave it to his ladylove.

"When the master began to carve the roast at the table, he immediately discovered the fraud. His brow clouded over, but he did not say anything. After dinner he went out into the kitchen and inquired for the chef. The cook approached, shivering with

"'Sam, how dare you pilfer the legs from my geese before you send them to the table?

"I don't understand what you mean, massa.

"'I'll teach you to understand. How did you dare cut off the leg of the goose which we had for dinner today?'

"'I didn't cut it off, massa.'

"'Is that so? So you didn't cut it off? How come the goose had only one leg?"

"'How—well—presumably it was created that way.'

"'Like that? You believe, then, that there are one-legged geese?

"'I believe so, massa.'

"'Well, good. Come with me.'

"The master and the cook stepped into (Continued on page 25)

Mark

After H Arkansas t dote pert habits of

Store these fe leaf twis they do their te and tug till they mournfu

and says
"Here
the plug." Although i been conce would dou change had his days however. camps of for at leas ed in the

(1885).In Augu ern writer in Denver One of Strother ( private j Twain's. business n ed it with ing camp cinct than

> First baccer, his plus that ch Althoug

to sit next to her and to car."

n Mark Twain's manner in lra Gripenberg found it of a Finnish peasant. At a story Twain, speaking uently, was very reserved, of his tale amusement and shone from every wrinkle

tion shifting from Negroes and stories, Mark Twain, ble way, told the following nia dialect. This story is a n of the one by Hopkinson lark Twain had read in

ok was just about to send the dining room when his to see him. The roast was se, and the girl cast long-Temptation overcame the it off one of the legs and vlove.

aster began to carve the , he immediately discovered row clouded over, but he ning. After dinner he went hen and inquired for the pproached, shivering with

re you pilfer the legs from ou send them to the table? lerstand what you mean,

u to understand. How did the leg of the goose which

r today?' it off, massa.'

So you didn't cut it off? ose had only one leg? presumably it was created

ou believe, then, that there

Come with me.'

id the cook stepped into d on page 25)

# Mark Twain's "Plug" and "Chaw": An Anecdotal Parallel

Cecil D. Eby, Jr. Washington and Lee University

After Huckleberry Finn has landed in an Arkansas town, he relates the following anecdote pertaining to the tobacco-chewing habits of the village loafers:

Store tobacco is flat black plug, but these fellows mostly chaws the natural leaf twisted. When they borrow a chaw they don't generly cut it off with a knife, but they set the plug in between their teeth, and gnaw with their teeth and tug at the plug with their hands till they get it in two- then sometimes the one that owns the tobacco looks mournful at it when it's handed back; and says, sarcastic-

"Here, gimme the chaw, and you take the plug."

Although no Twain scholars appear to have been concerned with a possible source, most would doubtless assume that the verbal exchange had been remembered by Twain from his days on the Mississippi. The anecdote, however, had circulated among the mining camps of Colorado (and perhaps Nevada) for at least twelve years before it was printed in the Adventures of Huckleberry Finn

In August of 1873 an excursion of Eastern writers, editors, and naturalists stopped in Denver on their way to Salt Lake City. One of the excursionists, David Hunter Strother ("Porte Crayon"), recorded in his private journal a story very similar to Twain's. It was told to him by a Denver business man, Bela M. Hughes, who presented it with several others as a sample of mining camp humor. This version, more succinct than Twain's, is as follows:

First loafer: "Gimme a chaw of tobaccer, will ye?" The miner hands out his plug. Loafer helps himself. Miner says, "Well, mister, if ye'll only gimme that chaw we may keep the plug."2 Although Strother did not use the anecdote in any subsequent writing which could have been seen by Mark Twain, the two men did meet during the centennial celebration at Philadelphia in 1876.3 That the anecdote might have been exchanged at that time is a possibility, for Strother was a noted raconteur. In any case, the similarity of the two versions, particularly the final lines of each, would indicate either that Twain borrowed from Strother or that the story was already well known in the seventies.

(Notes on page 25)

#### THE CHALLENGERS Grace Hollowell

(Inspired by Pasternak's Dr. Zhivago)

Many are the sweepers The keepers Of willow-bright halls Their peace and quietude Their rhythmic sweeping Uphold . . even as they challenge The willow in behalf of The king of the whippoorwills Of all purple-coated ones Holding the shadowy courts there From any intruders coming By way of the green Holding . . or dashing out Into golden palaces That other swift sheen of light Cool-simulators of the broken rhythm Dragging wing . . . leading all other Intruders away from their own Intrepid innocent ones Joining the enemy's columns Of light . . to summon to the bar No other starry-eyed King But the centuries . . To plead there only for more Singers in limitless praise For willow-bright halls To dust.

# Restoration of a Howells Letter

Leo P. Coyle John Carroll University

In 1910 William Dean Howells answered a letter of inquiry from Harriet Taylor Upton, who was seeking background material for her *History of the Western Reserve* (Chicago, 1910). Mrs. Upton quoted portions of Howells' informative and revealing letter, but she took great liberties with its text.

The parts of the letter published by Mrs. Upton represent her version of how the letter might have been written. Mrs. Upton attempted to improve Howells' first-draft phrasing. Although she did not violate Howells' meaning, she restyled the letter by paraphrasing parts of the original, substituting words, initiating phrases, and ignoring, in one instance, a requisite ellipsis. The result is a reprehensible distortion of a highly provocative bit of autobiography.

The unscholarly manner in which Mrs. Upton transcribed Howells' letter is matched only by her irritating tone and her carelessness in handling significant facts: she listed Matthew's Ferry rather than Martins Ferry, Ohio, as Howells' birthplace, and asserted that he became editor, rather than assistant editor, of the Atlantic Monthly in 1866. With a rather militant feminism Mrs. Upton commended Howells for his approva! of the suffragette movement and then took him to task for his inability to delineate the female character: "The weakest part of his writings are (sic) his woman characters. The author has longed to have him portray a woman with the characteristics of his splendid Welsh grandmother, his own beautiful mother, his sister-in-law, Eliza Howells), who is such a helpmate to his 'brother Joe,' or his own wife-anyone being stronger than his strongest character." (Vol. I, p. 577.)

Mrs. Upton terminated her article on Howells with the mutilated extract from his letter to her dated March 9, 1910. The Howells holograph is now in the manuscript files of the Western Reserve Historical Society, Cleveland, Ohio. A complete transcript follows. Dear Mrs. Upton:

I have always remembered my pleasant day at your house in Warren, and the kindness of your father to my brother; and I would gladly help you if I could in the matter you mention. I was sixteen two months after I came to Jefferson; at nineteen I began journalizing at Columbus. So there could be little to tell of my boyhood in the Reserve. In My Literary Passions you will get some notion of our literary life at home in the village, and in A Boy's Town (Hamilton, Butler Co. O.) much relating to our family life and to my mother, who was the heart of it; there is something concerning her also in My Year in a Log Cabin.

I dearly loved my mother, and whenever I went away from home it was with the foreboding and realization of homesickness which was mainly longing for her. She had a certain great warmth of mind which supplied any defect of culture, but for a new country she had been fairly well schooled; she expressed herself from her heart with great natural poetry; and she fully shared the intellectual and spiritual life of my father: together they formed our church and our academy. When we went to live in Jefferson we had nothing but our household stuff and our strong, right wills, and we all worked hard to pay for the printing office and the dwelling house we had bought on credit. We paid for them, but her long hard toil wore my mother out. She did all our household work till my sisters grew old enough to help her, and she died at 57 after all was paid for; sometimes we had the "hands" from the office to board, and she worked to save the greater wages they must have been paid otherwise.

I could not tell you all, but I know you will believe we were very happy in the home which she knew how to create for us. An inexpressible tenderness, a devout honor for her fills me as I speak of her. I could not wish to have had another sort of mother; (Continued on page 15)

Ring Lard year following berry Finn, Twain. Shert one of the fi serious reco who cares ab speech," and "being anoth in secret on Edmund Wi Short Storie "would seem else among I sessing the made Huckl After Lards obituary not zines again n wood Broun his mansion Twain . . .

For many inevitable. Li journalist an more than a Twain, he ev an artist of like Twain, critical eye one of amus despair. Bot and both we treatment of first writer a can speech accuracy, at pose of liters larities, how twentieth-cer ever manage His backgro in language, vernacular him in mark This contr

--12-

tter

emembered my pleasant a Warren, and the kind-to my brother; and I but if I could in the mat-was sixteen two months efferson; at nineteen I at Columbus. So there II of my boyhood in the erary Passions you will bur literary life at home A Boy's Town (Hamil) much relating to our ny mother, who was the is something concerning in a Log Cabin.

mother, and whenever me it was with the foren of homesickness which for her. She had a cermind which supplied but for a new country well schooled; she exher heart with great she fully shared the itual life of my father: d our church and our vent to live in Jefferson ur household stuff and ills, and we all worked printing office and the d bought on credit. We her long hard toil wore did all our household grew old enough to help 57 after all was paid d the "hands" from the she worked to save the must have been paid

ou all, but I know you very happy in the home to create for us. An very a devout honor for vak of her. I could not nother sort of mother; I on page 15)

# Mark Twain and Ring Lardner

Howard W. Webb, Jr. Southern Illinois University

Ring Lardner, who was born in 1885, the year following the publication of Huckleberry Finn, was often compared to Mark Twain. Sherwood Anderson, for example, in one of the first articles to accord Lardner serious recognition, praised him as "one who cares about the words of our American speech," and suggested that perhaps he was "being another Mark Twain and working in secret on his own Huck Finn." In 1924, Edmund Wilson, reviewing How to Write Short Stories, stated his belief that Lardner "would seem to come closer than anyone else among living American writers to possessing the combination of qualities that made Huckleberry Finn a masterpiece." After Lardner's death, a number of the obituary notices in newspapers and magazines again made the comparison; and Heywood Broun asserted that "Over Jordan his mansion will be on the street with Mark Twain . . .  $^{\rm v1}$ 

For many reasons these comparisons were inevitable. Like Twain, Lardner began as a journalist and was at first regarded as little more than a very good "funny man." Like Twain, he eventually received recognition as an artist of serious purpose. Also, again like Twain, he looked upon mankind with a critical eye and his viewpoint changed from one of amusement to one of bitterness and despair. Both men hated cruelty and pain and both were severely restrained in their treatment of sex. Finally, Lardner was the first writer after Mark Twain to use American speech-to use it with imagination, wit, accuracy, and effectiveness-for the purpose of literary creation. Despite these similarities, however, Ring Lardner was not a twentieth-century Mark Twain, nor did he ever manage to write a Huckleberry Finn. His background, the sources of his interest in language, the nature and function of the vernacular in his writings-all these place him in marked contrast with Twain.

This contrast becomes clear at once when

we consider the environments from which these writers came. Mark Twain knew the colorful life of Hannibal, Missouri, a small town where, as he said, "Everybody knew everybody, and was affable to everybody, and nobody put on any visible airs."2 There, mixing as he did with all ranks of society, from slaves to F.F.V.'s, he presumably formed the democratic attitudes which inform his work; there he learned to judge others, not by their social status or their grammar, but by their humanity. Ring Lardner, too, knew the life of a small town, Niles, Michigan; but Edmund Wilson was quite wrong when he said that Lardner had had "the freedom of the modern West no less than Mark Twain did of the old."3 Niles never had the vividness of pre-Civil War Hannibal, nor did Lardner have the freedom Twain had known. The Lardners were a wealthy and cultured family, one of the most exclusive in Niles, in fact; and young Ring's contact outside the family circle were extremely limited (he did not even attend public school until he was twelve).4 I do not mean to suggest that Lardner was, then or later, undemocratic, but he did not have the liberal boyhood experience Twain had had. Mark was the young commoner; Ring was the young aristocrat.

A similar difference may be seen in the sources of the interest both writers displayed in the American speech. Twain's interest surely had its roots in the language he heard and used in Hannibal in the climactic years of what H. L. Mencken calls "the Period of Growth" of the "American language," a period when "the voice of America began to take on its characteristic tone-colors, and the speech of America began to differentiate itself unmistakably from the speech of England."5 Another source of interest, as DeVoto and others have made clear, was the tradition of American humor, which Twain encountered as a printer and reporter. Finally, his apprenticeship in the rough-and-

-13-

tumble journalism of Virginia City and San Francisco surely taught him much about the flexibility of language.

Only in this last respect are the sources of Lardner's interest allied with those of Twain. From the relaxed conventions of the sports-writing school in which he learned his trade, Lardner too learned something about the flexibility of language. But he took with him to that school a heritage far different from the one Twain had carried to Virginia City, Lardner's interest in American speech doubtless had its roots in the language he heard in Niles, but this was not the language he used himself. Within the confines of the family circle, he learned "correct" English, and he regarded any deviation from that standard as comic, and a sign of inferior social status. In the Lardner home "incorrect" English was a vehicle of fun and games; and the literary fare consisted of the classics of English and American literature, not the disreputable humorists. In 1925, one critic insisted that Lardner belonged in that "long line of practitioners, from Sam Slick through Artemus Ward, Josh Billings, and Mark Twain"; 6 but nothing in his writings or in his few comments on humor suggests the influence of American humor in general or Mark Twain in particular. In fact, asked once to identify the greatest humorist America had produced, he replied:

"Well, I wouldn't consider Mark Twain our greatest humorist. I guess that George Ade is. Certainly he appeals to us more than Mark Twain does because he belongs to our own time. He writes of the life we are living, and Mark Twain's books deal with the life which we know only by hearsay. I suppose my forebears would say that Mark Twain was a much greater humorist than George Ade.

"But I never saw one of Mark Twain's characters, while I feel that I know every one about whom George Ade writes. You see, I didn't travel along the Mississippi in Mark Twain's

youth, so I don't know his people." When the interviewer asked whether he admired Huckleberry Finn, Lardner acknowledged that he did, but said that he liked Tarkington's Penrod better. I've known Booth Tarkington's boys," he added, "and I've not known those of Mark Twain, Mark Twain's boys are tough and poverty-stricken and they belong to a period very different from that of our own boys."7 Such comments as these virtually eliminate the possibility of any influence; for, even allowing for some distortion on the part of the interviewer, a more inept appraisal of Mark Twain and his masterpiece is difficult to imagine. Thus, we may conclude that Lardner's interest in American speech had its source, not in a native literary tradition, but in a social attitude which he learned at

Still another contrast between the two writers appears when we consider the nature and function of American speech as it exists in their writings. Twain's feeling for the vernacular is affectionate. The vivid, figurative language of Simon Wheeler and Huck Finn is a poetic medium, the easy, earthy speech of people who live close to nature and respond strongly and positively to experience. Lardner's attitude toward the vernacular he employs is scornful. The colorless, literal language of Jack Keefe, of the old man of "The Golden Honeymoon," and others is incapable of poetry; it is the flat, inhibited speech of the unimaginative provincial or urban man who is acutely conscious of himself but utterly insensitive to the life around him. An exception to this generalization is furnished by such a character as the narrator of The Big Town, whose point of view is essentially identical with Lardner's; but the effectiveness of the narrator's speech lies largely in its citified and unpoetic wisecracks ("The only thing young about him was his teeth and his clothes"; "he gave her a look that you could pour on a waffle").8

Twain's affection and Lardner's scorn are also apparent in the functions to which the

vernacular utilized it to living on the speech he str tic as possib and simultar our reasons distinct from Jack Keefe mon speech scription of rather than tivity was g Colonel She his stories. did Lardner

There are these two we ample, the reference of the refere

One more Twain and influence on has come to father to th Robinson a and Eliot, early years from the es the conventi to have bee ner, whose was nonethe common spe stream whice to swell to self, before Stein and b

ow his people." asked whether he ad nn, Lardner acknowl t said that he liked better. I've known vs," he added, "and Mark Twain. Mark h and poverty-strick a period very differwn ooys."7 Such comly eliminate the possie; for, even allowing the part of the interappraisal of Mark rpiece is difficult to conclude that Lardrican speech had its e literary tradition, e which he learned at

ast between the two we consider the nature an speech as it exists ain's feeling for the ate. The vivid, figuran Wheeler and Huck um, the easy, earthy live close to nature and positively to extitude toward the ver scornful. The colorof Jack Keefe, of the en Honeymoon," and poetry; it is the flat, unimaginative prowho is acutely conutterly insensitive to An exception to this shed by such a charof The Big Town, essentially identical e effectiveness of the largely in its citified s ("The only thing his teeth and his a look that you could

d Lardner's scorn are unctions to which the

vernacular was put in their writings. Twain utilized it to create characters, to put them living on the page; and in rendering their speech he strove to be as accurate and realistic as possible. Lardner utilized it to create and simultaneously to satirize charactersour reasons for laughing at Huck are quite distinct from our reasons for laughing at Jack Keefe-and while his ear for the common speech was remarkably sure, his transcription of it was selective and stylized rather than realistic, Also, Lardner's objectivity was greater and more consistent; no Colonel Sherburns obtrude themselves into his stories. But neither, we must remember, did Lardner ever write a Huckleberry Finn.

There are many other differences between these two writers. We might note, for example, the rich comedy and the wonderful fantasy in Twain's work, as opposed to the more insistent satire and the large bulk of delightful nonsense that is to be found in Lardner's writings. We might also consider the many facets of himself Twain revealed in his writing and the truly remarkable lack of self-revelation in the work of Lardner. But enough has already been said to indicate that the resemblance between the lives and works of Mark Twain and Ring Lardner is not nearly so impressive and revealing as the contrast.

One more point, however, should be made. Twain and Lardner have exerted a common influence on modern American prose. Twain has come to stand in the relationship of godfather to that group of American writers-Robinson and Frost, the Imagists, Pound and Eliot, and Gertrude Stein-who in the early years of this century turned away from the established literary traditions and the conventions of language. While he seems to have been unaware of this revolt, Lardner, whose first stories appeared in 1914, was nonetheless a part of it; his use of the common speech was a tributary to that stream which Hemingway and others were to swell to a flood. Indeed, Hemingway himself, before he met Anderson or Pound or Stein and before his well-known comment on

Huckleberry Finn, was an "early imitator" of Ring Lardner's style.9 More recently, such writers as Mark Harris, the author of The Southpare and Bang the Drum Slowly, and J. D. Salinger, the author of The Catcher in the Rye, have testified to the continuing influence of Twain and Lardner.

No one would deny that Twain was the greater writer. But no one should insist that Lardner was merely an unfulfilled latterday disciple; clearly, he was his own man. Different, however, as they may have been, the creator of Huck Finn and the creator of Jack Keefe bequeathed a common legacy to American literature. Lardner's mansion may not be on the same street with Twain's, but it well may be just around the corner.

- but it well may be just around the corner.

  1. Sherwood Anderson, "Four American Impressions." New Republic, XXXII (Oct. 11, 1922), 171-73, Edmund Wilson, "Mr. Lardner's American Characters," Dial, LXXVII (July, 1924), 69; Heywood Broun, quoted in "Ring Lardner—Interpreter of Life," Literary Digest, CXVI (Oct. 14, 1933), 19.

  2. Mark Twain, Autobiography (New York, 1924), I, 120.

  3. Wilson, p. 69.

  4. See Donald Elder, Ring Lardner (New York, 1956), pp. 9-35.

  5. H. L. Mencken, The American Language (New York, 1936), p. 133.

  6. Henry Longan Stuart, "Mr. Lardner Bur'esques America," New York Times Book Review, Apr. 19, 17925, p. 1.

  7. "Three Stories a Year Are Enough For a Writer," New York Times Magazine, Mar. 25, 1917, p. 44.

  8. The Big Town (New York, 1921; reissued New York, 1925), pp. 24, 149.

  9. The quoted phrase is from Ernest Hemingway, "In Defense of Dirty Words," Esquire, II (Sept., 1935), 158D; regarding Lardner's early influence on Hemingway, see Charles A. Fenton, The Ameriticship of Ernest Hemingway (New York, 1954), pp. 22-26.

#### HOWELLS LETTER

(Continued from page 12)

I do not believe there was ever a better woman. It is more than thirty years since she died, but I still dream of her among the living who visit me in sleep, and I dream of her often.

I cannot think of anything more to tell you, at present.

Yours sincerely, W. D. Howells

This three volume work was compiled chiefly by Mrs. Upton. H. G. Cutler and a staff of "leading citizens" helped in the preparation of certain sketches.

Anyone w

# My First Book

Sir Philip Gibbs

As a boy of eighteen, I wrote a number of fairy stories for a famous children's magazine called *Little Folks*. That was when I was a beginner in the publishing house of Cassell and Company, who had their offices in La Belle Sauvage Yard, named after the Red Indian girl Pocahontas. This was in Ludgate Yard, London, and here in Elizabethan days the Lord Chamberlain's players used to act to the "groundlings" and the galleries around the inn yard.

Every morning I used to advance to this office in a frock coat and tall hat, then the recognized costume of respectable young gentlemen. Curiously enough, I owed my first advancement in life to the study of German. I was reading a novel in that language—instead of doing my work—when a voice spoke over my shoulder:

"Do\_you read German?"

"I try to."

"Oh, that's interesting. Come up and see me one day."

I turned round and saw a tall, fair-haired man with the bluest eyes I have ever seen in a human face. I asked a colleague about him and was told in an awed voice that he was our supreme Boss, by name of Arnold-Forster, and at that time Minister-for-War.

I went up five flights of stairs to see him one day in a very big room, and shortly afterwards rose very high in the world—five flights high—when I sat in that room with the tremendous title of educational editor, under the direction of Arnold-Forster himself.

He was my kind patron, and encouraged by him, I compiled two school books, to which, most generously, he contributed prefces. But I don't count one of those as my first book, not being addressed to a public of adult age. My first work of general interest was published week by week, before it reached book form, in a number of provincial newspapers. How I came to write it was due to one sentence in a letter I wrote answering an advertisement for an editor of a literary syndicate in the north of England. The sentence was as follows:

"As William Pitt once said: 'I am guilty of the damnable crime of being a young man,'"

Now it happened that the owners of the literary syndicate were three young men named Tillotson, and my quotation appealed to them so strongly that I was given the job among all other applicants.

So there I was in the most hideous town in England as a literary editor who had to select stories and articles—many of them by famous writers—for syndication in the provincial press.

It was interesting work, but not well paid. To earn a bit extra, now having a beautiful wife, I wrote a weekly article of my own under the terrific title of "Knowledge Is Power."

Like Sir Francis Bacon, I took "all knowledge to be my province." I wrote about the great masters of literature. I dealt with philosophy, ethics, history, and many aspects of life. Since boyhood I had been a great reader, but I must confess that I had to "mug up" many of the subjects upon which I wrote with apparent authority—just one week before the article appeared.

These articles had a wide success in the provincial press, and I received a great number of letters. Many of them came from Canada, Australia, Africa, and other far places. This was due to my articles appearing in The Weekly Scotsman, for wherever a Scot had planted himself, he was followed by that weekly paper. My essays on Shakespeare, Dr. Johnson, Sir Walter Scott, and others appealed to these Scottish exiles, and I had an interesting correspondence with them. Many of these letters from lonely people in the far places of the earth were written as though to a personal friend and told their own adventures and way of life.

I felt rather a fraud at times because my correspondents assumed that I was a man (Continued on page 17)

the pages of of Mark Twe curious fact. Celebrated J 1867 and co ing) the pub 1880, all of including To lished in Ha Bliss, who " American Pu ginning in Huckleberry published in Webster & being the h Annie Moffa pletely unde himself. But between the Hartford a 1885 by his This gap is three titles. lished, not in but in Bosto by friend of Maine. The Elephant (1 per (1882), (1883) came never been to until 1959 n James Riple —nothing, a Fortunate

Mark Twai

author arriv

rected. Late

of his Bosto

The Rise on by Carl J. W

College Pres

Twain's ass

is given car

chapter abou

about Osgoo

-16

# Mark Twain and the Man from Maine

Cyril Clemens

te in the north of England.
s as follows:
Pitt once said: 'I am guilty
e crime of being a young

ned that the owners of the te were three young men and my quotation appealed ngly that I was given the ther applicants.

s in the most hideous townliterary editor who had to l articles—many of them by for syndication in the pro-

ing work, but not well paid. tra, now having a beautiful weekly article of my own ic title of "Knowledge Is

is Bacon, I took "all knowlrovince." I wrote about the f literature. I dealt with s, history, and many asce boyhood I had been a I must confess that I had ny of the subjects upon ith apparent authorityfore the article appeared. had a wide success in the and I received a great numlany of them came from ia, Africa, and other far due to my articles appearlu Scotsman, for wherever ed himself, he was followed per. My essays on Shakeson, Sir Walter Scott, and o these Scottish exiles, and sting correspondence with these letters from lonely places of the earth were to a personal friend and ventures and way of life. fraud at times because my sumed that I was a man ued on page 17)

Anyone who has looked attentively into the pages of Merle Johnson's Bibliography of Mark Twain must have been struck by a curious fact. After the publication of The Celebrated Jumping Frog in New York in 1867 and continuing down to (and including) the publication of A Tramp Abroad in 1880, all of Mark Twain's major works, including Tom Sawyer in 1876, were published in Hartford, Connecticut, by Elisha Bliss, who "traded" under the name of the American Publishing Company, whereas beginning in 1885 with the publication of Huckleberry Finn, Mark Twain's books were published in New York City by Charles L. Webster & Company — Charles Webster being the husband of Mark Twain's niece Annie Moffatt and (as a publisher) completely under the thumb of Mark Twain himself. But in between these two seriesbetween the books published 1869-1880 in Hartford and the books published after 1885 by his nephew—there is a brief hiatus. This gap is filled in Merle Johnson's list by three titles. These three books were published, not in Hartford and not in New York, but in Boston; and they were published not by friend or nephew but by a man from Maine. The story of how The Stolen White Elephant (1882), The Prince and the Pauper (1882), and Life on the Mississippi (1883) came to be published in Boston has. never been told in any detail, chiefly because until 1959 nothing had been published about James Ripley Osgood, the man from Maine -nothing, at least, in book-length form.

Fortunately, before the centennial of Mark Twain's beginning as a published author arrives, this omission has been corrected. Late in 1959 a full-length biography of his Boston publisher at last appeared: The Rise and Fall of James Ripley Osgood by Carl J. Weber (Waterville, Maine: Colby College Press, 1959; \$8). In this book Mark Twain's association with James R. Osgood is given careful treatment, with a special chapter about Life on the Mississippi and about Osgood's trip down the river with

Mark a year before the publication of the famous book.

There are also accounts of Mark Twain's trip with Osgood to Montreal, and of trips and meetings in New York and Boston, of their association as members of The Kinsmen club, and of Osgood's attempts—some successful and others failures—to play critic and literary adviser to Mark.

The author of this belated biography of James Osgood is Carl J. Weber, professor emeritus of English at Colby College, who has appeared in these pages on various occasions in the past, in connection with Thomas Hardy, A. E. Housman, Henry James, and various other authors. His biography of Osgood has an interesting chapter on Charles Dickens, with whom Osgood travelled during the novelist's American tour in 1867-68, and many pages devoted to the publisher's contacts with William Dean Howells, Henry James, Bret Harte, Walt Whitman, and others.

Osgood often visited Mark Twain in Hartford, and after the publisher's death in London (in 1892), where he is buried, Mark Twain remarked, with affectionate reminiscence, "Osgood was a lovely fellow."

#### MY FIRST BOOK

(Continued from page 16)

of great learning and wisdom, whereas I was a fair-faced youth, grabbing at knowledge from week to week. May God forgive me after more than fifty years!

One day there came into my room an author well known in his time named Cutliffe Hyne. When he saw me, he burst out laughing and laughed until the tears came into his eyes.

"What's the joke?" I asked, slightly embarrassed.

I was the joke. For months he had been reading my "Knowleddge Is Power" and had the idea that I was a venerable man with a long white beard. My extremely youthful appearance struck him as being very comical.

# A Connecticut Yankee as a Revolutionary Document

John DeWitt McKee

Much has been said about Mark Twain's final ability to achieve perspective in The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn. The same thing might be said — and with the same amount of truth — about A Connecticut Vankee in King Arthur's Court. And the qualification must be made, because Mark Twain was never able to achieve true objectivity. In a sense Huckleberry Finn on the Mississippi and Hank Morgan in Camelot are both Mark Twain. As Bernard DeVoto believes, this strange man could not objectify his fiction, and, paradoxically, he could not make the direct revelation of autobiography.<sup>1</sup>

But if Mark Twain is a personal and private writer in that his viewpoint character is almost always, in essence, himself, he is also universal in that he is hardly ever speaking only of America in the nineteenth century or, as in Joan, of France of the fifteenth century, or of England of the sixth century; he is speaking of and to mankind. For that reason a study of A Connecticut Yankee as a revolutionary document should be a rewarding one.

Bernard DeVoto has interpreted Huckleberry Finn as a social criticism, or at least as having social implications concerning America, and others have followed him in that interpretation.2 If this interpretation is valid, and I think it is, then the evaluation of A Connecticut Yankee as a social document is at least equally so. John R. Hoben makes a good case for Twain's feud with Matthew Arnold and his increasing Anglophobia as the catalyst which turned A Connecticut Yankee into a scathingly anti-British harangue, and, more than incidentally, into a much better book than it might otherwise have been.3 But, granting the Anglophobia, and granting the need of some such catalyst as Arnold's superior attitude toward America, granting even the prevailing American penchant for twisting the lion's tail, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court is far more than a blast at England, far more than a blast at the twin anachronisms of Church and State. This book, written at the peak of Twain's power, at the edge of the long descent, is a revolutionary novel.

Mr. DeVoto quotes a letter from Edmund Clarence Stedman to Mark Twain:

Some blasted fool will surely jump up and say that Cervantes polished off chivalry long ago, etc. After a time he'll discover, perhaps, that you are going at the *still existing* radical principles or fallacies which made "chivalry possible once and servility and flunkeyism and tyranny possible now.4

And Mark Twain himself says, in his preface to A Connecticut Yankee:

The ungentle laws and customs touched upon in this tale are historical, and the episodes which are used to illustrate them are also historical. It is not pretended that these laws and customs existed in England in the sixth century: no, it is only pretended that inasmuch as they existed in English and other civilizations of far later times, it is safe to consider that it is no libel upon the sixth century to suppose them to have been in practice in that day also. One is quite justified in inferring that whatever one of these laws and customs was lacking in that remote time, its place was competently filled by a worse one.5

Twain's attacks on the Catholic Church "as the begetter of slavery, the enfranchisement of privilege and corruption and injustice, the source of cruelty and superstition and intolerance . . . "6 have long been noted; and his bitter laughter at the tradition—which has come down today to empty titles and guided tours through the feudal castles—is part of the explicit satire of the book.

But it is the institution itself which is evil; the individual may be good or evil him-

self, reg
fore Me
thirteenhas grov
speet hin
take the
mother,
tice," th
This can
and be
him who
law, and
law send
and it is
her whe
starve w
law is r
her igno

Thus
is at fat
which n
knowing
Church,
ating ar

We s
goes on
good ma
man, ca
he serve
between
manity i
man. De
at the r
the risk
his own
But hun
instituti
of hang
bril sho
songs. I
whippin
"the ex
handled

Hank fluctuat goodnes a convic When I rather

# ary Document

far more than a blast at than a blast at the twin Church and State. This peak of Twain's power, long descent, is a revolu-

ites a letter from Edmund to Mark Twain:

fool will surely jump Cervantes polished off o, etc. After a time he'll os, that you are going ng radical principles or nade "chivalry possible ity and flunkeyism and now,4

ain himself says, in his necticut Yankee:

ws and customs touched are historical, and the are used to illustrate istorical. It is not pree laws and customs exd in the sixth century; retended that inasmuch in English and other ar later times, it is safe it is no libel upon the suppose them to have in that day also. One in inferring that whatlaws and customs was remote time, its place filled by a worse one.5 on the Catholic Church slavery, the enfranchiseand corruption and injuscruelty and superstition
"6 have long been noted; ghter at the traditions of hivalric tradition-which day to empty titles and ngh the feudal castles—is it satire of the book. institution itself which is

may be good or evil him-

self, regardless of the institution. Hence before Merlin puts Hank Morgan into his thirteen-century sleep, the Yankee machinist has grown to like King Arthur, and to respect him. Hence there is a kindly priest to take the child of the condemned young mother. "Law is intended to mete out justice," the priest says. "Sometimes it fails. This cannot be helped. We can only grieve, and be resigned, and pray for the soul of him who falls unfairly by the arm of the law, and that his fellows may be few. The law sends this poor young thing to deathand it is right. But another law had placed her where she must commit her crime or starve with her child-and before God that law is responsible for both her crime and her ignominious death!"7

Thus it is not the king nor the priest who is at fault; it is the institution, the State, which moves stupidly and often with unknowing and uncaring cruelty, and the Church, which abets the state by perpetuating and encouraging superstition.

We see King Arthur as a man when he goes on his tour in disguise, and he is a good man. The only priest we see is a good man, caught in the toils of the institution he serves. The same comparison is made between individual common men and humanity in the mass. Marco is a simple, good man. Dowley, the smith, overpays his help at the risk of the law. The king himself, at the risk of the Church's displeasure and of his own life, helps Hank in the smallpox hut. But humanity in the mass is as evil as the institutions it erects. Mobs make pienies out of hangings and run along beside the tumbril shouting obscenities and singing ribald songs. Pilgrims on a holy quest watch the whipping of a slave girl and comment on "the expert way in which the whip was

Hank Morgan's attitude toward mankind fluctuates continually between man's innate goodness, a romantic faith in education, and a conviction that the human race is damned. When Marko offers to go to the gallows' rather than report his relatives for killing the lord and burning the castle, Hank says:

There it was, you see. A man is a man, at bottom. Whole ages of abuse and oppression cannot crush the manhood clear out of him . . . Yes, there is plenty good enough material for a republic in the most degraded people that ever lived-even the Russians; plenty of manhood in them-even in the Germans -if one could but force it out of its timid and suspicious privacy, to overthrow and trample in the mud any throne that ever was set up, and any nobility that ever supported it . . . .

When he first discovered that he was in the sixth century, Hank reconciled himself to it this way:

. . . If . . . it was really the sixth century, all right, I didn't want any softer thing: I would boss the whole country inside of three months; for I judged I would have the start of the best-educated man in the kingdom by a matter of thirteen hundred years and upward . . .

In another place, he says, "Training training is everything; training is all there is to a person. We speak of nature; it is folly; there is no such thing as nature; what we call by that misleading name is merely heredity and training . . . "10 Yet only a few lines further on, he says, "And as for me, all that I think of in this plodding and pilgrimage, this pathetic drift between the eternities, 11 is to look out and humbly live a pure and high and blameless life, and save that one microscopic item in me that is truly mc: the rest may land in Sheol for all I care." <sup>12</sup>

The only banner around which the novel finds a kind of unity is the banner of revolution. The human race may be damned; nothing ultimately may be done for this sorry creature, man; but at the very least a revolution might amcliorate some of his suffering while he drifts pathetically between eternities. Stedman focused the importance of this aspect of the book when he spoke of "tyranny . . . now." Twain was

#### MARK TWAIN JOURNAL

beating no dead horse when he railed against the monarchy of the sixth century. Witness the references to Russia and to Germany in the passages already quoted, and Twain's insistence on a broad application of the story in the passage quoted from the preface.

The revolutionary aspect of the novel begins with Hank Morgan's analysis of the power of the Catholic Church, an analysis which continues throughout the book, but is at its clearest when Hank compares the power of the king, who is a slave to the Church, with his own intellectual and political powers as The Boss-The Boss who is outside the power of the Church. It is clearer, too, in his comparison of the hereditary power of the nobility and of his own power, drawn from the people. 13 "Unlimited power is the ideal thing when it's in safe hands," Hank says. The trouble is, the only safe hands are perfect hands, and the only perfect hands are the hands of God. Among necessarily imperfect men, Hank concludes, "an earthly despotism is not only a bad form of government, it is the worst form of government."14

Although in the end he sees them as slaves of their own apathy, everywhere Hank Morgan is on the side of the people. Of the French Revolution, he says:

There were two "Reigns of Terror," if we would but remember it and consider it; the one wrought murder in hot passion, the other in heartless cold blood; the one lasted mere months, the other lasted a thousand years; the one inflicted death on ten thousand persons, the other upon a hundred millions . . . What is the horror of swift death by the ax compared with lifelong death from hunger, cold, insult, cruelty, and heartache? 15

Did Mark Twain take up the clothes symbol from Carlyle's Sartor Resartus and cut it to fit the pattern of his own democratic doctrine? From the internal evidence, it would seem so.

You see, my kind of loyalty was loyalty to one's country, not to its institu-

As always in A Connecticut Yankee, Mark Twain's attack here is a double-barrelled one, and he soon lets go the other barrel at the Church in the matter of political liberty:

Hank Morgan could work nineteenth-century magic for sixth-century England. He could build it factories and shot-towers and schools, but he could not give it liberty; for that there had to be a revolution. The monarchy and the Church and their evils had grown too deeply into the soil of England to be rooted out in any other way; and the people, the soil upon which this corruption had fed itself for so many centuries, were inured to the corruption. The damned, as Mr. DeVoto says, had accepted their damnation.

"... all gentle cant and philosophizing to the contrary notwithstanding," Hank Morgan says, "no people in the world ever did achieve their freedom by goody-goody talk and moral suasion: it being immutable law that all revolutions that succeed must begin in blood, whatever may answer afterward." (Continued on page 24)

Altho
"Heart
contemp
serially
months
developr
pletely
predeces
transmu
tion int
sentimer
From
indeed
Conrad
he said,
ful reg
the mem

To r the two time, it Sawyer in Mar of a b occupat youthfu tively Hucklet from a world Danger but exis From there i consists like Co Darkne "wistfu ness" to

The end of the state of the sta

dways in A Connecticut Yankee, Mark's attack here is a double-barrelled and he soon lets go the other barrel at urch in the matter of political liberty: oncentration of political power is; and an Established Church is only ditical machine; it was invented for; it is nursed, cradled, preserved for; it is an enemy to human liberty, it does no good which it could not better in a split-up and scattered lition...<sup>17</sup>

ik Morgan could work nineteenthy magic for sixth-century England. In the could not give it liberty; at there had to be a revolution. The chy and the Church and their evils rown too deeply into the soil of Engobe rooted out in any other way; a people, the soil upon which this corn had fed itself for so many centuries, nured to the corruption. The damned, r. DeVoto says, had accepted their tion.

I gentle cant and philosophizing to the ry notwithstanding," Hank Morgan no people in the world ever did achieve freedom by goody-goody talk and suasion: it being immutable law that volutions that succeed must begin in whatever may answer afterward,"<sup>18</sup> (Continued on page 24)

# Joseph Conrad and Huckleberry Finn

Frederick R. Karl

Although Joseph Conrad's "Youth" and "Heart of Darkness" were written almost contemporaneously, the latter, published serially in February-April, 1899, only five months after the first story, shows a literary development and an awareness of ideas completely foreign to its shorter and slighter predecessor. Lengthy discourse has been transmuted into apt image, vapid description into muscular prose, and unabashed sentimentality into objective point of view. From "Youth" to "Heart of Darkness" is indeed a step from youth to maturity as Conrad was aware. "Heart of Darkness," he said, is "anything but the mood of wistful regret, of reminiscent tenderness," or the memory of romantic youth.

To relate Conrad's development between the two stories to another author at another time, it is not unlike the passage from Tom Sawyer (1876) to Huckleberry Finn (1884) in Mark Twain's canon. The first is a study of a boy's growth which despite its preoccupation with the darker images of a youthful imagination is nevertheless a relatively light-hearted work. But its sequel, Huckleberry Finn, is a profound projection from a playful boy's world into an adult world of retributive and self-seeking evil. Dangers no longer lurk in the imagination but exist in the realities of the social world. From Tom Sawyer to Huckleberry Finn, there is implied a process of maturity which consists in confronting the real world. Twain, like Conrad with "Youth" and "Heart of Darkness," moved from a youthful tone of "wistful regret" and "reminiscent tenderness" toward a larger and more mature view.

The comparison is not fortuitous. Behind Huckleberry Finn and "Heart of Darkness" there is a basis of similarity and a general kinship of idea, although the methods of each writer are frequently dissimilar. Central to both works is the passage along the rivers Mississippi and Congo respectively, and the relationship between the river and

the shore. Using the freedom of the river as a vast symbol, Twain opposed it to the deceit and treachery of the shore. Built on a series of contrasts, the structure of Huckleberry Finn is kept in balance by the very undercurrent that maintains the balance of the raft—the rhythm of the river itself—a rhythm that conveys the tempi of the novel. Conrad's Congo does not have the purifying qualities of the Mississippi, but it does lead up to and away from the stagnant jungle, the river Styx leading into an Inferno, and by comparison with the shore it is less tainted, less evil. We must remember that it is on the river that Kurtz finally recognizes and voices the horror of his inhumanity.

When Huck grows toward maturity and responsibility, an entire society is undergoing the rites of baptism, either gaining a sense of right conduct or suffering the loss of heart. As a view of society, Huckleberry Finn is a sobering picture, no less than "Heart of Darkness," whose powerful images of deterioration have become insistently relevant to the twentieth century. As studies in human degradation surrounded by the possibilities of regeneration, both works symbolize an era.

The appropriateness of the epigraph to the volume Youth, containing both Conrad stories, a quotation from Grimm's Fairy Tales: " . . . But the dwarf answered: No; something human is dearer to me than the wealth of all the world," is nowhere more apparent than in Conrad's study of the loss of heart and its terrible consequences: specifically, the loss of responsible heart Kurtz. The entire story is structured like an imagist poem on a series of trenchant images whose cumulative effect is to provide a frame for Kurtz, whose loss of human responsibility is the center of the work. More than fifty specifically defined images of a certain uniformity, images that on first sight may seem tangential to the progress of the story, follow one another as an

organic part of the narrative. From the first description of the fog overhanging the sombre Thames, Conrad furnishes the imagistic tone as well as the verbal premonition of what is to come. The Thames regioncharacterized in the days of Roman conquest as having "cold, fog, tempests, disease, exile, and death . . . in the air, in the water, in the bush"—is the Congo of the present day, that "immense snake uncoiled." The account of Marlow's adventure in the Brussels Trading Company Office, where he goes for his assignment, prefaces the description of the Congo; the office, as "arid as a desert," inhabited by two women, "one fat and the other slim, [who] sat on straw-bottomed chairs, knitting black wool." While guarding the gates of Hell through which Marlow is seeking entrance, these two Parcae are feverishly knitting the fate of the Congo expedition.

When Marlow finally embarks for the Congo, the barren, heartless tone is immediately set by the futile landing of the soldiers and clerks in "what looked like a Godforsaken wilderness. . . . They were just flung out there, and on we went." Then soon after, Marlow remarks the sterile French gunboat: "There wasn't even a shed there [on shore], and she was shelling the bush. . . . In the empty immensity of earth, sky, and water, there she was, incomprehensible, firing into a continent." The main images of the story are concerned with death and decay and futility, with metallic and inflexible substances, with cold and hard stuffs which resist human manipulation, the unresisting matter of machinery weighed down by decay and rust. T. S. Eliot's contemplated use of the epigraph—"Mistah Kurtz, he dead"-for The Waste Land and his subsequent use of it for "The Hollow Men" explain the poems as much as the poems explain what Conrad had in mind

Following the journey deeper into the Congo, we meet in quick succession the shelling of the jungle, a hanged Swede, houses with iron roofs wasted and devastated, a rusting boiler, an undersized railway-truck

lying on its back with its wheels in the air, decaying machinery, a stack of rusty nails, and several other like images. Suddenly projected onto this scene of decomposition are the indifferent and moribund savages working until they drop on a project they can never understand, no less fulfill. Wasted shades settled in the corners of hell, they convey the same sense of personal hopelessness and futility that Dante conceived for the dwellers of the Inferno, those other representatives of the nadir of spirit and vitality. Conrad describes them as unearthly, nearer dead than alive:

Black shapes crouched, lay, sat between the trees, leaning against the trunks, clinging to the earth, half coming out, half effaced within the dim light, in all attitudes of pain, abandonment, and despair. . . . They were not enemies, they were not criminals, they were nothing earthly now—nothing but black shadows of disease and starvation, lying confusedly in the greenish gloom.

Near the same tree two more bundles of acute angles sat with their legs drawn up. One, with his chin propped on his knees, stared at nothing, in an intolerable and appalling manner: his brother phantom rested its [sic] forchead, as if overcome with a great weariness; and all about others were scattered in every pose of contorted collapse, as in some picture of a massacre or a pestilence.

Among these shades of once-vigorous men, the pathological Kurtz is a god-devil who has power, intelligence, and loyal followers—all but morality and responsible humanity. Marlow has descended into the underworld and found a modern god, one, however, emasculated of Christian feeling, a mechanical man driven by strength of will alone. The presence of images rooted in hard and mechanical contrivances, extending even to the natives themselves, is an acute prefiguration of Kurtz himself, who is as corrupt and

as metallic as the decaying m imagery, the into darkness into the Congo in Kurtz's act universal strug depths of man' and substance,

Kurtz's own his greed when very substance ciously acquisi ment on Europ him from a bo and nihilistic ficing human : his triumph predatory sta adored, appro fours, a "pit powers have b ual sway rem pale mass of v infinite even Kurtz's quest his role, like a Black Mass Not the least his "savage whose presence and mysterio worthy count idol.

In Conrad' world in which human image, of human grammineteenth-cen with its aver tive spirit and horrors inhere closes out the resounding slaven though recognizes the humanity, his remedy for w

And:

s back with its wheels in the air, nachinery, a stack of rusty nails, I other like images. Suddenly proposition are rent and moribund savages work-hey drop on a project they can erstand, no less fulfill. Wasted tled in the corners of hell, they same sense of personal hopelessfutility that Dante conceived for s of the *Inferno*, those other reps of the nadir of spirit and vitalid describes them as unearthly, I than alive:

than anvethe trees, leaning against the
clinging to the earth, half comhalf effaced within the dim
all attitudes of pain, abandonnd despair. . . . They were not
they were not criminals, they
thing earthly now—nothing but
hadows of disease and starvaing confusedly in the greenish

the same tree two more bundles te angles sat with their legs up. One, with his chin propped knees, stared at nothing, in an ble and appalling manner: his phantom rested its [sic] fores if overcome with a great weariad all about others were scattered y pose of contorted collapse, as e picture of a massacre or a ce.

these shades of once-vigorous men, plogical Kurtz is a god-devil who r, intelligence, and loyal followers morality and responsible humanity. as descended into the underworld d a modern god, one, however, ed of Christian feeling, a mechanidriven by strength of will alone. ence of images rooted in hard and al contrivances, extending even to sthemselves, is an acute prefiguraturtz himself, who is as corrupt and

as metallic as the rotting railroad car and the decaying machinery. The light and dark imagery, the progression from civilization into darkness as the boat proceeds deeper into the Congo, the loss of humanity implicit in Kurtz's activities—all these point to a universal struggle played out upon the lower depths of man's behavior, an Inferno in form and substance.

Kurtz's own ivory top defines graphically his greed whereby he becomes part of the very substance he has coveted. Kurtz's ferociously acquisitive nature is trenchant comment on European imperialism which changed him from a bounding idealist into a diabolic and nihilistic intransigent who, while sacrificing human solidarity and sympathy, seeks his triumph in brutish degradation. As a predatory statesman, Kurtz is like a god, adored, approached by his disciples on all fours, a "pitiful Jupiter" whose physical powers have been stripped but whose spiritual sway remains strong. A vaporish and pale mass of willful power, he dreams of the infinite even while he draws his last breath. Kurtz's quest is for materialistic power, and his role, like that of a priest officiating at a Black Mass, is to play a devilish diety. Not the least of Kurtz's devoted following is his "savage and superb" pagan goddess, whose presence as a symbol of the "fecund and mysterious life" of the Congo is a worthy counterpart of her once-powerful idol.

In Conrad's presentment of a modern world in which material image is one with human image, we have a symbolic re-creation of human greed that finds kinship with Twain's own view of a money-worshipping nineteenth-century America. Conrad's story, with its aversion to the amoral acquisitive spirit and with its dramatization of the horrors inherent in the loss of responsibility, closes out the nineteenth century with a resounding shriek of moral disapproval. Even though Kurtz at the moment of death recognizes the infinite horrors of his inhumanity, his moral vistory is no easy remedy for what he had perpetrated. And

even though Marlow's journey up the Congo ends in his returning with a repentant devil, the memory of this redeemed soul must be preserved by a lie. Like Twain, Conrad recognized that civilized society, unable to accept unadorned reality, must romanticize its idols under a cloak of lies: that civilization per se is a commitment to untruth. All that remained to the spiritually exhausted Marlow was the faith of Kurtz's fiancee, rooted as she was not in reality but in illusions; and yet, ironically, her faith, like Huck's at the end of Twain's novel, remained the only light under a sky "that seemed to lead into the heart of an immense darkness."

# LAST TIME I SAW MARK TWAIN (Continued from page 8)

presses what I mean I use it twice, and maybe three times, in the same sentence."

I took his advice and went on reading. When I had finished, with no further interruption from him, Mr. Clemens stopped in front of me.

"Did you take notes while I was talking?" he asked.

"You know that I did not. I was afraid you would quit on me."

He chuckled at that.

"Well, your story is all right. Here, let me have it." And taking the sheaf of copy and my pencil, he wrote at the top of the first page:

"O.K. S.L.C."

"There, show 'em that." And then, giving me an affectionate pat on the shoulder: "Do you know, my boy, I think we'd get along first rate together."

The little man with the bushy white hair, the broad, high forehead, and shaggy brows stood in his dinner coat on the steps of his home and waved me a good-bye. I never saw him again.

It may be unnecessary to add that my story, watermelon cure and all, went upstairs early that evening, marked:

"MUST. RUN FULL. FIRST PAGE."

-23-

#### SHERWOOD ANDERSON

(Continued from page 5) good" and the joy of "looking at horses" has been spoiled. Experience has set them

I believe that the parallels between "I Want to Know Why" and Huckleberry Finn are too extensive to be merely coincidental. Anderson was all his life, and especially in the years before the composition of the story, much preoccupied with the masterpiece of the novelist whom he called one of "the two or three really great American artists." I think it reasonable to assume that "I Want to Know Why," to use Anderson's own words about another story of his, "holds water" because it is like "Mark Twain at his best, the Huckleberry Finn Mark

wain. "10

. Horace Gregory, ed., The Portable Sherwood Anderson (New York, 1949), p. 9. Irving Howe, Sherwood Anderson (New York, 1945), pp. 94, 124.

! Howard Mumford Jones and Walter B. Rideout, eds., The Letters of Sherwood Anderson (Boston, 1953), p. 31. (Hereinafter cited as Letters.)

! Letters, p. 102.

! Ibid., p. 37.

! It is interesting to note that Huckleberry Finn was more than a great novel to Anderson. In time, it came to represent a symbol of the artist's great creative effort, toward which his work tended, or at least ought to tend. Once when he was lamenting Ring Lardner's avoidance of serious fiction, he commented that the waste would be understandable if only Lardner were gathering force for "his Huckleberry Finn." That Lardner wasn't, constituted for Anderson a tragedy of the artist as a young man. ("Four American Impressions," New Republic, 32 (October 11, 1922.) p. 172.)

Anderson underscores the falsity of the town's

172.)
 Anderson underscores the falsity of the town's judgment later in the story when he has Mr. Rieback refuse to go into the brothel with the rest of the men.
 James M. Cox, "Remarks on the Sad Initiation of Huckleberry Finn," Sewanee Review, 62 (Summer, 1954), pp. 389-405.
 Letters, p. 3.
 Ibid., p. 102.

#### CONNECTICUT YANKEE

(Continued from page 20)

It seems to me that we have in A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court what could have been one of the greatest and most passionate expressions of democratic faith in the nineteenth century. That it failed to live up to its potential can be laid, I think, to several causes. In the first place, Mark Twain functioned almost exclusively as a critic of his time. He could diagnose, but he could not prescribe. In the second

place, he seemingly could not sustain the savage satire which makes up most of the democratic testament; he must forever, by his very nature and literary training, slip from wit into humor and from humor into sheer burlesque. Finally, he gave a slender idea—the idea of what would happen if a nineteenth century Connecticut gun-maker were suddenly dumped into sixth century England-too great a load to carry. This willing little pony has been made to carry a Clydesdale's portion of slavery, injustice, tyranny, the chivalric tradition, the despotism of the Church, the pitiable apathy of men, their superstition and their child-like ignorance. No wonder Mark Twain occasionally found himself riding off in all directions. He is like Hank Morgan at the tournament: there are too many enemies against whom to break a lance.

But for all its faults, it may be that A Connecticut Yankee has more things to say to more people than even Huckleberry Finn, Twain's one generally admitted masterpiece. Insofar as its main purpose is concerned, one could no more call A Connecticut Yankee mere frontier humor than one could call "A Modest Proposal" a whimsical essay.

Hank Morgan's revolution failed, and we can see in that failure, if we will, what Mr. DeVoto calls futility; but I prefer to think that, given enough young men who have been freed from the tyrannies and superstitions of their fathers, and enough time and patience to educate those young men-perhaps only a few at first, but with each generation, more-mankind may finally find its way out of Merlin's cave.

Bernard DeVoto, "Introduction," Mark Twain in Eruption (New York: Grosset & Duniap, 1940), p. XXI.

Ibid, p. XXIII.

John R. Hoben, "Mark Twain's A Connecticut Yankee: A Genetic Study," American Literature, XVIII (1946), 197-218.

Bernard DeVoto, Mark Twain's America, (Cambridge: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1951), p. 212 n.

212 n.
All references to A Connecticut Vankee are from The Family Mark Twain (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1935). Above quotation, p. 654.
Bernard DeVoto, Mark Twain's America, p. 272.
'A Connecticut Vankee in King Arthur's Court, XXXV, 838.
Ibid., XXX, 838.
Ibid., XXX, 808.
Ibid., XXX, 808.
Ibid., XXIII, 731.
Ibid., XIII, 708.
Ibid., XVIII, 731.
Ic. Ibid., XVIII, 730.
Ioc. cit., XVIII, 731.
Is. Ibid., XXX, 741.

the poulti and hens In a sunn on one le tened to " 'So,' they are we'll see.

"He shouted, "Imme geese was feet.

" 'Well " 'Well "shoo" to Having

Twain

roguishly The la Clemens, us a few

Mark hoarsene down at provised began to aside, he tenor vo

Most o David ar about Je roah's d were mar and seve they wer endowed Mark T "Mose

voices de Mark on the pi to have them." T with rea

Later Finland. Twain's andra G populari tain you nated by that his ram here That am

could not sustain the makes up most of the n makes up most of the nt; he must forever, by d literary training, slip or and from humor into nally, he gave a slender that would happen if a

Connecticut gun-maker nped into sixth century a load to carry. This has been made to carry ion of slavery, injustice, ric tradition, the despothe pitiable apathy of tion and their child-like Her Mark Twain occaalf riding off in all direcink Morgan at the touroo many enemies against ance.

ults, it may be that A has more things to say even Huckleberry Finn. ly admitted masterpiece. purpose is concerned. Il A Connecticut Yankee or than one could call al" a whimsical essay. evolution failed, and we re, if we will, what Mr. v; but I prefer to think young men who have tyrannies and superstis, and enough time and those young men-perirst, but with each geneind may finally find its cave.

troduction," Mark Twain in k: Grosset & Dunlap, 1940)

lark Twain's A Connections Study," American Literature rk Twain's America, (Cam-Mifflin Company, 1951), p

Connecticut Vankee are from wain (New York: Harper & e quotation, p. 654.

\*\*k Twain's America, p. 272.

\*\*ee in King Arthur's Court,
13. Ibid., VIII, 687-88.
14. Ibid., X, 694.
15. Ibid., X, 11I 708.
16. Ibid., p. 709.
17. Ibid., XVIII, 730.
18. Ibid., XX, 741.

LADY FROM FINLAND

(Continued from page 10) the poultry yard, where the geese, turkeys, and hens vied with each other in gabbling. In a sunny corner several dozing geese stood on one leg, and the cook immediately hastened to point them out to his master.

"'So,' said the master, 'you think that they are created with only one leg. Well, we'll see.'

"He clapped his hands together and shouted, 'Shoo!'

"Immediately the legs came down and the geese waddled off, cackling, on their two

"'Well?' said the master triumphantly. "'Well, but-I guess massa didn't shout

"shoo" to the roast."

Having told the story this far, Mark Twain stopped, peered at his listeners roguishly, and then became silent.10

The ladies whispered something to Mrs. Clemens, who said, "My dear, won't you sing us a few Negro songs tonight?"

Mark Twain mumbled something about hoarseness and a nasty cold, but he sat down at the piano anyway. At first he improvised with his pipe in his mouth, then he began to hum, and finally, putting his pipe aside, he sang in a worn-out but still clear tenor voice several Negro songs.

Most of the songs were spiritual and told about Moses and Pharoah, Saul and David, David and Goliath, and so forth. One song about Joseph as the interpreter of Pharoah's dreams was rather playful. There were many references in it to seven fat cows and seven lean cows. Otherwise, even though they were monotonous and sad, they were endowed with emotional, wild poetry, which Mark Twain interpreted very well.

"Moses! Moses! Sing about Moses!" many voices demanded.

Mark Twain struck a few merry chords on the piano and began a comical song about a certain Negro called Moses "who wanted to have golden slippers but couldn't get them." That was the refrain and was sung with real American, Mark Twain humor.<sup>11</sup>

Later in the evening the talk centered on Finland. In answer to a question about Mark Twain's reputation in her native land, Alexandra Gripenberg gave definite proof of his popularity there. She told them about a certain young man in Helsinki who was so fascinated by Twain's "Story of the Old Ram"12 that his wife wished she could slaughter the ram herself in order to stop hearing about it. That amused the American humorist so much that he, as he said .amself, "inhaled too much tobacco smoke" and had to leave the room to cough it out.

On his return Mark Twain again crouched in his low armchair and took part in the conversation. He talked on until a late hour, humorously, modestly, pleasantly, and brilliantly. The whole while it seemed to the Finnish visitor, who had heard that Twain was always ready to slip money secretly into the hand of the whole world, as though she could hear under his words the beating of his great, warm heart.

It was late when the party came to an end and the company parted, each one walking home in the dim spring night along the fragrant, tree-shaded streets. Mark Twain lived only a few houses below the one where Alexandra Gripenberg was staying as a guest, and that very same night one of his servants delivered a small, thin package to his newly acquired Finnish acquaintance. In it was Mark Twain's photograph, on which he had written in his own peculiar hand,

- he had written in his own peculiar hand,
  "In memory of the old ram. Your friend,
  Mark Twain, i.e., S. L. Clemens."

  1. Mark Twain, "Private History of the Jumping
  Frog Story." North American Review, CLVIII
  (April, 1894), 446. This article was later reprinted
  in his Literary Essays.

  2. "Aleksandra Gripenberg," Iso Tietosanakirja, IV
  (1933), 83.

  3. Alexandra Gripenberg, A Half Year in the New
  World: Miscellaneous Sketches of Travel in the
  United States, translated and edited by Ernest
  John Moyne (Newark, Delaware, 1954). This work
  was originally published in Swedish as Ett halfar
  i Nya Verlden: Strodda resebilder fran Forenta
  Staterna (Helsinki, 1889); it was translated into
  Finnish by Hilda Asp as Uudesta maalimasta:
  Hajanalsia matkakuvia Ameriikasta (Helsinki,
  1891).

  1. Ibid. p. 68.

- Hajanaisia matkakuvia Amerikasta (Helsinki, 1891).
  Ibid., p. 68.
  Ibid., p. 68.
  Ibid., p. 69.
  Ibid., p. 69.
  Ibid., p. 69.
  Ibid., p. 69.
  Hopkinson Smith's story, entitled "Ginger and the Goose" appeared in Harper's New Monthly Magazine, LXIV (March, 1882), 138-40. For Smith's source, see Giovanni Boccaccio, Tales from the Decameron, translated by Richard Aldington (New York, 1930), pp. 199-201: "Chichiblo, Cook to Currado Gianfigliazzi, Changes Currado's Anger to Laughter, and So Escapes the Him."
- xandra Gripenberg, pp. 70-71.
- Alexandra Gripenberg, pp. 1bid., pp. 11-72. Chapter XII. Volume II. of Roughing II., originally printed in 1872. contains the story of "Jim Blaine and His Grandfather's Ram." See Mark Twain, Roughing It ("Author's National Edition, Twenther Writings of Mark Twain," VIII (New York, 1913), 120-27);
- 13. Alexander Gripenberg, p. 72.

#### MARK TWAIN'S 'PLUG' AND 'CHAW'

- MARK TWAIN'S 'PLUG' AND 'CHAW'
  (Continued from page 11)

  1. Mark Twain, Adventures of Huckleberry Finn (New York, 1885), p. 183.

  2. From the journal of David H. Strother, August 9, 1873, Used with the permission of its owner, Mr. D. H. Strother of Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

  3. The meeting occurred at the Penn Club following the speeches by descendants of the signers of the Declaration of Independence at Liberty Hall. Strother wrote: "Major Etting did the honours and I was feted with many introductions, Col. Hoyt of Boston and the Dept, of the Gulf in 1862-63, Mark Twain, Genl. Lew Wallace, Senator Kelley, Cox, Lamden, and Rush and others whose names I have forgotten." Journal, July 1, 1876.

The dedication of the Mark Twain Birthplace Memorial Shrine was held at the Mark Twain State Park, near Florida, Missouri, on Sunday, June Fifth.

The following tributes were sent to Cyril Clemens and read by him at the

Beginning in early boyhood, I have read virtually everything of Mark Twain's that has been published, and I have always been a great admirer of both the man and his work.

#### DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

I well remember reading Mark Twain's books when I was a boy, and it is my hope that the youth of our country will continue to be inspired and guided by his fine works.

#### RICHARD M. NIXON

Nobody has been so completely American as Mark Twain. His portrayal of American life, with the most pungent humor in our history, should make his works required reading by every person who attains to education. It is good that his life and works are kept before our people.

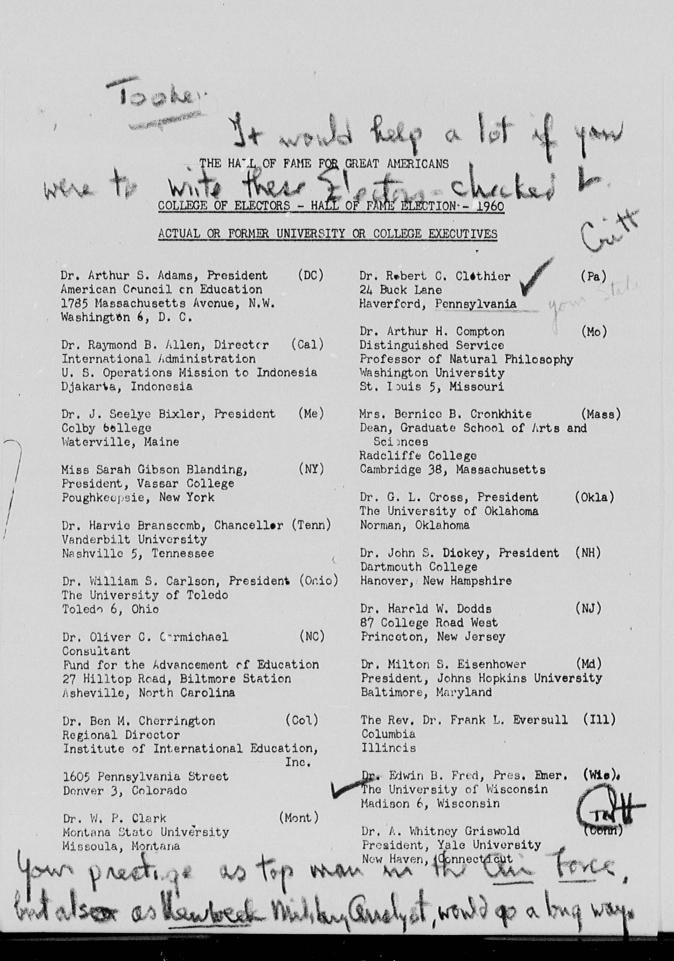
#### HERBERT C. HOOVER

Before I was twelve years old I had read everything Mark Twain had published up to that time. I have the purported complete set of his works and a lot of other publications of articles which have never been included in his books. I am still telling Mark Twain stories.

#### HARRY S. TRUMAN

Mark Twain was great and his writings are lasting because of his keen understanding of people. He was both tolerant and penetrating and blessed with an articulateness which permitted him to translate his thoughts and knowledge into his writings.

#### CHRISTIAN A. HERTER



## ACTUAL OR FORMER UNIVERSITY OR COLLEGE EXECUTIVES (CONTINUED)

Dr. Virgil M. Hancher, President (Iowa State University of Iowa Old Capitol Iowa City, Iowa	Kansas State College Manhattan, Kansas
Dr. John A. Hannah, President (Mich) Michigan State University East Lansing, Michigan	Mrs. Millicent C. McIntosh (NY) President, Barnard College Columbia University New York 27, New York
Dr. Rufus C. Harris, President (La) Tulane University New Orleans 18, Louisiana	Dr. John S. Millis, President (Ohio) Western Reserve University Cleveland 6, Ohio
Dr. David D. Henry, President (Ill) University of Illinois Urbana, Illinois	Dr. J. L. Morrill, President (Minn) University of Minnesota Minneapolis 14, Minnesota
Dr. H. M. Ivy, Director (Miss) The Associated Consultants in Education Post Office Box 729 Meridian, Mississippi	
Dr. Barnaby C. Keeney, President (RI) Brown University Providence 12, Rhode Island	Dr. Roy F. Nichols, Dean (Pa) The Graduate School of Arts and Sciences 101 Bennett Hall
Dr. Grayson Kirk, President (NY) Columbia University New York 27, New York	University of Pennsylvania Philadelphia 4, Pennsylvania Dr. Theophilus S. Painter (Tex)
Dr. J. Howard Kramer, President (SD) Northern State Teachers College Aberdeen, South Dakota	Department of Zoology The University of Texas Austin 12, Texas
Dr. Henry Noble MacCracken (NY) 87 New Hackensack Road Poughkeepsie, New York	Dr. John E. Pomfret, Director (Cal) Henry E. Huntington Library and Art Gallery San Marino 9, California
Dr. Deane W. Malott, President (NY) Cornell University Ithaca, New York	Dr. Nathan M. Pusey, President (Mass) Harvard University Cambridge 38, Massachusetts
Dr. Willfred Mauck, President (Md) Bureau of University Travel 11 Boyd Street Newton, Massachusetts	Dr. Homer P. Rainey (Col) Professor of Higher Education University of Colorado Boulder, Colorado
Dr. Benjamin E. Mays, President (Ga) Morehouse College Atlanta, Georgia	
	-

## ACTUAL OR FORMER UNIVERSITY OR COLLEGE EXECUTIVES (CONTINUED)

Dr. Alexander G. Ruthven	(Mich)	Dr. Herman B. Wells, President	(Ind)
Consultant, Development Council		Indiana University	
University of Michigan		Bloomington, Indiana	
Ann Arbor, Michigan			
		Dr. John C. West	(ND)
Dr. Robert Gordon Sproul	(Cal)	University of North Dakota	
President Emeritus		University Station	
The University of California		Grand Forks, North Dakota	
Berkeley 4, California		orang rorney noron banava	
berkeley 4, oaltornia		Dr. John D. Williams, Chancello	r (Miss)
Professor Irvin Stewart	(W.Va)	The University of Mississippi	1 (11200)
	(11.14)	University, Mississippi	
West Virginia University		oniversity, mississippi	
Morgantown, West Virginia		De Honor M Whiston Progident	(PT)
D C 3 C Ct tt D id	+ (11+)	The American Assembly	. (11)
Dr. Samuel S. Stratton, Presiden	it (Vt)	Dr. Henry M. Wriston, President The American Assembly Columbia University	
Middlebury College	V	Columbia University	
Middlebury, Vermont		New York 27, New York	

## HISTORIANS OR PROFESSORS OF HISTORY OR LITERATURE

Mr. Bruce Catton American Heritage 551 Fifth Avenue New York 17, New York	(NY)	Dr. Allan Nevins Henry E. Huntington Library and Art Gallery San Marino 9, California	(Cal)
Dr. Guy Stanton Ford 3133 Sonnecticut Avenue, N. W. Washington 8, D. C.	(DC)	Dr. James C. Olson, Chairman Department of History The University of Nebraska Lincoln 8, Nebraska	(Neb)

## SCIENTISTS

Dr. Roy Chapman Andrews Live Cak Lane Carmel Valley, California	(Cal)	The Rockefeller Institute York Avenue and 66th Street New York 21, New York	(NI)
Dr. Danald C. Balfour 200 First Street, S. W. Rochester, Minnesota	(Minn)	Dr. Cecil W. Creel 301 Country Club Drive Reno, Nevada	(Nev)
Dr. A. P. Black Research Professor of Chemistry University of Florida Gainesville, Florida	(Fla)	Dr. C. W. Mayo Mayo Clinic Rochester, Minnesota	(Minn)

## SCIENTISTS (CONTINUED)

Dr. Rebert Oppenheimer, Director (NJ) The Institute for Advanced Study Princeton, New Jersey

Dr. Fairfield Osborn, President The Conservation Foundation 30 East 40th Street New York 16, New York

Dr. Jonas Edward Salk Virus Research Laboratory Terrace and Darragh Streets Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania

r, W.F.G. Swann, Director Bartol Research Foundation Whittier Place Swarthmore, Pennsylvania

Dr. J. C. Walker Department of Plant Pathology The University of Wisconsin Madison 6, Wisconsin

(Pa)

(Wis)

## AUTHORS, EDITORS AND ARTISTS

(Pa)

Miss Marian Anderson Miss Helen Keller (Conn) (Conn) Marianna Farm Arcan Ridge RFD #1 Westport, Connecticut Danbury, Connecticut

Mr. Robert B. Atwood (Alaska) Mr. John Kieran (Mass) Editor and Publisher 25 Norwood Avenue The Anchorage Daily Times Rockport, Massachusetts Box 40, Anchorage, Alaska Mr. Joseph Wood Krutch (Ariz)

Mr. Van Wyck Brooks (Conn) 5041 East Grant Road Bridgewater, Connecticut Tucson, Arizona

Mr. John Dos Passos (Va) Mr. Oliver La Farge (N. Mex) Westmoreland P.O. 647 College Street Westmareland County, Virginia Santa Fe, New Mexico

Mr. Stanly A. Easton El Mirasol Hotel (Cal) Mr. Walter Lippmann (DC) New York Herald Tribune Santa Barbara, California 3525 Woodley Road, N.W. Washington 16, D. C.

(NY) Mr. Hermann Hagedorn, Director Theodore Roosevelt Centennial Mr. Henry R. Luce (NY) Commission Time and Life Building 28 East 20th Street Rockefeller Center New York 3, New York New York 20, w York

Dr. Howard Hanson, Director The University of Rochester (NY) Mr. Ralph McGill, Editor (Ga) The Atlanta Constitution Eastman School of Music V Box 4689 Rochester 4, New York Atlanta 2, Georgia

## AUTHORS, EDITORS AND ARTISTS (CONTINUED)

Mr. Hamilton Owens 7822 Ruxwood Read Riderwood, Baltimore 4, Maryland	(Md)	Dr. Archibald Rutledge Hampton Plantation Route 1, Box 47 McClellanville, South Caroli	(SC)
Dr. Clarence Poe	(NC)		
Senior Editor and Board Chairman The Progressive Farmer Insurance Building		Mr. Carl Sandburg Connemara Farm Flat Rock, North Carolina	(NC)
Raleigh, North Carolina		Mr. Deems Taylor	(NY)
Mr. Eugene C. Pulliam, Publisher The Indianapolis Star and News	(Ind)	2 East 60th Street. New York 22, New York	
307 North Pennsylvania Street Indianapolis, Indiana		Mr. Stark Young 320 East 57th Street	(NY
Mrs. Helen Rogers Reid 834 Fifth Avenue New York 21, New York	(NY)	New York 22, New York	

## MEN AND WOMEN OF AFFAIRS

	The Honorable Bernard M. Baruch (NY) 597 Madison Avenue New York 22, New York	Mr. William T. Gossett (Mich) Vice President, Ford Motor Company The American Road Dearborn, Michigan	
	The Reverend Dr. Arthur J. Brown (NY) 1235 Park Avenue New York 28, New York	Mr. C. H. Greenewalt, President (Del) E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co. Wilmington 98, Delaware	
1	The Honorable Michael F. Doyle (Pa) 1500 Girard Trust Building Broad and South Penn Square Philadelphia, Pennsylvania	Gen. Alfred M. Gruenther (Neb) President, The American Red Cross 13th and D Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.	
	Mr. Cyrus S, Eaton, Chairman (Ohio) The Chesapeake and Ohio Railway Co. Terminal Tower Cleveland 1, Ohio	Mr. Ralph Hayes (Del) Hotel Du Pont Wilmington 99, Delaware	
	Dr. Louis Finkelstein, Chancellor (NY) The Jewish Theological Seminary of America Broadway and 122nd Street	Mr. Henry T. Heald, President (NY) The Ford Foundation 477 Madison Avenue New York 22, New York	
	New York 27, New York  The Reverend Dr. Harry E. Fosdick (NY) Minister Emeritus The Riverside Church Riverside Drive at 122nd Street New York 27, New York	Mr. August Heckscher, Director (NY) The Twentieth Century Fund 41 East 70th Street New York 21, New York	
	- 5		

## MEN AND WOMEN OF AFFAIRS (CONTINUED)

	The Rt. Rev. Henry Wise Hobson Bishop of the So. Ohio Diocese 412 Sycamore Street Cincinnati 2, Ohio	(Ohio)	Dr. Reinhold Niebuhr School of Historical Studies The Institute for Advanced Stu Princeton, New Jersey	(NY)
<b>/</b>	Mr. Paul G. Hoffman 1489 El Mirador Drive Pasadena, California	(Cal)	Mr. Lewis Perry Hotel Vendome 160 Commonwealth Avenue Boston 16, Massachusetts	(Mass)
	Father John LaFarge 329 West 108th Street New York 25, New York	(NY)	Mrs. Franklin D. Roosevelt 55 East 74th Street New York 21, New York	(NY)
	The Rt. Rev. William F. Lewis, STI Bishop Coadjutor of the Diocese of Olympia 1551 Tenth Avenue, North Seattle 2, Washington		Mr. Alfred P. Sloan, Jr. 630 Fifth Avenue Rockefeller Center New York 20, New York	(NY)
	Mr. Thurgood Marshall Director-Counsel NAACP Legal Defense and Education Fund, Inc. 10 Columbus Circle	(NY)	Dr. Charles P. Taft Taft and Lavercombe First National Bank Building Cincinnati 2, Ohio	(Ohio)
	New York 19, New York		Mr. Ower D. Young Van Horne Farms, Inc.	(NY)
	Mr. Thomas W. Martin 600 North 18th Street Birmingham 2, Alabama	(Ala)	Van Hornesville, New York	
	Mr. George Meany, President American Federation of Labor and Congress of Indust. Organizations 815 Sixteenth Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.	(DC)		
	COMMAT OR DOD	MED LITCH DIE	DITC OFFICT/IS	

## ACTUAL OR FORMER HIGH PUBLIC OFFICIALS

	The Honorable Sherman Adams Pollard Road Lincoln, New Hampshire	(NY)	Dr. Ralph J. Bunche (MY) Under Secy of the United Nations New York 17, New York
1	The Honorable Robert B. Anderson The Secretary of the Treasury Washington, D. C.	(Tex)	The Honorable James F. Byrnes (SC) 501 Security Federal Building Columbia, South Carolina
	The Honorable Percival P. Baxter 655 Congress Street Portland, Maine	(Me)	The Honorable Millard F. Caldwell Brook Building (Fla) Tallahassee, Florida

## ACTUAL OR FORMER HIGH PUBLIC OFFICIALS (CONTINUED)

The Honorable LeRoy Collins (Fla)
Governor of Florida
Office of the Governor
Tallahassee, Florida

The Honorable John Sherman Cooper (Ky) Senator from the State of Kentucky United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable L. W. Douglas (Ariz)
Mutual Life Insurance Company
1740 Broadway
New York 19, New York

The Honorable Marriner S. Eccles (Utah)
Chairman of the Board
First Security Corporation
79 South Main Street
Salt Lake City, Utah

The Honorable Ralph E. Flanders (Vt) Senator from the State of Vermont United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable Hiram L. Fong (Hawaii) Senator from the State of Hawaii United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable W. Cameron Forbes (Mass)
J. M. Forbes & Company
199 Washington Street
Boston 8, Massachusetts

The Honorable Felix Frankfurter (DC)
Associate Justice
Supreme Court of the United States
Washington, D. C.

The Honorable J. W. Fulbright (Ark) Senator from the State of Arkansas United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

Dr. Frank P. Graham (NC) United Nations, Room CB 16 New York 17, New York The Honorable Herbert Hoover (NY)
The Waldorf Astoria Towers
New York 22, New York

The Honorable Hubert H. Humphrey (Minn) Senator from the State of Minnesota United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable Jacob K. Javits (NY) Senator from the State of New York United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

or. James R. Killian, Jr. (Mass) Chairman, Mass. Institute of Technology Cambridge, Massachusetts

The Honorable Walter J. Kohler (Wis) 101 Cambridge Road Kohler, Wisconsin

The Honorable Herbert H. Lehman (NY) 41 East 57th Street, Suite 2704 New York 22, New York

The Honorable Neil H. McElroy (Ohio) The Secretary of Defense Washington, D. C.

The Honorable James E. Murray (Mont) Senator from the State of Montana United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable Richard D. Neuberger (Ore) Senator from the State of Oregon United Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable Joseph C. O'Mahoney (Wyo) Senator from the State of Wyoming United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.

The Honorable Mr. Fred A. Seaton (Neb)
The Secretary of the Interior
Washington, D. C.

- 7

#### ACTUAL OR FORMER HIGH PUBLIC OFFICIALS (CONTINUED)

The Honorable Harold E. Stassen (Pa) 1144 Fidelity-Philadelphia Trust Bldg. Philadelphia 9, Pennsylvania

The Honorable Adlai E. Stevenson (Ill) 135 South LaSalle Street Chicago 3, Illinois

The Honorable Hatton W. Sumners (Tex) The Southwestern Legal Ctr. Hillcrest at Daniels Dallas, Texas The Honorable Henry A. Wallace (NY) South Salem New York

The Honorable Arthur V. Watkins (Utah) 1433 North Inglewood Street Arlington, Virginia

#### ACTUAL OR FORMER JUSTICES, NATIONAL OR STATE

(NY)

The Honorable Florence E. Allen (Ohio) Circuit Judge United States Court of Appeals

United States Court of Appeals Cleveland 14, Ohio

The Honorable Learned Hand Judge Learned Hand's Chambers United States Court House New York 7, New York

The Honorable Matthew W. Hill' (Wash) Chief Justice

The Supreme Court State of Washington Olympia, Washington

The Honorable William J. Jameson (Mont)
United States District Judge
United States District Court
District of Montana
Billings, Montana

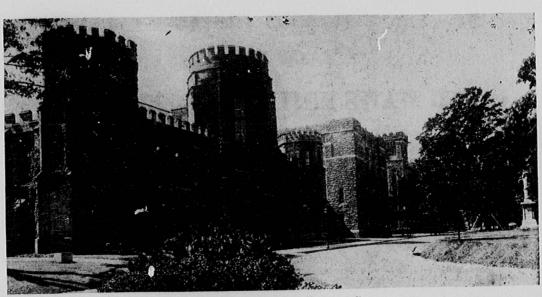
The Honorable John C. Knox (NY)
United States District Court
Judge Knox's Chambers
Foley Swuare
New York 7, New York

The Honorable Charles L. Terry, Jr.(Del)
President Judge, Superior Court
State of Delaware
Court House
Dover, Delaware

The Honorable Earl Warren ((DC)
Chief Justice
Supreme Court of United States
Washington 25, D. C.



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526



Present Library Building (foreground)

supervision of the library; he selected the books and maintained his associations with European book dealers. He expanded the book collection to meet the needs of the West Point curriculum in the fields of mathematics. civil engineering; the physical and natural sciences, history, and biography. In order to encourage the maximum utilization of the book collection, Thayer directed the publication of library catalogues, one in 1822 and a second one in 1830, arranged by subject and author. The catalogues were in advance of what was available in most academic institutions of that period. Under his guidance the West Point Library became the largest and most important library in the United States in the field of military technology, and also in the related subject areas of the mathematical and physical sciences—a position of pre-eminence which it held until at least the end of the century. During Thayer's administration the

library collection grew from 1,000 to 8,000 books and became one of the major vehicles through which European, particularly French, military technology, the physical sciences, and mathematics were introduced into American life.

Today, the library built upon the distinctive collection assembled by Sylvanus Thayer, supports the Military Academy with a college-level, curriculum-centered program. In addition, it serves as a prototype of a national military academy library. Its resources in books, manuscripts, and archival records serve the world of scholarship interested in military history, and form one of the important cultural heritages of the American people.

Dr. Sidney Forman, Librarian, U.S.M.A.



Proposed New Library

# SYLVANUS THAYER

## AND THE

# UNITED STATES MILITARY ACADEMY LIBRARY

The reputation of Sylvanus Thayer as "FATHER" of the United States Military Academy stems from the effectiveness of his Superintendency from 1817 to 1833. In that formative period of sixteen years, he organized the West Point academic staff, modified the content of the curriculum to meet the requirements of the military profession, and established the principles of the West Point pedagogical method. The success of Thayer's educational program was exemplified by the achievement of successive generations of Military Academy graduates in the arts of peace, and in the technical skills and leadership qualities required by war. Less publicized, but perhaps even more important in their contribution to American education, were the results of Thayer's trip to Europe, during the years 1815 to 1817, when he participated in the selection of the books which formed the basic collection in the West Point Library. The book collection not only served the educational needs of the West Point teaching staff and cadets, but also fulfilled a national need for scientific and technical information.

Before Thayer's trip abroad, the Military Academy's hook collection was a meager one although it had the

Before Thayer's trip abroad, the Military Academy's book collection was a meager one, although it had the distinction of representing the first Federal library and the first Army library in the United States in that some of its books were purchased for the use of the Corps of Invalids of 1777.

The Way of 1819 had resulted in the virtual discalar.

The War of 1812 had resulted in the virtual dissolution of the Military Academy and the scattering of its books. In one instance, some engineering texts were taken with officers' baggage to the Niagara frontier and were captured by the British! After the war the need for a reconstitution of the Military Academy demanded provision of physical facilities and an adequate

book collection for the Library. A new building, designed to provide the space, was completed in 1815; Major Sylvanus Thayer and Colonel William McRee were directed to Europe to acquire the books. In regard to the purchase of books, their orders read:

"You will be provided with funds, for the collection of such books, maps, and instruments, for the Military Academy as may be hereafter directed by the War Department, or the Commander of the Corps of Engineers."

partment, or the Commander of the Corps of Engineers."

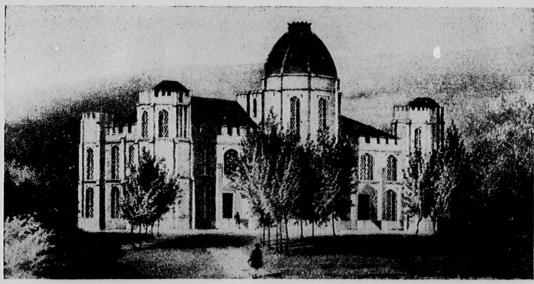
James Monroe was then Secretary of War; Joseph G. Swift, the first graduate of the Military Academy, was head of the Corps of Engineers; both took an immediate interest in the West Point Library.

Thayer and McRee were in Europe from July 1815 to April 1817; and in that period they contacted appropriate governmental agencies, examined libraries, and pored over book dealers' catalogs in France, England, Germany, and Holland. Before they left for home they had assembled and shipped a complete collection of the principal military publications of Europe, particularly those which described and analyzed the tactics and strategy of Napoleon, and which dealt with military problems directly applicable to American military policy. Their purchases totaled approximately 1,000 books, a large collection of maps, and extra copies of several important works for the personal library of each officer of the Corps of Engineers.

Soon after returning from Europe, Thayer was appointed Superintendent of the United States Military Academy, His mastery of the book materials of the military profession was one of the qualifications for that office.

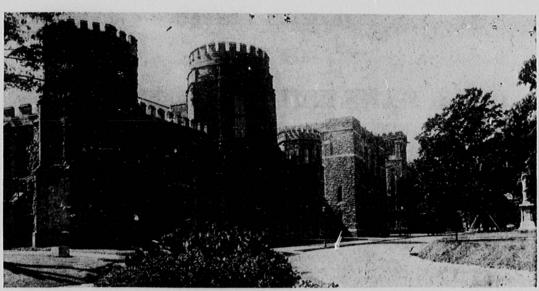
As Superintendent, Thayer continued his personal

As Superintendent, Thayer continued his personal



Library and Observatory-1841

Reprinted from 1959 Register of Graduates and Former Cadets, U.S.M.A.



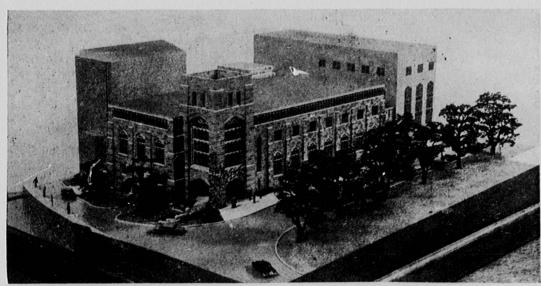
Present Library Building (foreground)

supervision of the library; he selected the books and maintained his associations with European book dealers. He expanded the book collection to meet the needs of the West Point curriculum in the fields of mathematics, civil engineering, the physical and natural sciences, history, and biography. In order to encourage the maximum utilization of the book collection, Thayer directed the publication of library catalogues, one in 1822 and a second one in 1830, arranged by subject and author. The catalogues were in advance of what was available in most academic institutions of that period. Under his guidance the West Point Library became the largest and most important library in the United States in the field of military technology, and also in the related subject areas of the mathematical and physical sciences—a position of pre-eminence which it held until at least the end of the century. During Thayer's administration the

library collection grew from 1,000 to 8,000 books and became one of the major vehicles through which European, particularly French, military technology, the physical sciences, and mathematics were introduced into American life.

Today, the library built upon the distinctive collection assembled by Sylvanus Thayer, supports the Military Academy with a college-level, curriculum-centered program. In addition, it serves as a prototype of a national military academy library. Its resources in books, manuscripts, and archival records serve the world of scholarship interested in military history, and form one of the important cultural heritages of the American people.

Dr. Sidney Forman, Librarian, U.S.M.A.



Proposed New Library

# Sylvanus Thayer's Sons

By WILLIAM J. MORTON, JR., '23 Librarian, U.S.M.A.

When Mr. Chips was dying, a friend at his bedside remarked, "What a pity he has no sons." The old headmaster stirred slightly and chuckled, "Yes I have; hundreds of them." And so he went quietly to sleep, dreaming happily of the boys he had raised to manhood.

Sylvanus Thayer, like Mr. Chips, never married; yet, when he died, he left behind him hundreds of sons whom he had raised at West Point. Now their number can be reckoned in thousands, for every graduate is in this sense a son of Thayer.

In this short article, I shall write about just a few of his sons; some of those who heard his voice in the section room or were questioned by him at the oral examinations in June. And of this group, I shall confine myself to those who won distinction as educators rather than soldiers.

I have deliberately made this unusual choice in order to throw light on one of the little-appreciated facets of Thayer's service to the nation. We all hail him as Father of the Military Academy; most of us are aware of the great engineering achievements of the nineteenth century which resulted from the curriculum he established; but we are less aware of his tremendous influence on American education.

Although Thayer came to West Point in 1807 with a sound classical background which he had received at Dartmouth, his life's work was destined to be in fields other than the humanities. Fate chose him to fill the two needs then uppermost in the minds of most thinking Americans: engineers to build the railroads, highways and canals to link the states together; and teachers of mathematics, science and engineering to raise up still more men to develop the country.

Harvard, Princeton, Yale, William and Mary, and a number of other colleges existed primarily to fit youths for the learned professions or to supply their appetite for cultural satisfactions. There was during the sixteen years of Thayer's superintendency not a single school in the country that gave more than an elementary course in higher mathematics or carried the study of science beyond natural philosophy. There were no formal courses in engineering in the civilian schools. The art was picked up from experience and the few practical manuals that could be bought. Too often structures were built "by guess and by God" in the same empirical spirit that animated the New England navigators of the day.

From his studies abroad Thayer brought to America a knowledge of the great tech-

nological advances in Europe; especially the mathematical, scientific and engineering works of the French savants whose superiority was universally acknowledged. Just as Thayer's friend, George Tichnor, and others about this time were importing the methods of German scholarship and revolutionizing the study of history, so Thayer was introducing French mathematics, science and engineering, thus opening up a new field in American education.

This influence was exerted in two ways. First, the French textbooks, which the cadets in the beginning had to study in the original language, were translated by West Pointers and universally adopted by colleges and technical schools. Thus, to the present day, American mathematical



EDWARD H. COURTENAY USMA-1821

texts exhibit the French approach to the subject. Secondly, Thayer communicated his enthusiasm for mathematics and engineering to his pupils, many of whom became professors in civilian institutions.

Nineteen classes (1818 to 1836, inclusive) received one to four years of their education under Sylvanus Thayer. His active participation in their instruction made his influence more than a formality. They totalled seven hundred and eleven graduates. Of that number, thirty-nine became college professors of whom sixteen were presidents. They taught in nineteen different states and the District of Columbia, and held chairs in fifty-three colleges. This record alone is sufficient to substantiate the excellence of Thayer's system of education.

Space permits only a glimpse of a baker's dozen of these early graduates.

The full record may be seen in Volume I of the Cullum Register; which, by the way, is one of the most fascinating books a West Pointer can study. It is the legacy left us by a member of the last class to graduate under Thayer.

Horace Webster, '18, was one of the founders of Hobart College and its Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy for twenty-three years. He then became a founder of the College of the City of New York and was its president for twenty-one years. Alexander S. Webb. '55, succeeded him in 1869 and served until 1902.

Edward H. Courtenay, '21, moved from the University of Pennsylvania where he was Professor of Mathematics, to the University of Virginia where he occupied the same position. At Virginia, he became the most beloved and revered member of the faculty. He was well known for his texts in Mechanics and the Calculus. He was the recipient of many honorary degrees.

Dennis H. Mahan, '24, son of poor Irish immigrants, walked from Norfolk to West Point, because he heard that the Academy had a good course in drawing. Professor of Engineering at West Point, he was the author of celebrated works on Engineering and Strategy. He was a corporator of the National Academy of Sciences and a member of many scientific societies here and abroad. American universities lavished honorary degrees upon him. His son became a famous admiral and naval strategist.

Alexander Dallas Bache, '25, was Professor of Natural Philosophy and Chemistry at the University of Pennsylvania and then President of Girard College. He was Regent of the Smithsonian Institution from its founding in 1846 to his death in 1867. He was a member of many foreign learned societies and the recipient of medals, honors and degrees from European and American institutions.

William H. C. Bartlett, '26, Professor of Natural and Experimental Philosophy, U.S.M.A., from 1834 to 1871, was the author of widely used texts on Acoustics, Optics, Mechanics and Astronomy. He was a corporator of the National Academy of Sciences, member of scientific societies here and abroad, and a recipient of honorary degrees. He was also a pioneer insurance actuary.

Robert E. Lee, '29, famous Commanderin-Chief of the Confederate Armies, devoted the last five years of his life to the



DENNIS H. MAHAN USMA—1824

presidency of Washington University, which added his name to its own when he died. He instituted many progressive educational innovations and reforms. He founded at Washington and Lee the first school of journalism in the world.

Ormsby McKnight Mitchell. '29, was Professor of Mathematics, Philosophy and Astronomy at Cincinnati College for ten years. He gained international renown as an astronomer and lecturer. He was a fellow of the Royal Astronomical Society of London as well as a member of many scientific associations. Many degrees were conferred upon him.

William A. Norton. '31, having served as a professor at the University of the City of New York, Delaware College and Brown University, became in 1852, Professor of Civil Engineering at the newly founded Sheffield Scientific School of Yale University. He served in that capacity until 1883. He was the author of books on scientific subjects and a member of



WILLIAM H. C. BARTLETT USMA—1829

the National Academy of Sciences and other scientific associations.

Benjamin S. Ewell, '32, held Professorships in Mathematics and Science at Hampden Sydney College, Washington College (Washington and Lee University), and William and Mary College. In 1854, he became president of the latter. He took time off to fight for the Confederacy and, at Gettysburg, failed to seize Cemetery Hill for Lee because of a minnié ball that lodged in his wooden leg and pained the half-healed stump so that he was in a dazed condition. After Appomattox, he returned to the college presidency and served until 1888, when he became President Emeritus. He received an LL.D. from Hobart College and was an honorary member of the Royal Historical Society of England.

Jacob Whitman Bailey, '32, was Professor of Chemistry, Mineralogy and Geology, U.S.M.A., from 1835 until his



ROBERT E. LEE USMA-1829

From the portrait by Louvrie of Lee as Superintendent

death in 1857. He was also a celebrated botanist (at least one plant was named for him). He invented improvements to the microscope and devised a method of determining the geological formation of the ocean bed by studying samples of ooze. Cyrus W. Field engaged his services to pronounce on the suitability of the route chosen for the Atlantic cable, He was President of the American Association for the Advancement of Science (1856-57); an author of over fifty important scientific papers; and much honored in this country and abroad.

Francis H. Smith, '33, after serving as Professor of Mathematics at Hampden Sydney College, became a founder of the Virginia Military Institute and its first Superintendent from 1839 to 1890.

Richard S. Smith, '34, having taught drawing at West Point for fifteen years, became Professor of Mathematics, Engineering and Drawing at Brooklyn Col-



JACOB W. BAILEY USMA-1832

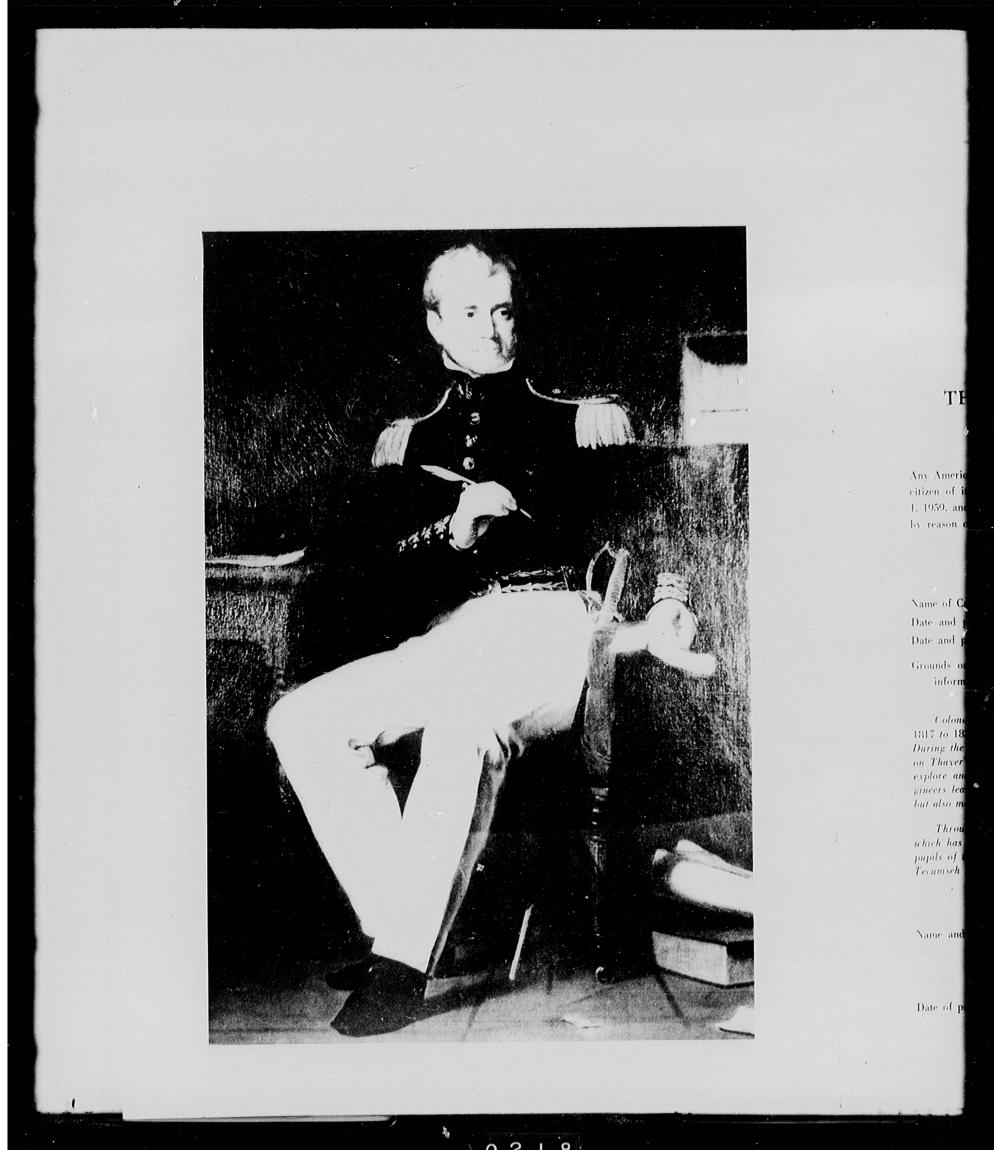
legiate and Polytechnic Institute, then Director of Cooper Institute, and then President of Girard College. In 1870 he became Professor of Mathematics at the United States Naval Academy, where he served until 1877.

Henry H. Lockwood, '36, was one of the original professors at the Naval Academy when it was founded in 1845. He served there, teaching Mechanics, Gunnery, Artillery and Infantry Tactics, and Natural and Experimental Philosophy at various times until 1871. During the Civil War, he took time out to serve as a Brigadier General in the Army. He is still revered at the Naval Academy, which he left in order to be Director of the U.S. Naval Observatory.

From this sample of Thayer's product it is easy to see that he was the Father of American Technical Education as well as Father of the Military Academy. We, his sons of today, salute him and his sons of an earlier day.



FRANCIS H. SMITH USMA—1833



# The Hall of Fame for Great Americans

at

#### NEW YORK UNIVERSITY

EXECUTIVE OFFICE:

53 Washington Square South, New York 12, N. Y.

## THIRTEENTH QUINQUENNIAL ELECTION, 1960

Form of Proposal for Candidates

Any American citizen may propose the name of a man or woman who was born in this country, or who was a citizen of it, and who has been deceased twenty-five years or more. Nominations must be made between April 1, 1959, and April 1, 1960. In the 1955 election, the following candidates received twenty votes or more, and, by reason of that fact, their names will appear upon the 1960 ballot without the formality of a new nomination:

Luther Burbank, Andrew Carnegie, Charles W. Eliot, Winslow Homer, William James, Edward A. MacDowell, and Henry David Thoreau

Name of Candidate SYLVANUS THAYER, educator

Date and place of birth Braintree, Massachusetts, June 9, 1785

Date and place of death South Braintree, Massachusetts, September 7, 1872

Grounds on which the nomination is made. (Elaborate data are not necessary, but published sources of further information may be cited.)

Colonel Sylvanus Thayer, when he was Superintendent of the U. S. Military Academy at West Point from 1817 to 1833, transformed the Academy into the chief source of technological knowledge in the United States. During the formative period of the nation, from 1818 to 1865, both the Government and private industry called up on Thayer's West Point Graduates to harness the nation's waterways, build its railroads, improve its harbors and explore and map its vast expanses. In the field of education Thayer's scientists, mathematicians, and civil engineers leavened not only all the institutions of technological learning established later than the Military Academy, but also many of those in the field of general education that had been in existence for some time.

Through his pedagogical acumen and inspirational leadership, Colonel Thayer evolved the West Point system, which has produced most of our important military leaders from the War with Mexico to the Korean War. Four pupils of the Thayer system are today in the Hall of Fame: Ulysses Simpson Grant, Robert Edward Lee, William Tecumseh Sherman, and Thomas Jonathan ("Stonewall") Jackson.

Name and address of proposer

A. C. McAuliffe
A. C. McAULIFFE, General, USA, Redd

A. C. McAULIFFE, General, USA, Ret President, Association of Graduates United States Military Academy West Point, New York

Date of proposal 18 May 1959

#### NAMES IN THE HALL OF FAME FOR GREAT AMERICANS

The names to be inscribed in the Hall of Fame are chosen every five years by a College of Electors consisting of approximately one hundred American men and women of distinction representing all sections of the country and several professions. Election to the Hall of Fame requires an affirmative vote of a majority of the entire body of Electors. Following, in order of selection, are the names of the eighty-six persons honored to date:

John Adams John James Audubon Henry Ward Beecher

William Ellery Channing Henry Clay Peter Cooper Jonathan Edwards

Ralph Waldo Emerson David Glasgow Farragut

Benjamin Franklin Robert Fulton Ulysses Simpson Grant

Asa Gray Nathaniel Hawthorne

Washington Irving Thomas Jefferson

James Kent Robert Edward Lee Abraham Lincoln

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow

Horace Mann John Marshall Samuel Finley Breese Morse

George Peabody
Joseph Story
Gilbert Charles Stuart
George Washington

Daniel Webster Eli Whitney 1905

John Quincy Adams James Russell Lowell Mary Lyon

James Madison Maria Mitchell

William Tecumseh Sherman John Greenleaf Whittier

Emma Willard

1910 George Bancroft

Phillips Brooks
William Cullen Bryant
James Fenimore Cooper
Oliver Wendell Holmes

Andrew Jackson John Lothrop Motley

Edgar Allan Poe Harriet Beecher Stowe Frances Elizabeth Willard

1915 Louis Agassiz

Daniel Boone Rufus Choate Charlotte Saunders Cushman Alexander Hamilton

Joseph Henry Mark Hopkins

Elias Howe Francis Parkman

1920 Samuel Langhorne Clemens (Mark Twain)

James Buchanan Eads
Patrick Henry
William Thomas Green Morton

Alice Freeman Palmer Augustus Saint-Gaudens Roger Williams 1925

Edwin Booth John Paul Jones

1930

Matthew Fontaine Maury

James Monroe

James Abbott McNeill Whistler

Walt Whitman

1935

Grover Cleveland Simon Newcomb William Penn

1940

Stephen Collins Foster

1945

Sidney Lanier Thomas Paine Walter Reed Booker T. Washington

1950

Susan B. Anthony Alexander Graham Bell

Josiah Willard Gibbs William Crawford Gorgas Theodore Roosevelt

Woodrow Wilson

1955

Thomas Jonathan "Stonewall" Jackson

George Westinghouse Wilbur Wright

With the exception of Wilbur Wright, all the above have the permanent tribute of the bronze tablet and portrait bust.

ANS

a College of Electors presenting all sections we vote of a majority the eighty-six persons

Maury

Neill Whistler

oster

ngtor

n Bell Ibbs Gorga Ilt

"Stonewall" Jackson

of the bronze tablet

## REFERENCES

Appleton's Cyclopaedia of American Biography, Vol. VI, p. 73

Biographical Register of the Officers & Graduates of the United States Military Academy, by George W. Cullum—Vol. 1, No. 1 to 1058, p. 107 and p. 108

Biographical Sketch of Brigadier-General Sylvanus Thayer, Superintendent of the U. S. Military Academy, by George W. Cullum, New York, A. G. Sheppard & Company, 1883

Funk & Wagnalls' New Standard Encyclopedia (Copyright 1931) p. 336—Sylvanus Thayer

History of West Point and U. S. Military Academy, by Captain Edward C. Boynton, A. M., Chapter XII, p. 217 and p. 218

Men of West Point, by Ernest Dupuy, New York, William Sloane Associates, 1951

Sylvanus Thayer—Father of Technological Education in the United States, by R. Ernest Dupuy, West Point, The Association of Graduates, 1958

## SYLVANUS THAYER

#### FATHER OF TECHNOLOGY IN THE UNITED STATES

SYLVANUS THAYER, native of Braintree, Massachusetts, 9 June 1785, graduate of the United Sates Military Academy, and its Superintendent from 1817 to 1833, was a farsighted architect, a master builder, a fearless inspector; he was an extraordinary teacher, a technologist, and a preceptor to the Nation. That he consciously foresaw at any time all that would result from his efforts is doubtful. However, he knew what he had to do and when the opportunity came he was prepared.

During sixteen years as Superintendent he provided to the Nation 606 graduates of the only technical college in America. Those men were not simply military technicians; they were engineers, teachers, builders, scientists, explorers, and soldiers. In 1832 the Board of Visitors complained, suggestively of the current situation, "that as soon as an officer, by dint of application, renders himself useful and respectable at West Point he is taken away by a higher inducement offered by some literary institution."

Sylvanus Thayer was more than simply a college administrator; he was a seeker after knowledge and a believer in its power. During the two years he spent in Europe preparing for the Superintendency he had collected over a thousand books, maps, charts, and treatises on military and civil engineering. With these he founded the first, and for years the only, technical library in the United States. Later, in 1867-1871, he endowed,

prescribed the requirements for admission, organized the curriculum of the Thayer School of Engineering, Dartmouth College, and presented over 2,000 volumes on military science, architecture, and civil engineering to its library. His will contained the endowments which founded Braintree Academy in his native village.

Thayer's influence extended far beyond his students and his military acad my. His teaching principles and methods were directly copied by many colleges then in existence or being started. Many of the books used at the Military Academy were taken directly into the courses of the technical institutions founded during the next 50 years. Many of Thayer's students occupied professorships in the growing technological schools. By 1860, there were 203 colleges and universities in the United States, with West Point graduates occupying 40 chairs as professors of mathematics and 16 as professors of civil engineering. Uncounted others were instructors in colleges and secondary schools.

During that same period, 1818-1865 America was moving westward, led, guided, and pushed by Thayer's graduates. Exploration, river and harbor improvement, railroad building, mapping, and military protection were direct functions of the Army.

Sylvanus Thayer, more than any other single individual, can truly be called the "Father of Technology in the United States."

Care

MASSACHUSETTS INSTITUTE OF TECHNOLOGY CAMBRIDGE 39, MASSACHUSETTS

11 May 1959

TES

nission, organized the of Engineering, Dartr 2,000 volumes on civil engineering to e endowments which native village.

beyond his students aching principles and many colleges then in of the books used at m directly into the founded during the students occupied nological schools. By a universities in the duates occupying 40 and 16 as professors hers were instructors

B-1865 America was pushed by Thayer's harbor improvement, military protection

other single individer of Technology in General A. C. McAuliffe, USA (Ret.) President, Association of Graduates United States Military Academy West Point, New York

Dear General McAuliffe:

At the time when the Military Academy was first organized, there was no really advanced education of engineers in this country at all. It was an extraordinary accomplishment to place West Point in a respected position in this field, and to introduce advanced engineering instruction on a basis which commanded the admiration of all those who have had close contact with it. In these days when technical education has arrived at its full position of recognition, it is difficult for us to visualize the extraordinary wisdom which was employed in the initiation of this effort which modified in a salutary way every attempt along similar lines which followed in civil institutions.

It is for this reason that I am happy to learn that there is a movement under way to recognize the contributions of Sylvanus Thayer, not only in this regard but in many others, and to secure this recognition by his selection to the Hall of Fame. I am happy indeed to endorse this endeavor.

Sameon Jun

V. Bush

VB: vm

# Columbia University in the City of New York

SCHOOL OF ENGINEERING OFFICE OF THE DEAN

May 26, 1959

Dear Dr. Sockman:

Sylvanus Thayer's many distinguished contributions have been ably pointed out by supporters of his nomination for the Hall of Fame.

His recognition is long overdue. More than any single man, he began the program that laid the basis for not only our West Point military education, but also for our whole gamut of modern engineering education. His impact on our age is difficult to overstate.

Sincerely,

John R. Dunning

Dean

Dr. Ralph W. Sockman Director New York University Hall of Fame 90 CHURCH STREET, ROOM 1303 NEW YORK 7, NEW YORK

1 April 1959

Dear General Crittenberger:

I understand that the Association of Graduates of the United States Military Academy is about to submit the honored name of Sylvanus Thayer to the 1960 Hall of Fame Electors. Once before, in 1935, it was my rare privilege, as Chief of Staff of the United States Army, to join in the nomination of this great man.

Since that date our beloved country has passed successfully through its greatest military crisis and I can repeat with the added conviction of that time what was said so many years ago. He is truly known as the "Father of West Point". All the greatness of that institution is due to the invincibility of the pillars upon which he founded it--Duty, Honor, Country. All the genius, all the zeal, all the devotion that any graduate has contributed to the safety, to the growth, to the welfare of the Republic belongs to some extent to him. His name has become the symbol of our nation's best qualities--courage, stamina, coordinated efficiency. I only regret that I possess neither that eloquence of diction, that poetry of imagination, nor that forensic brilliance of metaphor to express adequately the merits of this Son of Dartmouth who has become the greatest of West Pointers.

With personal regards,

Most cordially,

Douglas Macarthur.

Lt. General Willis D. Crittenberger, Ret., Chairman, Sylvanus Thayer Hall of Fame Committee, 40 East 62nd Street, New York, New York.

1959

s have

all of

man,

Point

gineer-

ing

JOHN J. PERSHING

January 10, 1935.

Mr.

Dr.

Gen

Majo

Dr. Robert Underwood Johnson,
Director, Hall of Fame of New York University,
745 Fifth Avenue,
New York, N. Y.

My dear Dr. Johnson:

Colonel Alexander R. Piper, President of the Association of Graduates of the United States Military Academy, advises me that on behalf of the Association he is recommending to the College Electors of the Hall of Fame of New York University the name of General Sylvanus Thayer, Class of 1808, U.S.M.A.

Among its graduates, General Thayer is known and his memory revered as "The Father of the Military Academy." To him more than to any other must go the credit for making that institution the most famous and effective of its kind in the world, a reputation which it holds to this day. His high ideals, his sense of Honor and duty will be forever perpetuated in the young men who elect a military career and through them contribute a valuable influence for good in every section of our country.

I feel that General Thayer's life and accomplishments fully merit the honor which is now sought for him, and I sincerely hope that his name may receive the favorable consideration of the Electors.

Very cordially yours,

Min Flersung

## SYLVANUS THAYER HALL OF FAME COMMITTEE

LT. GENERAL WILLIS D. CRITTENBERGER, Rtd., CHAIRMAN

1935.

у,

f the litary ltion he lll of Sylvanus

known
tary
the
s and
which
of
young
contribn of

ccomplisnor ve the

rsling

Mr. Archibald S. Alexander President Free Europe Committee

Mr. Hanson W. Baldwin Military Analyst New York Times

Mr. Bernard M. Baruch

Dr. James P. Baxter, 3rd President Williams College

Mr. Richard E. Berlin President The Hearst Corporation

Major General A. J. Drexel Biddle Adjutant General Pennsylvania National Guard

General Omar N. Bradley Chairman of the Board Bulova Watch Company

Dr. Detlev W. Bronk President The Rockefeller Institute

Lieutenant General B. M. Bryan Commanding General First United States Army

Mr. Hugh Bullock President Bullock Fund, Ltd.

Mrs. Nardi Campion Author

Dr. Leonard Carmichael Secretary Smithsonian Institute

Mr. Bruce Catton Editor American Heritage

General Lucius D. Clay (Ret.) Chairman of the Board Continental Can Company

General Joseph Lawton Collins (Ret.)

Dr. Ivan C. Crawford Former Dean of Engineering University of Michigan

Major General Robert M. Danford (Ret.)

Lieutenant General Garrison H. Davidson The Superintendent United States Military Academy

Dr. John S. Dickey President Dartmouth College Dr. John R. Dunning Dean of Engineering Columbia University

Colonel R. Ernest Dupuy (Ret.) Author

Major George Fielding Eliot Author & Military Analyst

Mr. James A. Farley Chairman of the Board The Coca-Cola Export Company

Brig. General Chauncey L. Fenton (Ret.) President First National Bank, Highland Falls

Dr. Sidney Forman Librarian United States Military Academy

Colonel Edgar W. Garbisch (Resg'd) Chairman of the Board Grocery Store Products Company

Mr. Bernard F. Gimbel Chairman of the Board Gimbel Brothers

General Alfred M. Gruenther (Ret.) President American Red Cross

Dr. John A. Hannah

President Michigan State College

Mr. Averell Harriman

Mr. Henry T. Heald President Ford Foundation

Mr. Harry B. Henshel Vice President & Secretary Bulova Watch Company

Mr. Luther L. Hill Publisher Des Moines Register

Dr. Ernest M. Hopkins President Emeritus Dartmouth College

Major General Frederick A. Irving (Ret.)

Senator Jacob K. Javits New York State

Senator Kenneth B. Keating New York State

Bishop Arthur B. Kinsolving, II Bishop of Arizona Chaplain USMA, 1926-1933

Mr. William H. Kyle President Society National Bank of Cleveland Ambassador Henry Cabot Lodge U.S. Ambassador to the United Nations

General Douglas MacArthur

Mr. Frank Pace, Jr. President General Dynamics Corporation

Ambassador Richard C. Patterson Commissioner of Commerce & Public Events New York City

Dr. Norman Vincent Peale Minister Marble Collegiate Church

Colonel Russell P. Reeder (Ret.) Author

General Matthew B, Ridgway (Ret.) Chairman of the Board Mellon Institute

Governor Nelson Rockefeller Governor State of New York

Brigadier General David Sarnoff Ret.) Chairman of the Board Radio Corporation of America

Mr. Spyros P. Skouras President Twentieth Century Fox Film Corp.

Dr. Stacy B. Southworth Headmaster Emeritus Thayer Academy

Mrs. Katherine St. George Representative 28th Congressional District (New York)

His Eminence Francis Cardinal Spellman Archbishop of New York

Dr. Robert L. Stearns President Boettcher Foundation

Major General Harry P. Storke Chief of Information United States Army

Dr. Gordon Thayer Headmaster Thayer Academy

Mr. Stephen F. Tillman Associate Editor Army, Navy, Air Force Register

Mr. James T. Williams Sperry-Rand Corporation

Brigadier General Robert E. Wood (Ret.) Director Sears Roebuck and Company Too her Do you know any of these checked

THE HALL OF FAME FOR GREAT AMERICANS

COLLEGE OF ELECTORS - HALL OF FAME ELECTION - 1960

ACTUAL OR FORMER UNIVERSITY OR COLLEGE EXECUTIVES

(Mass) Mrs. Bernice Brown Cronkhite, Dean Dr. Arthur S. Adams, President (DC) American Council on Education Graduate School of Arts and Sciences 1785 Massachusetts Avenue, N.W. Radcliffe College Washington 6, D. C. Cambridge 38, Massachusetts Dr. G. L. Cross, President The University of Oklahoma Dr. Raymond B. Allen, Chancellor (Okla) (Cal) The University of California 405 Hilgard Avenue Norman, Oklahoma Los Angeles 24, California Dr. John S. Dickey, President (NH) Dr. J. Seelye Bixler, President (Me) Dartmouth College Hanover, New Hampshire Colby College Waterville, Maine Dr. Harold W. Dodds (NJ) Miss Sarah Gibson Blanding, President(NY) 87 College Road West Princeton, New Jersey Vassar College Poughkeepsie, New York Dr. Milton S. Eisenhower, President (Md) Johns Hopkins University (Tenn) Dr. Harvie Branscomb, Chancellor Vanderbilt University Baltimore, Maryland Nashville 5, Tennessee The Reverend Dr. Frank L. Eversull(Ill) Dr. William S. Carlson, President (Ohio) Columbia, Illinois The University of Toledo Dr. Edwin B. Fred, President Emeritus The University of Wisconsin (Wis Toledo 6, Ohio (Wis) Madison 6, Wisconsin Dr. Oliver C. Carmichael, Consultant (NC) Fund for the Advancement of Education Dr. A. Whitney Griswold, President (Conn) 27 Hilltop Road, Biltmore Station Yale University Asheville, North Carolina New Haven, Connecticut (Col) Dr. Ben. M. Cherrington Dr. Virgil M. Hancher, President (Iowa) Regional Director State University of Iowa Institute of International Education, Inc. Old Capitol 1605 Pennsylvania Street Iowa City, Iowa Denver 3, Colorado Dr. John A. Hannah, President (Mich) Dr. W. P. Clark (Mont) Michigan State University Montana State University East Lansing, Michigan Missoula, Montana (La) Dr. Rufus C. Harris, President Dr. Robert C. Clothier (Pa) Tulane University 24 Buck Lane New Orleans 18, Louisiana Haverford, Pennsylvania Dr. David D. Henry, President University of Illinois (I11)Dr. Arthur H. Compton Distinguished Service Professor of Natural Philosophy Urbana, Illinois Washington University St. Louis 5, Missouri a letter from you to any of them would help

#### ELECTOR. HALL OF FAME - 1960

#### ACTUAL OR FORMER UNIVERSITY OR COLLEGE EXECUTIVES (CONTINUED)

4	Dr. H. M. Ivy, Director The Associated Consultants in Education Post Office Box 729	(Miss)	Dr. Franklin D. Murphy, Chancellor The University of Konsas Lawrence, Kansas	(Kan)
V	Meridian, Mississippi  Dr. Barnaby C. Keeney, President Brown University Providence 12, Rhode Island	(RI)	Dr. Roy F. Nichols, Dean The Graduate School of Arts and Sc 101 Bennett Hall University of Pennsylvania Philadelphia 4, Pennsylvania	(Pa) cience
	Dr. Grayson Kirk, President Columbia University New York 27, New York	(NY)	Dr. Theophilus S. Painter Department of Zoology The University of Texas	(Tex)
	Dr. Harold Kramer, President Northern State Teachers College Aberdeen, South Dakota	(SD)	Dr. John E. Pomfret, Director Henry E. Huntington	(Cal)
	Dr. Henry Noble MacCracken 87 New Hackensack Road Poughkeepsie, New York	(NY)	Library and Art Gallery San Morino 9, California Dr. Nathan M. Pusey, President	(Mass)
	Dr. Deane W. Malott, President Cornell University Ithaca, New York	(NY)	Harvard University Cambridge 38, Massachusetts Dr. Homer P. Rainey	(Col)
	Dr. Willfred Mauck, President Bureau of University Travel	(Md)	Professor of Higher Education University of Colorado Boulder, Colorado	(001)
9	11 Boyd Street Newton, Massachusetts Dr. Benjamin E. Mays, President	(Ga)	Dr. Alexander G. Ruthven, Consulta Development Council University of Michigan	ent (Mich)
	Morehouse College Atlanta, Georgia  Dr. James A. McCain, President Kansas State College	(Kan)	Ann Arbor, Michigan  Dr. Robert Gordon Sproul  President Emeritus  The University of California	(Cal)
	Manhattan, Kansas Mrs. Millicent C. McIntosh, Presid Barnard College	dent(NY)	Berkeley 4, California Professor Irvin Stewart West Virginia University Morgantown, West Virginia	(W.Va)
	Columbia University New York 27, New York Dr. John S. Millis, President Western Reserve University	(Ohio)	Dr. Samuel S. Stratton, President Middlebury College Middlebury, Vermont	(Vt)
*	Western Reserve University Cleveland 6, Ohio Dr. J. L. Morrill, President University of Minnesota	(Minn)	Dr. Herman B. Wells, President Indiana University Bloomington, Indiana	(Ind)
	Minneapolis 14, Minnesota	- 2		

#### ELECTOR - HALL OF FAME - 1960

#### ACTUAL OR FORMER UNIVERSITY OR COLLEGE EXECUTIVES (CONTINUED)

Dr. John C. West University of North Dakota University Station Grand Forks, North Dakota (ND) Dr. Henry M. Wriston, President (RI)
The American Assembly
Columbia University
New York 27, New York

Dr. John D. Williams, Chancellor (Miss) The University of Mississippi University, Mississippi

#### HISTORIANS OR PROFESSORS OF HISTORY OR LITERATURE

Mr. Bruce Catton American Heritage 551 Fifth Avenue New York 17, New York (NY) Dr. Allan Nevins (Cal)
Henry E. Huntington
Library and Art Gallery
San Marino 9, California

Dr. Guy Stanton Ford 3133 Connecticut Avenue, N. W. Washington 8, D. C. (DC) Dr. James C. Olson, Chairman Department of History The University of Nebraska Lincoln 8, Nebraska

(Tenn)

Dr. Edwin Mims Vanderbilt University Nashville 5, Tennessee

SCIENTISTS

Dr. Roy Chapman indrews Life Oak Land L. C Carmer Willey California

(Cal) Dr. Cecil W. Creel 301 Country Club Drive Reno, Nevada (Nev)

(Neb)

Dr. Donald C. Balfour 200 First Street, S.W. Rochester, Minnesota (Minn) Dr. Howard R. Masters 212 Franklin Street West Richmond, Virginia

(Va)

(Minn)

Dr. A. P. Black (Fla)
Research Professor of Chemistry
University of Florida, Gainesville, Fla.

(Fla) Dr. C. W. Mayo Mayo Clinic e,Fla. Rochestor, Minnesota

(NJ)

Dr. Detlev W. Bronk, President The Rockefeller Institute York Avenue and 66th Street New York 21, New York The Institute for Advanced Study
Princeton, New Jersey

#### ELECTORS - HALL OF FAME - 1960

#### SCIENTISTS (CONTINUED)

Dr. Fairfield Osborn, President (NY) Dr. W.F.G. Swann, Director (Pa)

The Conservation Foundation 30 East 40th Street New York 16, New York	٧	Bartol Research Foundation Whittier Place Swarthmore, Pennsylvania	
Dr. Jonas Edward Salk Virus Research Laboratory Terrace and Darragh Streets Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania	(Pa)	Dr. J. C. Welker Department of Plant Pathology The University of Wisconsin Madison 6, Wisconsin	(Wis)
AUTHORS	, EDITORS	AND ARTISTS	
Miss Marian Anderson Marianna Farm RFD #1 Danbury, Connecticut	(Conn)	Mr. John Kieran 25 Norwood Avenue Rockport, Massachusetts	(Mass)
Mr. Robert B. Atwood Editor and Publisher The Anchorage Daily Times	(Alaska)	Mr. Joseph Wood Krutch 5041 East Grant Road Tucson, Arizona	(/.riz)
Box 40, Anchorage, Alaska Mr. Van Wyck Brooks Bridgewater, Connecticut	(Conn)	Mr. Oliver La Farge 647 College Street Santa Fe, New Mexico	(N.Mex)
Mr. John Dos Passos Westmoreland P. O. Westmoreland County, Virginia	(Va)	Mr. Walter Lippmann New York Herald Tribune 3525 Woodley Road, N.W. Washington 16, D.C.	(D.C.)
Mr. Stanly A. Easton 1321 East Lakeshore Drive Coeur d'Alene, Idaho	(Idaho)	Mr. Henry R. Luce Time and Life Building Rockefeller Center	(NY)
Mr. Hermann Hagedorn, Director Theodore Roosevelt Centennial Commission 28 East 20th Street New York 3, New York	(NY)	New York 20, New York  Mr. Ralph McGill, Editor The Atlanta Constitution Box 4689 Atlanta 2, Georgia	(Ga)
Dr. Howard Hanson, Director The University of Rochester Eastman School of Music Rochester 4, New York	(NY)	Mr. Eugene Meyer, Chairman The Washington Post and Times Herklot 1616 Votreet, N.W.	(NY)
Miss Helen Keller Arcan Ridge Westport, Connecticut	(Conn)	Washington 5, D.C.  Mr. Hamilton Owens 7822 Ruxwood Road Riderwood, Baltimore 4, Maryland	(Md)

#### ELECTORS - HALL OF FAME - 1960

#### AUTHORS, EDITORS AND ARTISTS (CONTINUED)

Dr. Clarence Poe Senior Editor and Board Chairman The Progressive Farmer Insurance Building			(NC)
Raleigh, North Carolina	W	Mr. Deems Taylor 2 East 60th Street	(NY)
Mr. Eugene C. Pulliam, Publisher The Indianapolis Star and News	(Ind)	New York 22, New York	
307 North Pennsylvania Street Indianapolis, Indiana		Mr. Stark Young 320 East 57th Street, Apt 10-E New York 22. New York	(NY)
Mrs. Helen Rogers Reid 834 Fifth Avenue New York 21, New York	(NY)		
Dr. Archibald Rutledge Hampton Plantation McClellanville, South Carolina	(SC)		
	Senior Editor and Board Chairman The Progressive Farmer Insurance Building Raleigh, North Carolina Mr. Eugene C. Pulliam, Publisher The Indianapolis Star and News 307 North Pennsylvania Street Indianapolis, Indiana Mrs. Helen Rogers Reid 834 Fifth Avenue New York 21, New York	Senior Editor and Board Chairman The Progressive Farmer Insurance Building Raleigh, North Carolina  Mr. Eugene C. Pulliam, Publisher The Indianapolis Star and News 307 North Pennsylvania Street Indianapolis, Indiana  Mrs. Helen Rogers Reid 834 Fifth Avenue New York 21, New York  Dr. Archibald Rutledge  (SC)	Senior Editor and Board Chairman The Progressive Farmer Insurance Building Raleigh, North Carolina  Mr. Eugene C. Pulliam, Publisher The Indianapolis Star and News 307 North Pennsylvania Street Indianapolis, Indiana Insurance Building Mr. Deems Taylor 2 East 60th Street New York 22, New York Indianapolis Star and News 307 North Pennsylvania Street Indianapolis, Indiana Insurance Building Mr. Deems Taylor 2 East 60th Street New York 22, New York Indianapolis Star and News 320 East 57th Street, Apt 10-E New York 22, New York New York 21, New York Insurance Building Mr. Deems Taylor 2 East 60th Street New York 22, New York Indianapolis Star and News 320 East 57th Street, Apt 10-E New York 22, New York Insurance Building Mr. Deems Taylor 2 East 60th Street New York 22, New York Indianapolis Star and News 320 East 57th Street, Apt 10-E New York 22, New York Insurance Building Ins

#### MEN AND WOMEN OF AFFAIRS

THEN THE CHERT	OI DITTELLED
The Honorable Bernard M. Baruch (NY) 597 Madison Avenue New York 22, New York	Mr. William T. Gossett, Vice President rord Motor Company (Mich) The American Road
The Reverend Dr. Arthur J. Brown (NY) 1235 Park Avenue New York 28, New York The Honorable Michael Francis Doyle (Pa)	Dearborn, Michigan  Mr. C. H. Greenewalt, President (Del)  E. I. du Pont de Nemours and Company Wilmington 98, Delaware
1500 Girard Trust Building Broad and South Penn Square Philadelphia, Pennsylvania	Gen. Alfred M. Gruenther, President (Neb) The American Red Cross 13th and D Street, N.W. Washington 6, D. C.
Mr. Cyrus S. Eaton, Chairman (Ohio). The Chesapeake and Ohio Railway Company Terminal Tower Cleveland 1, Ohio	Mr. Ralph Hayes (Del) Motel Du Pont Wilmington 99, Delaware
Dr. Louis Finkelstein, Chancellor (NY) The Jewish Theological Seminary of America Broadway and 122nd Street New York 27, New York	Mr. Henry T. Heald, President (NY) The Ford Foundation 477 Madison Avenue New York 22, New York
The Reverend Dr. Harry Emerson Fosdick Minister Emeritus (NY) The Riverside Church Riverside Drive at 122nd Street New York 27, New York	Mr. August Heckscher, Director (NY) The Twentieth Century Fund 41 E st 70th Street New York 21, New York
_ 5	

#### FLECTORS - HALL OF FAME -- 1960

#### (MEN AND WOMEN OF AFFAIRS (CONTINUED)

	The Rt. Rev. Henry Wise Hobson (Bishop of the Southern Ohio Diocese 412 Sycamore Street Cincinnati 2, Ohio	Ohio)	Dr. Reinhold Niebuhr School of Historical Studies The Institute for Advanced Study Princeton, New Jersey	(NY)
	1489 El Mirador Drive Pasadena, California	(Cal)	Mr. Lewis Perry Hotel Vendome 160 Commonwealth Avenue Boston 16, Massachusetts	(Mass)
	Father John LaFarge 329 West 108th Street New York 25, New York	(NY)	Mrs. Franklin D. Roosevelt 202 Fifty-Sixth Street West New York 19, New York	(NY)
•	The Rt. Rev. William Fisher Lewis, Bishop of Nevada The Missionary District of Nevada Post Office Box 1590 Reno, Nevada	STD (Nev)	Mr. Alfred P. Sloan, Jr. 630 Fifth Avenue Rockefeller Center New York 20, New York	(NY)
	Mr. Thurgood Marshall Director-Counsel NAACP Legal Defense and Education Fund, Inc. 10 Columbus Circle	(NY)	Dr. Charles P. Taft Headley, Sibbald and Taft First National Bank Building Cincinnati 2, Ohio	(Ohio)
•	New York 19, New York  Mr. Thomas W. Martin 600 North 18th Street Birmingham 2, Alabama	(Ala)	Mr. Owen D. Young Van Horne Farms, Inc. Van Hornesville, New York	(NY)
	Mr. George Meany, President American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organization 815 Sixteenth Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.	(DC)		

ELECTORS - HALL OF FAME - 1960

## ACTUAL OR FORMER HIGH PUBLIC OFFICIALS

The Honorable Sherman Adams Pollard Road Lincoln, New Hampshire	(NY)	The Honorable W. Cameron Forbes (Mass) J. M. Forbes Company 19 Washington Street Boston 8, Massachusetts
The Honorable Robert B. Anderson The Secretary of the Treasury Washington, D. C.	(Tex)	The Honorable Felix Frankfurter (D.C.) Associate Justice Supreme Court of the United States
The Honorable Percival P. Baxter 655 Congress Street	(Me)	Washington, D. C.
Portland, Maine		The Honorable J. W. Fulbright (Ark) Senator from the State of Arkansas
Dr. Ralph J. Bunche Under Secretary of the United Natio New York 17, New York	(NY) ons	United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.
The Honorable James F. Byrnes 501 Security Federal Building Columbia, South Carolina	(SC)	Dr. Frank P. Graham (NC) United Nations, Room CB 16 New York 17, New York
The Honorable Millard F. Caldwell Brook Building Tallahassee, Florida	(Fla)	The Honorable Herbert Hoover (NY) The Waldorf Astoria Towers New York 22, New York
The Honorable LeRoy Collins Governor of Florida Office of the Governor	(Fla)	The Honorable Hubert H. Humphrey (Minn) Senator from the State of Minnesota United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.
Tallahassee, Florida  The Honorable John Sherman Cooper Senator from the State of Kentucky United States Senate Office Buildi		The Honorable Jacob K. Javits (NY) Senator from the State of New York The United States Senate Office Bldg. Washington, D. C.
Washington 25, D. C.  The Honorable L. W. Douglas Mutual Life Insurance Company 1740 Broadway	(Ariz)	Dr. James R. Killian, Jr. (Mass) Assistant to the President for Science and Technology The White House, Washington, D. C.
New York 19, New York  The Honorable Marriner S. Eccles Chairman of the Board	(Utah)	The Honorable Walter J. Kohler (Wis) 101 Cambridge Road Kohler, Wisconsin
First Security Corporation 79 South Main Street Salt Lake City, Utah	V	The Honorable Herbert H. Lehman (NY) 41 East 57th Street, Suite 2704 New York 22, New York
The Honorable Ralph E. Flanders Senator from the State of Vermont United States Senate Office Buildi Washington 25, D. C.	(Vt)	The Honorable Neil H. McElroy (Ohio) The Secretary of Defense Washington, D. C.
	77	

#### ELECTORS - HALL OF FAME - 1960

#### ACTUAL OR FORMER HIGH PUBLIC OFFICIALS (CONTINUED)

The Honorable James E. Murray (Mont) Senator from the State of Montana United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.	The Honorable Adlai E. Stevenson 135 South LaSalle Street Chicago 3, Illinois	(111)
The Honorable Richard L. Neuberger (Ore) Senator from the State of Cregon United States Senate Office Building Washington 25, D. C.	The Honorable Hatton W. Summers The Southwestern Legal Center Hillcrest at Daniels Dallas, Texas	(Tex)
The Honorable Joseph C. O'Mahoney (Wyo) Senator from the State of Wyoming United States Senate Office Building	The Honorable Henry A. Wallace South Salem New York	(NY)
Washington 25, D. C.  The Honorable Mr. Frederick A. Seaton(Neb) The Secretary of the Interior Washington, D. C.	The Honorable Arthur V. Watkins 1433 North Inglewood Street Arlington, Virginia	(Utah)
The Honorable Harold E. Stassen (Pa) 1144 Fidelity-Philadelphia Trust Bldg. Philadelphia 9, Pennsylvania		

#### ACTUAL OR FORMER JUSTICES, NATIONAL OR STATE

The Honorable Florence E. Allen Circuit Judge	(Ohio)	The Honorable William J. Jameson (Mont) United States District Judge
United States Court of Appeals		United States District Court
Cleveland 14, Ohio		District of Montana
		Billings, Montana
The Honorable Learned Hand	(NY)	
Judge Learned Hand's Chambers		The Honorable John C. Knox (NY)
United States Court House		United States District Court
New York 7, New York		Judge Knox's Chambers
		Foley Square
The Honorable Matthew W. Hill	(Wash)	New York 7, New York
Chief Justice		
The Supreme Court		The Honorable Charles L. Terry, Jr.
State of Washington		President Judge, Superior Court (Del)
Olympia, Washington		State of Delaware
		Court House, Dover, Delaware

The Association of Graduates
WEST POINT, N. Y.







General Carl Spaatz Newsweek 1229 National Press Building Washington 4, D. C. August 30, 1960

Colonel Benjamin F. Castle 3042 N Street, N. W. Washington 7, D. C.

Dear Ben:

Thanks ever so much for your very nice letter of August 11. I am happy that you had a chance to meet Bill Hasset. I consider gim one of our finest Americans.

I, too, am glad that I could be with you at the cemetery.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

#### BENJAMIN F. CASTLE 3042 N STREET, N.W. WASHINGTON 7, D. C.

11 August 1960

Dear Twoey:

I think you will be interested in the enclosed letter from Westbrook Pegler. Also, may I invite your attention to the article about General Pershing in the last issue of the American Legion Magazine.

When I saw you at Henri-Chapelle, I did not have time to bring you greetings from Bill Hasset whom I met in Louisville at the wedding of Marya's niece. He evidently is one of your great admirers. I had never met him before, and I liked him very much. As you know, he lives in Vermont in a small town called Northfield. It appears that he is a friend of the bridegroom who was involved in the wedding at Louisville.

I want you to know, Twoey, that I very greatly and deeply appreciated the kind thought you had when you walked down from the memorial colonnade to meet me after I had been down to pay my respects to Freddie's grave. It was one of a type of acts of friendship which give one a very warm feeling about the cockles of the heart.

I hope to see you soon.

Best regards.

Sincerely,

Benjamin F. Castle

Encl.

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland Bank of China Head Office Taipei

"CHUNGKUO" CODES USED: PETERSON INTERNATIONAL, SED ED BENTLEY'S SECOND PHRASE

CABLE ADDRESS

2ND. SECTION TAIPEI, TAIWAN TEL. 42255

April 1, 1960.

Gen. Carl A. Spaatz, 7405 Oak Lane, Chevy Chase, Maryland,

Dear General Spaatz:

I acknowledge with thanks the receipt of your kind letter dated March 22. While we regret that your official duties prevent you from attending the dedication ceremony of the late Gen. C. L. Chennault's statue, your message is gratefully received.

Your message is indeed a very fitting tribute to the greatness of the late Gen. Chennault whom all the Chinese admire and respect. We share your thought that in his demise Free China has lost a great friend.

As requested, your message will be printed in a special pamphlet to be distributed to all friends attending this cerémony; and in due course, you will receive a copy of it for your perusal and file.

With kind regards,

R. C. Chen Chairman Chennault Memorial Committee

RCC: hhs

April 13, 1960

Mr. Leo Cherne
Executive Director
Research Institute of America, Inc.
589 Fifth Avenue
New York 17, N Y

Dear Cherne:

Receipt is acknowledged of your letter dated April 7. I regret very much that Mrs. Spaatz cannot be with me on this occasion.

Your description of the program sounds most interesting and I am looking forward to being with you.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz



Tile

The Research Institute of America, Inc. Carl Hovgard, Bro. Seo Cherne, Esca Div Joseph D. Ardleigh, Esca Vice Bro. 589 Tefth Avenue, New York 14, N.Y.

January 7, 1960

General Carl Spaatz Newsweek Magazine 1227 National Press Building Washington, D. C.

Dear General:

I was delighted to receive your note indicating your intention to be with us on April 27th at the Waldorf for the presentation of the "Living History of the Critical Years: 1935-1960" on the occasion of the Research Institute's Twenty-Fifth Anniversary. You will be interested, I'm sure, to know that a great number of those included on the list have also indicated their plans to attend. From our conversations with Professor Allan Nevins, we know that this will be a memorable occasion. A few of those who intend to be present are: Ralph Bunche, Robert Frost, General Lucius Clay, Paul Hoffman, Henry Cabot Lodge, Alfred Sloan, Jr., Mrs. Franklin D. Roosevelt, Bernard Baruch, James A. Farley, General James A. Van Fleet, Henry Wallace, Charles E. Wilson, Dr. James Conant, Harold Stassen, Sherman Adams.

I shall send you detailed plans for the program as soon as this material is prepared, as well as the suggested text of the remarks emphasizing your contribution to our country's growth, for your comment and suggestion.

With warm personal regards.

Sincerely,

Leo Cherne

Executive Director

LC:meb

March 22, 1960

Mr. R. C. Chen Chairman Committee on Chennault Memorial Bank of China Taipei, Taiwan

Dear Mr. Chen:

I appreciate very much the invitation to attend the unveiling ceremony of the statute of the late General Chennault on Thursday, April 14. Since I will not be able to attend this ceremony, I am sending this message which may be read:

Today you are doing honor to one of the staunch, heroic aviators of a previous generation. In these days of supersonic airplanes and ballistic missiles we sometimes forget the heroic efforts of men like Chennault. He was an outstanding man in his generation as he would have been in any generation and all honor is due his memory.

Sincerely,

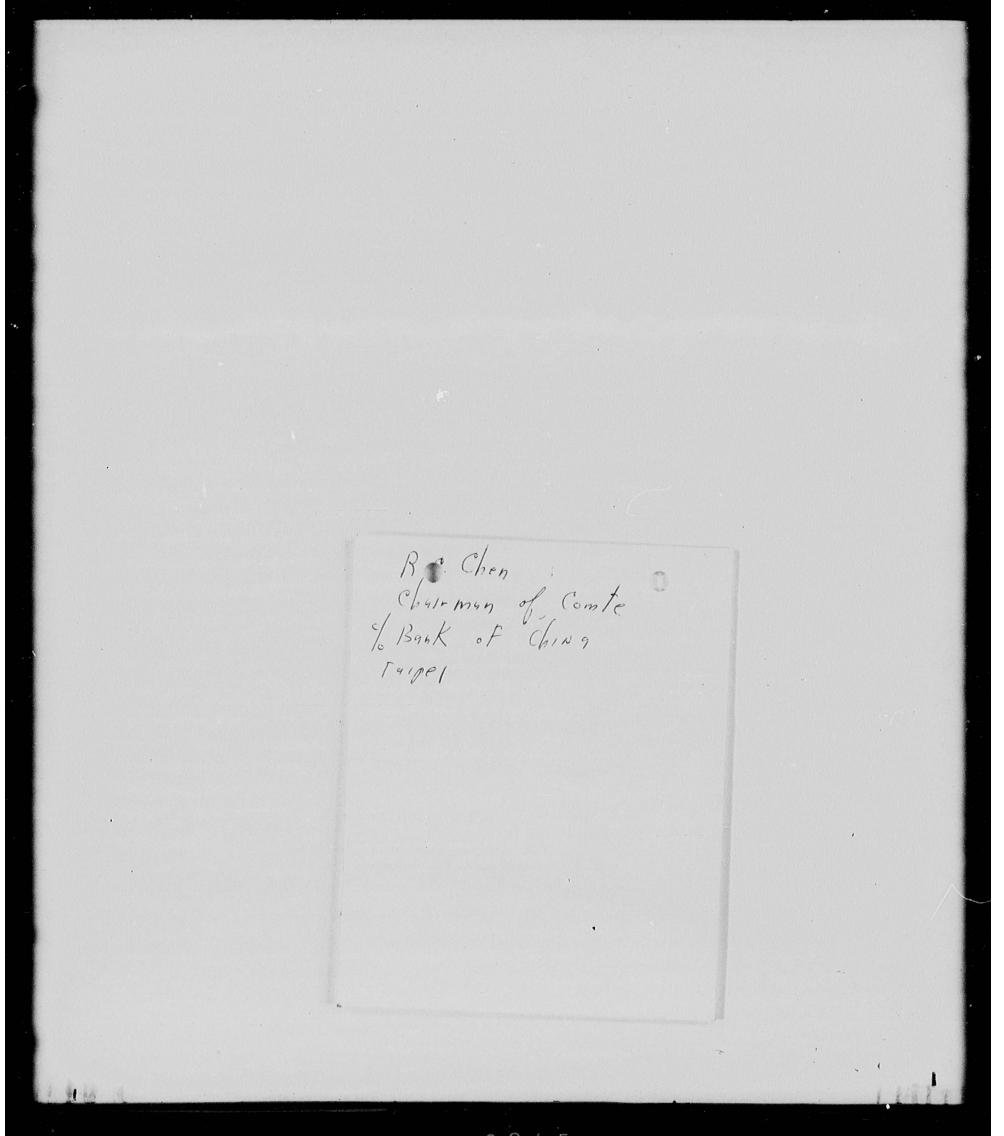
General Carl Spaatz

The Cammittee on Chennault Memorial
requests the honor of your presence
at the Unveiling Ceremony of the Statue
of the late Licut. General Claire L. Chennault
to be afficiated by

Her Excellency Mme. Chiang Kai-shek
on Thursday, April 14, 1960
at 10:80 a.m.

New Park, Chieh Shau Road
Taipei, Taiwan, China

If unable to attend, would appreciate message to read at ceremony.



March 24, 1960

Chairman Membership Committee Burning Tree Club Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir:

It has come to my attention that Lt. Gen. Roger M. Ramey, USAF, ret., has applied for membership in the Burning Tree Club.

I wholeheartedly recommend his consideration for membership and would appreciate anything you might do in his behalf.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz USAF, ret.

#### BENJAMIN F. CASTLE

3042 N STREET, N. W. WASHINGTON 7, D. C.

17 March 1960

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Twoey:

Nate Twining and I have proposed Lt. General Roger M. Ramey, USAF, ret., for membership in Burning Tree Club. I believe you are acquainted with him, and I think he would be appreciative if you would write a letter to the Membership Committee on his behalf.

Best regards.

Sincerely,

Benjamin F. Castle

October 27, 1959

Mrs. Ada Smythe Landon School Bethesda Washington 14, D. C.

Dear Mrs. Smythe:

Receipt is acknowledged of your letter dated October 22nd reference Barry, the son of Mr. and Mrs. Charles B. Crawford.

I can highly recommend the Crawfords to you. She, as you probably know, is the daughter of Lyle Wilson, head of the Washington Bureau of United Press International. Lyle and Mrs. Crawford's late mother have been very close friends of mine for years. I am the godfather of their son, Barry.

From the above, you can see that I would appreciate favorable consideration of the application for admission.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

LANDON SCHOOL BETHESDA WASHINGTON 14, D. G.

October 22, 1959

General Carl A. Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear General Spaatz:

Mr. and Mrs. Charles B. Crawford have made application to this school for admission of their son, Barry.

They have given us your name as a reference and we should greatly appreciate a note from you concerning them. We shall, of course, treat this information as strictly confidential.

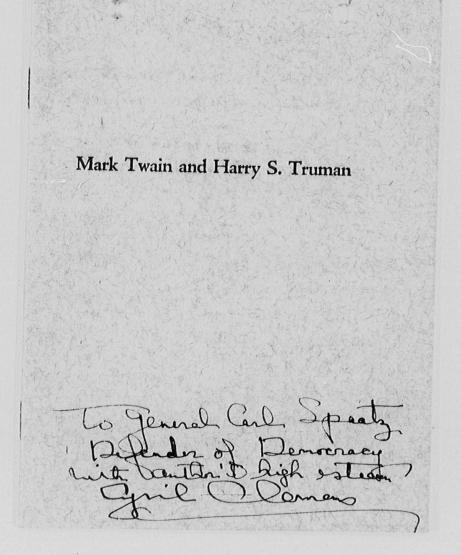
Enclosed is a self-addressed envelope for your convenience.

Very truly yours,

(mrs.) Ada SmythE

Ada Smythe Registrar

Enclosure



## Books by Cyril Clemens

THE MAN FROM MISSOURI: Truman's First Biography

THE MAN FROM LIMEHOUSE: Clement Attlee's First Biography

MARK TWAIN AND FRANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT

THE LITERARY EDUCATION OF FRANKLIN D. ROOSE-VEET

Young Sam CLEMENS

MARK TWAIN WIT AND WISDOM

My Kinsman Mark Twain

An Evening With A. E. Housman

A CHAT WITH ROBERT FROST

A CHAT WITH THOMAS HARDY

JOSH BILLINGS, YANKEE HUMORIST

LIFE OF BENJAMIN P. SHILLABER

LIFE OF PETROLEUM V. NASBY

MARK TWAIN AND MUSSOLINI

CHESTERTON AS SEEN BY HIS CONTEMPORARIES

TRUMAN SPEAKS

mark Twain and Harry S. T. aman

Cyril Chemens

Author of

"MARK TWAIN AND CANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT"

FOREWORD

liv

THE HONORABLE LOUIS JOHNSON

Secretary of Defense

Neternational Mark Twain Society
Welster Groves, Missouri
1950

T. Werner Laurie, Limited London, England

-1-

RT. Hon. WINSTON CHURCHILL Chairman, Biographical Committee

International Mark Twain Society

## RT. HON. WINSTON CHURCHILL

English Representative since 1937 of the International Mark Twain Society, personal friend of Samuel L. Clemens and Harry S. Truman, and 1943 Recipient of the Mark Twain Gold Medal.

> Whitehall 25 October, 1943.

I am writing to express my thanks to the International Mark Twain Society for their Gold Medal, which has been handed to me by Mr. Philip Guedalla.

It will serve to keep fresh my memory of a great

American, who showed me much kindness when I visited New York as a young man by taking the chair at my first public lecture and by autographing copies of his works, which still form a valued part of my library.

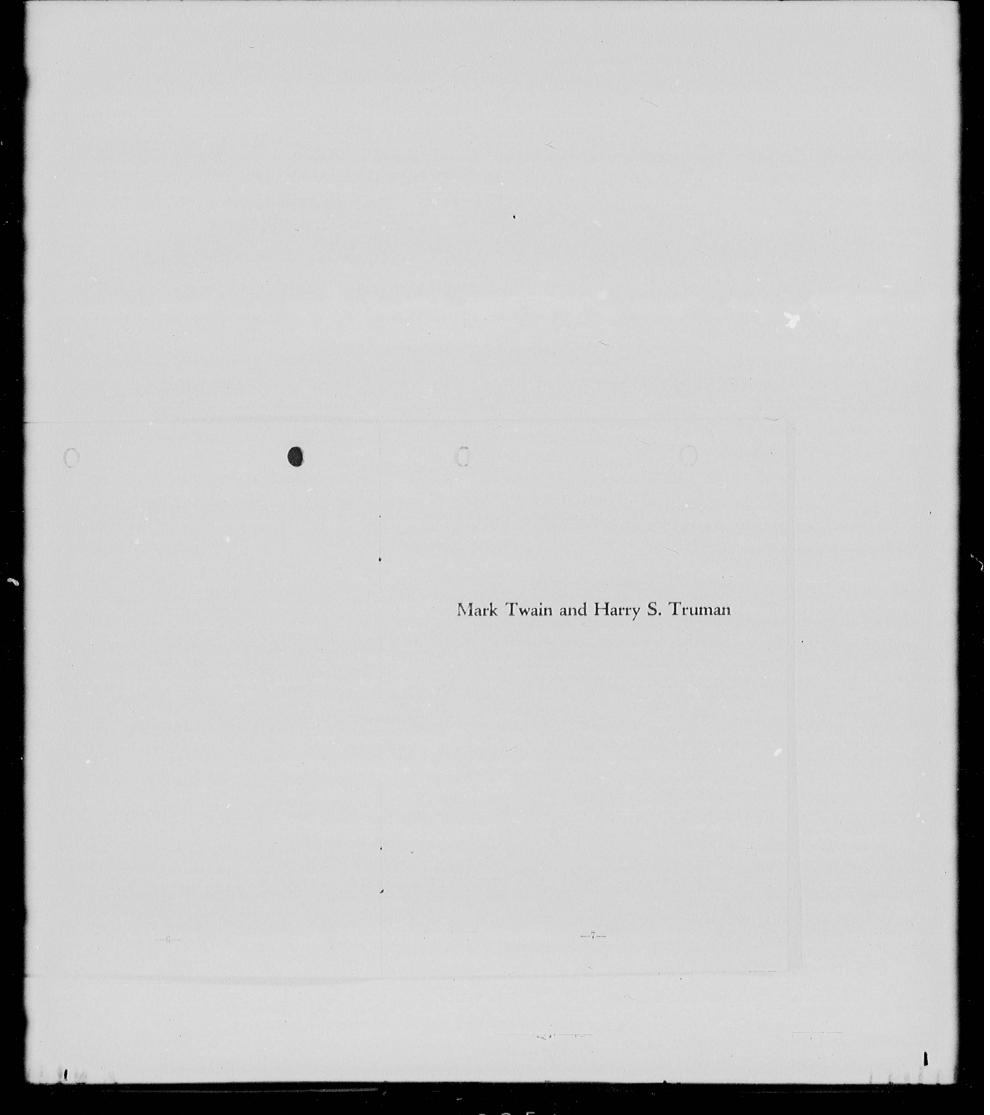
WINSTON S. CHURCHILL.

#### FOREWORD

Through Mark Twain's writings I have learned to admire Mark Twain's deep understanding of American life and to appreciate his contributions to the literature, the lore and the humor that enrich our history. It is fitting that his memory and his works should be kept alive by come en orative tributes such as the one under ampices of the International Mark Twain Society.

Louis Journon,

May 15, 1930.



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526

## MARK TWAIN AND HARRY S. TK JAN

There is no keener Mark Twain enthusiast living today than President Harry S. Truman, his fellow Missourian. Like his great predecessor, Franklin D. Roosevelt, he has read everything that Mark Twain has written several times over, and often quotes from his writings. He has stated on many occasions that Mark Twain is his favorite author. And Mr. Truman has made several pilgrimages to the little hamlet of Florida, Missouri, Mark Twain's birthplace, and to Hannibal, the St. Petersburg of "The Adventures of Tom Sawyer", his boyhood home. His signature can be seen on the guest book of the Mark Twain Museum which stands next to the Clemens home on Hill Street in Hannibal. The book also contains the names of Franklin D, Roosevelt, Herbert Hoover, John J. Pershing and other distinguished Americans.

Truman wrote me the following letter about his boyhood reading while he was still a Senator:

Grandview, Missouri August 28, 1944.

Dear Cyril Clemens:

Your card addressed to my mother was handed to me by her.

I learned to read when I was about four years old and from then on read everything I could get my hands on—histories and encyclopedias, and everything else.

Before I was twelve years old I had read everything Mark Twain had published up to that time. I have the

purported complete set of his works put out by Harper Brothers, and a lot of other publications of articles which have never been included in his books.

I hope this answers your questions.

"Harry began to read when he was just a little fellow and acquired a great habit for books. Without any doubt his favorite author was Mark Twain.

On September 5th, 1897, at the age of thirteen, Truman entered the Independence High School, from which he graduated in June, 1901, in a class of eleven boys and thirty girls. Among the latter was Bess Wallace, his future wife. His principal teacher during

"Harry had plenty of hunting and riding out on the farm nine miles from Independence. His people were the salt of the earth. After plowing and chores and chasing calves, Harry didn't come to school for exercise. When he got to town he was glad to sit down and read and take advantage of the library. Besides, he was near-sighted and couldn't play ball with the other boys. But like the youthful Charles Dickens he passed his spare time in reading, and

whereas the boy Dickens read Fielding and Smoller, the boy Truman read and revelled in Mark Twain." Mrs. W. L. C. Palmer, who as Miss Ardelia Hardin, taught Truman Latin and mathematics said of her

at Grandview. For, after working in several Kansas

worked as a typical dirt farmer side by side with his

Oion. I am most appreciative of the complement paid me in electing me to membership in the Society honor-ing Missouri's great citizen." And we might as well follow this with Harry's own letter of acceptance, written less than a month before he assumed the Presidency.

I cannot tell you how much I appreciated your card of congratulations. I didn't know I had so many friends until this happened.

With kindest regards and best wishes, I am

And then he added in his own hand:

"I'm still telling Mark Twain stories."

While Truman was serving in the United States Senate from January 3rd, 1935, to January 19th, 1945, he made frequent references to Mark Twain in his various speeches on the Senate floor. On April 21st, 1944, Senator Truman said:

"Mr. President, today marks the thirty-fourth anniversary of the death of Samuel L. Clemens, better known as Mark Twain, who was a native of my state having lived in Hamilbal.

"Mark Twain was the greatest humorist in the world, who made the world happier by living in it. His keen observations will live forever."

In one of the very few speeches made during the eighty odd days that he was Vice President of the United States, Truman said at Jefferson City, Missouri on February 22, 1945;

"I wonder if it may not be such simple characters as Tom Sawyer and Huckleberry Finn, who will, as symbols, show the world our undying contribution to the civilization on our continent. I do not refer entirely to the literary genius—of Sam Clemens, but rather to the wholesome type of Americans he portrayed so understandingly. They are our people and our lives. I feel that his healthy American characters, with their tolerance, energy and ambitions, really represent the citizens of our State (Missouri)—frank, industrious, and sympathetic, but above all. Americans!

While intolerance is running rampant throughout the world, we need more friendly people, like those who grew so naturally out of the mind of Mark Twain, that kindly humorist from Hannibal, to guide us back to basic principles."

And a little later in the same eloquent speech h continued,

"In the years to come our world will have many bard problems to solve. I feel that Americans fully intend to have their say as to the future destiny of mankind on the shrinking planet. Americans never were prone to follow others meekly, but usually were found among the leaders, especially when the public welfare was involved.

"No matter how grave the post-war problems may be, I am sure that our American sense of proportion and—yes—our sense of humor, will see us through to victory. Like the living characters of Mark Twain, we shall continue to do our job with characteristic American energy and enthusiasm."

Although the Truman desk in the great oval White House Presidential office does not have nearly as many nicknacks and souvenirs on its shiny surface as that of the late Franklin D. Roosevelt, it does contain a carefully framed facsimile of one of Mark Twain's most famous sayings:

"ALWAYS BE GOOD—THIS WILL GRATIFY SOME PEOPLE AND ASTONISH THE REST." And in a speech delivered not long ago, President

Truma noted Mark's saying on statesmen:
"If we had less statesmanship, we could get along with fewer battleships."

And in conclusion let us remember that Harry S. Trun an is a firm believer in what Mark Twain said on good government:

"No country can be well governed unless its citizens as a body keep religiously before their minds that they are the guardians of the law, and that the law officers are only the machinery for its execution, — NOTH-ING MORE."

And- the President also agrees with what Mark Twain said against regimentation:

The mania for giving the Government power to meddle with the private affairs of cities or citizens is likely to cause endless trouble, through the rivalry of schools and creeds that are anxious to obtain official recognition, and there is great danger that our people will lose our independence of thought and action which is the cause of much of our greatness, and sink into the helplessness of the Frenchman or German who expects his government to feed him when hungry, clothe him when naked, to prescribe when his child may be born and when he may die, and, in fine, to regulare every act of himanity from the cradle to the tomb, including the manner in which he may seek future admission to paradise."

-16-

COMMUNITY PRESS

1///

CAP

Memo: Reference exchange of C-47 presently attached to Headquarters CAP for a Convair or Martin 404 (the understanding is that Air Force presently has the authority to purchase "off the shelf" commercial versions of transport type equipment.)

I have been considerably disturbed relative to several items pertaining to CAP. You may recall our meeting last August in my home, at which time we discussed problems that were confronting CAP. The next day Vic Beau covered in detail these same problems with Tommy White. To date there has been no action from the Air Staff relative to the matters we discussed.

Last April I gave to the Secretary a suggestion by memo that the Air Force consider very seriously the possibility of giving CAP cadets flying training on a limited scale. As of this writing, I have neither heard from the Secretary or have I obtained any indication from the Air Staff as to the acceptability or inacceptability of this proposal.

For the past six months, Headquarters CAP has been trying to find an outstanding officer for New York City as Regional Liaison Officer. In my opinion, CAP has not been given the proper consideration for so important an assignment. Suggest very strongly that every effort be made to find an unusually well qualified officer than who can ably represent the Air Force in such a significant area.

Sincerely,

CARL A. SPAATZ General, USAF (Ret.)

#### PRAFT

MEMORANDUM FOR GENERAL TWINING:

I have been considerably disturbed relative to several items pertaining the CAP. You may recall our meeting last August in my home, at which time we discussed problems that were confronting CAP. The next day Vic Beau covered in detail these same problems with Tommy White. To date there has been no action from the Air Staff relative to the matters we discussed.

Last April I gave to the Secretary a suggestion by memo that the Air Force consider very seriously the possibility of giving CAP cadets flying training on a limited scale. As of this writing, I have neither heard from the Secretary or have I obtained any indication from the Air Staff as to the acceptability or inacceptability of this proposal.

For the past six months, Headquarters CAP has been trying to find an outstanding efficer for New York City as Regional Liaison Officer. In my opinion, CAP has not been given the proper consideration for so important an assignment. Suggest very strongly that every effort be made to find an unusually well qualified officer kkm who can ably represent the Air Force in such a significant area.

Sincerely,

CARL A. SPAATZ General, USAF (Ret.) November 3, 1959

Major General Delmar T. Spivey, USAF (Ret.) Superintendent Culver Military Academy Culver, Indiana

Dear Del:

I appreciate very much your letter of October 30th.

I am sure that being Superintendent of Culver Military Academy will be a wonderful experience for you. In my opinion, it is probably the best of the civilian military academies, if not the best.

I will keep your suggestion in mind about Management Food Service when I next meet with the Board of Directors of Litton Industries.

Please remember me to Reuben and Eve Fleet when they meet with you for the next Board Meeting of The Culver Educational Foundation.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

#### CULVER MILITARY ACADEMY

THE CULVER EDUCATIONAL FOUNDATION

CULVER, INDIANA

OFFICE OF THE SUPERINTENDENT

October 30, 1959

General Carl Spaatz, USAF (Ret.) 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear General:

I have been intending to write to you ever since I arrived at Culver Military Academy to thank you for the fine recommendation you gave our mutual friend, Reuben Fleet, when he inquired as to my suitability to be Superintendent of Culver. This has indeed been a rewarding and challenging experience and it is a great privilege for me to continue being useful to my country by working with these 800 well chosen, splendid youngsters.

Recently I learned that Litton Industries is considering going to a commercial type food service and that Management Food Service, Inc. of Philadelphia is interested in doing the job for you. This organization is a subsidiary of The Stouffer Corporation and has operated our mess here at Culver for the past year and a half. They certainly have done a fine job for us in every respect. Their personnel are extremely competent, their variety, quality, quantity, and preparation of the food all have greatly improved without greatly increasing the cost of the operation of the mess as a whole. I can certainly recommend their service to you.

Reuben and Eve Fleet will be here next week for the Board Meeting of The Culver Educational Foundation as he is a member of the Board. We often discuss the Air Force and do a bit of reminiscing concerning the good old days. I follow your articles and public statements with interest and applaud the good work you are doing for the Air Force after your retirement.

If you are ever in this part of the country it would be our great pleasure to have you stop by and visit us at Culver and allow us to show you one of the finest schools in the country.

Sincerely yours,

hlel DELMAR T. SPIVEY

Major General, USAF (Ret.) Superintendent

S#S



1229 NATIONAL PRESS BUILDING WASHINGTON 4, D. C.

Oct. 7.

Dear General-

Up to now, you haven't missed much by being away from the world. K has been and gome. Much commotion but nothing tangible accomplished. The Dodgers are ahead. The Old Man is back from Russia complaining about Teddy's services as guide; Teddy in turn complains that Mrs. Muir is the bitch to end bitches. Sally finally wangled the money to pay Ralph's plane fare, so that problem is solved.

Kennedy seems to be slipping a little and Symington and Johnson are coming up. I still think it will be Stevenson in the end. Rockefeller hasn't made up his mind and Nixon is improving in the polls. But my private advices from George are that the President would now like the third term amendment repealed in order to be able to turn the convention to Rockefeller if the opportunity should present itself. "Tell your friend on Newsweek to write something in favor of repeal," George quotes Ike. But I can't write and editorial and so far haven't found anybody willing to holler for repeal; the Republicans are afraid of outraging Nixon and the Democrats don't want to be threatened with Ike again.

Betty and I have just spent a week off at Ball Alley. The summer birds are mostly gone but there has been an invasion of juncos and warblers, the latter, I preasme, migrating. They have been too fidgety to identify. We made one contribution to the improvement of the breed at Shenendoah Downs but otherwise exercised pretty good sense. Discovered that The Battletown Inn in Berryville is as good a restaurant as there is in this part of the world.

George finally got Ike to vacation at his place in the California desert. That should be worth 20 more irectorates. We plan to finish up his

THE MAGAZINE OF NEWS SIGNIFICANCE



1229 NATIONAL PRESS BUILDING WASHINGTON 4, D. C.

revision for Presidents Who Have Known Me in the next couple weeks. Maybe Goerge's publicity as the President's host will sell a book or two.

The Old Man and large retenue from N.Y. will be down for the White House Correspondents' dinner Monday night. Ike will attend -- his first such appearance in quite a while. William Crawford, prominent N.Y. radio journalist, will be my guest. Also G.Allen. I just got us three removed from the Old Man's table. We may even have some fund.

We have just got an allotment of ten tickets for the game you're going to see in New York but I probably won't make it. Hope you'll be stopping off here.

Love to Ruth.

Ken

#### EIGHTY-SIXTH CONG.

JOHN A. BURNS, HAWAII A. FERNÓS-ISERN, PUERTO RICO

WAYNE N. ASPINALL, COLO., CHAIRMAN
BRIEN, N.Y.
ROGERS, TEX.
JOHN P. SAYLOR, PA.
JERNEST WHARTON, N.Y.
E. Y. BERRY, S. DAN.
HALEY, FLA.
JOKK WESTLAND, WASH.
COMBLIL, N.Y.
CRAIG HOSMER, CALIF.
JEOGAR CHENOWETH, COLO.
HAROLD R. COLLIER, ILL.
C, CALIF.
L, UDALL, ARIZ.
LERPORO, TEX.
S. BARING, NEV.
N. OREO.
NO. OREO.
ANDERSON, MONT.

COMMITTEE ON INTERIOR AND INSULAR AFFAIRS Mouse of Representatibes, El. S. WASHINGTON, D. C. March 23, 1959

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

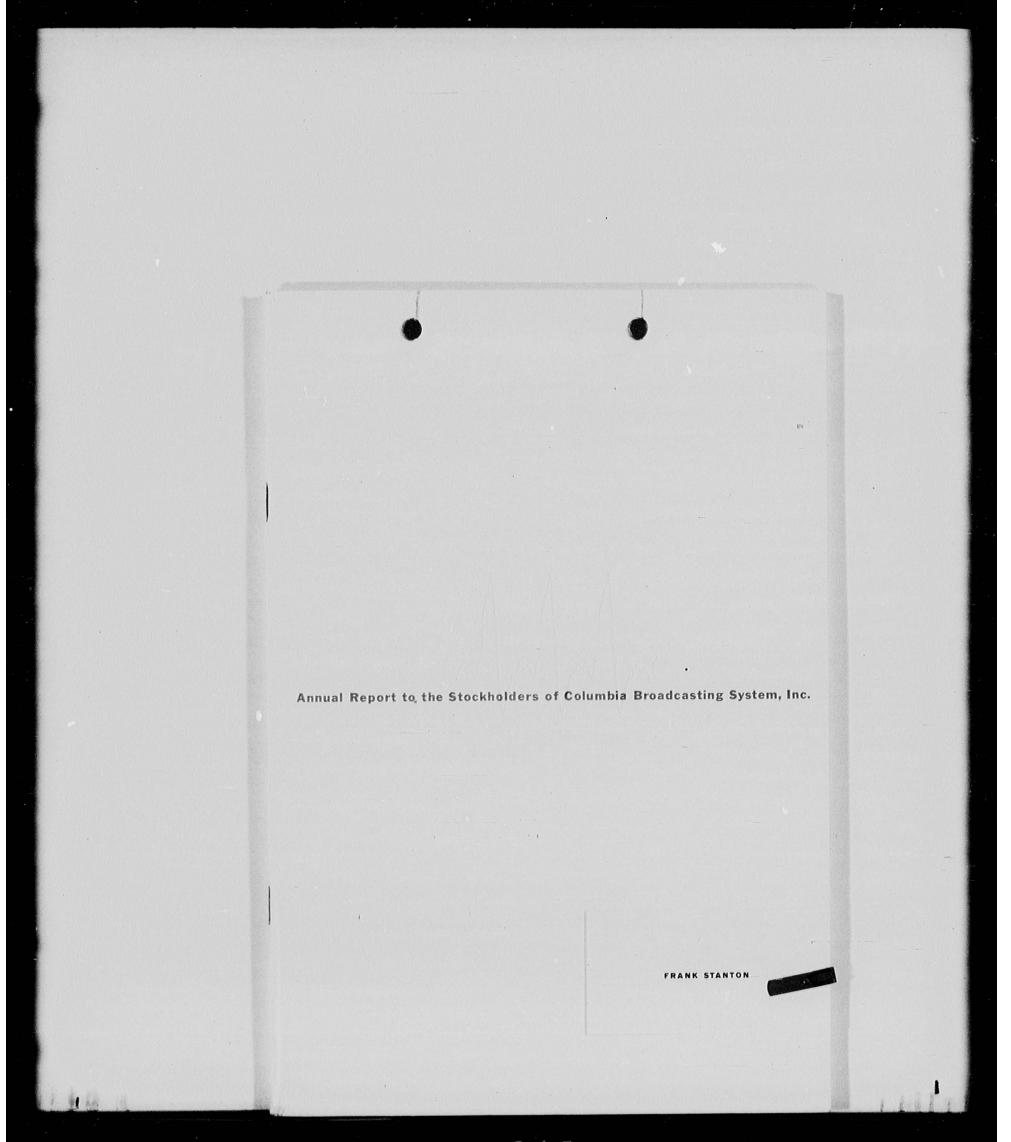
Dear General Spaatz:

This will acknowledge your letter of March 18 in regard to legislation which would establish the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal National Historical Park.

Mrs. Pfost, Chairman of the Subcommittee on Public Lands, has asked me to advise you that the Subcommittee is presently holding hearings on these bills and that your letter will be made a part of the

Sincerely yours,

Kouf S. Landitas Karl S. Landstrom, Consultant On Public Lands



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526

# COLUMBIA BROADCASTING SYSTEM, INC.

Annual Report to the Stockholders for the Fiscal Year ended January 3, 1959

EXECUTIVE OFFICES
485 Madison Avenue
New York 22, N. Y.

#### Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc.

Board of Directors WILLIAM S. PALEY, Chairman LEON LEVY SAMUEL PALEY J. A. W. IGLEHART RALPH F. COLIN FRANK STANTON ROBERT A. LOVETT ARTHUR HULL HAYES HENRY C. BONFIG MILLICENT C. MCINTOSH GODDARD LIEBERSON MERLE S. JONES ARTHUR L. CHAPMAN LOUIS G. COWAN

Officers WILLIAM S. PALEY, Chairman of the Board

FRANK STANTON, President JAMES T. AUBREY, JR., Vice President HENRY C. BONFIG, Vice President ARTHUR L. CHAPMAN, Vice President L. BYRON CHERRY, Vice President LOUIS G. COWAN, Vice President WILLIAM C. FITTS, JR., Vice President PETER C. GOLDMARK, Vice President LEWIS GORDON, Vice President ARTHUR HULL HAYES, Vice President CLARENCE H. HOPPER, Vice President MERLE S. JONES, Vice President GODDARD LIEBERSON, Vice President LAWRENCE W. LOWMAN, Vice President EVERARD KIDDER MEADE, JR., Vice President SIG MICKELSON, Vice President JOSEPH H. REAM, Vice President RICHARD S. SALANT, Vice President JULIUS F. BRAUNER, Secretary SAMUEL R. DEAN, Treasurer HAROLD C. LANG, Controller RICHARD W. JENCKS, Assistant Secretary MILTON R. NEAMAN, Assistant Secretary

#### **CBS** Radio

ARTHUR HULL HAYES, President JAMES M. SEWARD, GEORGE J. ARKEDIS, Vice President H. LESLIE ATLASS, Vice President HOWARD G. BARNES. Vice President I. S. BECKER, Vice President JULES DUNDES, Vice President HORACE R. GUILLOTTE, Vice President LOUIS HAUSMAN, Vice President JOHN J. KAROL, Vice President WILLIAM A. SCHUDT, JR., Vice President GERALDINE B. ZORBAUGH, Vice President

#### **CBS Television Network**

LOUIS G. COWAN, President HUBBELL ROBINSON, JR., EDMUND C. BUNKER, Vice President MICHAEL DANN, Vice President THOMAS H. DAWSON, Vice President GUY DELLA CIOPPA, Vice President WILLIAM DOZIER, Vice President PHILIP FELDMAN, Vice President THOMAS K. FISHER, Vice President W. SPENCER HARRISON, Vice President WILLIAM H. HYLAN, Vice President OSCAR KATZ, Vice President WILLIAM B. LODGE, Vice President HARRY G. OMMERLE, Vice President EDWARD L. SAXE, Vice President CARL S. WARD, Vice President ROBERT M. WEITMAN, Vice President HAROLD C. LANG, Acting Controller

#### **CBS** Television Stations

MERLE S. JONES, President JOHN P. COWDEN, Vice President THOMAS K. FISHER, Vice President CRAIG R. LAWRENCE, Vice President WILLIAM J. FLYNN, Controller

#### Columbia Records

GODDARD LIEBERSON, President HERBERT M. GREENSPON. NORMAN A. ADLER, Vice President ALBERT B. EARL, Vice President ALFRED B. LORBER, Vice President A. J. SCHRADE, Vice President W. G. WILKINS, Controller

#### **CBS-Hytron**

ARTHUR L. CHAPMAN. President REED V. BONTECOU, Vice President MICHAEL F. CALLAHAN, Vice President NORMAN L. HARVEY, Vice President ROBERT G. MARCHISIO, Vice President JAMES J. SHALLOW, Vice President WALTER J. HUNGERFORD, Controller

#### **CBS** Laboratories

PETER C. GOLDMARK, President JOSEPH E. BAMBARA, Vice President BENJAMIN B. BAUER, Vice President JOHN W. CHRISTENSEN, Vice President

#### **CBS** International

LEWIS GORDON, President WILLIAM P. MUNRO, Vice President

# REGISTRAR, Chemical Corn Exchange Bank PUBLIC AUDITORS. & Montgomery

FINANCE COMMITTEE, J. A. W. Iglehart, Chairman Leon Levy Robert A. Lovett William S. Paley

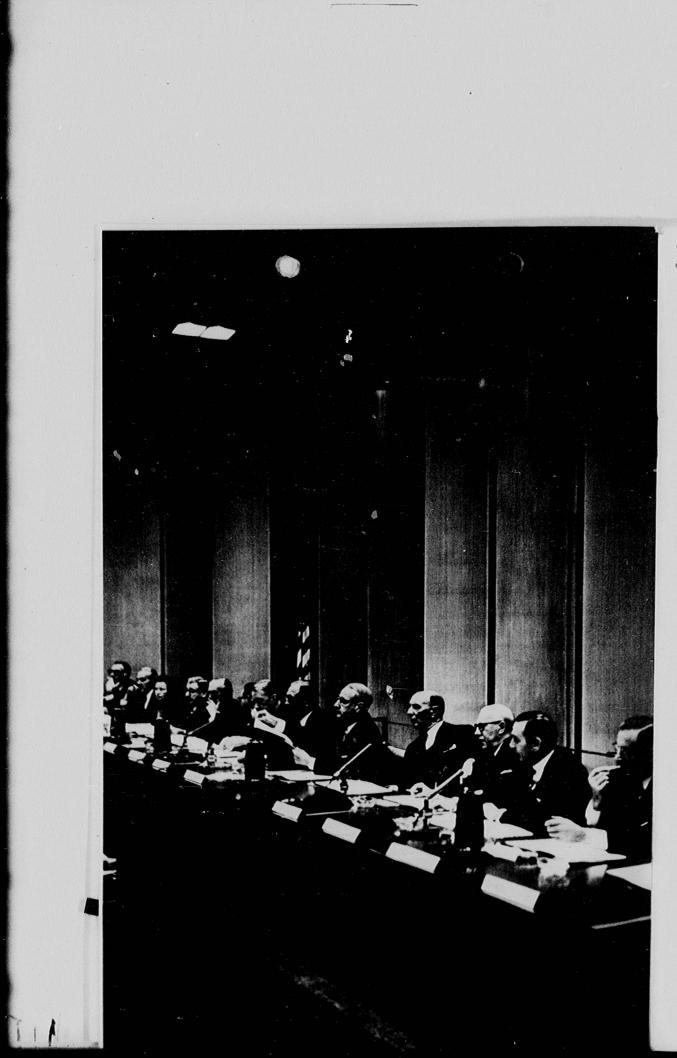
Frank Stanton

GENERAL COUNSEL,

Rosenman Goldmark Colin & Kaye

GENERAL ATTORNEY,

TRANSFER AGENT.



The Board of Directors
at the Special Meeting of Solders

#### To the Stockholders:

In 1958, net sales of Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. reached an all-time high, as did net income after provision for taxes. The table below compares the 1958 record with that of 1957. A ten-year financial summary appears on page 70.

		1958*	1957
Net Sales	-	\$411,800,203	\$385,409,018
Net Income		-24,428,812	22,193,367
Earnings per Share		\$3.10	\$2.81**
			4-1

\*53 Weeks \*\* Adjusted for Stock Dividend

Cash dividends of \$1.00 per share were paid in 1958, plus a stock dividend of three per cent, paid on January 16, 1959. (Detailed financial reports begin on page 64.)

1958 saw many notable developments:

The rounding out of the first decade of network television with the CBS Television Network holding its position as the world's largest advertising medium for the fifth consecutive year.

The tenth anniversary of the successful introduction of the CBSpioneered long-playing phonograph record, to which the element of stereophonic sound has now successfully been added.

The coming of age of video tape recording—which, by adding sight to sound on a magnetic tape, can contribute enormously to the flexibility with which programs may be created.

The first full year of CBS News as a separate operating Division, among whose achievements were the broadcasting of the 1958 election returns with a speed, accuracy and coverage hitherto unmatched; and the production of 145 network news broadcasts *weekly*; and of 800 half hours of public affairs network radio and television programming.

A regrouping of television activities into two major operating Divisions—the CBS Television *Network* Division and the CBS Television *Stations* Division.

The acquisition of two additional VHF television stations, and the sale of one of the two CBS Owned UHF stations—bringing the total of CBS Owned VHF stations to five and UHF stations to one.

An increase of the number of CBS Owned radio stations to seven AM stations and six FM stations.

A change of CBS Class A and Class B stock into a single class of Common Stock, thereby eliminating the former distinction between "A" shares and "B" shares.

**DIVISIONAL OPERATIONS.** Each operating Division is responsible to its own President (in the case of CBS News, its General Manager) who is also a Vice President of Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. Detailed reports of the Presidents form the body of this Annual Report. Following are highlights from these reviews:

The CBS Television Network attracted the largest network audiences for the fourth consecutive year. (Detailed report begins on page 11.)

The units making up the CBS Television Stations Division increased their combined revenues by 18 per cent in 1958, these non-network units accounting for approximately half the profit from CBS television activities. (Detailed report begins on page 23.)

In the CBS Radio Division profits from CBS Owned radio stations and related activities more than offset losses from network operations.

In recent years all nationwide radio networks have operated at a loss. (Detailed report begins on page 33.)

The Columbia Records Division increased sales, during 1958, and maintained its commanding leadership in the field of long-playing records. It brought its first stereophonic discs to the market in quantity. Its pace-setting phonographs were equipped for stereophonic sound and provide a base for the growing sales of stereophonic records in this impressive new development. (Detailed report begins on page 43.)

The CBS-Hytron Division (manufacturer of tubes and semiconductors) increased its sales and its percentage of the market, in 1958, in the face of a recession felt by all electronic component manufacturers. (Detailed report begins on page 51.)

The CBS Laboratories Division opened its new Research Center in Stamford, Connecticut, increased its staff, and expanded work on national defense contracts, while continuing to serve the research needs of CBS operating Divisions. (Detailed report begins on page 57.)

The CBS International Division achieved its highest sales since its formation in 1954. (Detailed report begins on page 61.)

changes in CBS owned stations. At the end of the year, CBS owned and operated five VHF television stations (the maximum allowed under FCC rules and regulations); one UHF television station (one less than maximum); seven AM radio stations (maximum); and six FM radio stations (one less than maximum). These figures reflect the acquisition of KMOX-TV, St. Louis, and WCAU-AM-FM-TV in Philadelphia; and the discontinuance of CBS operation of WHCT, a UHF station in Hartford, Connecticut, which was sold on January 16, 1959. (Details reported on pages 23 and 40.)

CBS NEWS. For the CBS News Division, 1958 was the busiest and most distinguished in the history of the organization. Its staff of more than

600 operated out of  $55\ \mathrm{cities}$  around the world and earned new laurels for journalistic achievement.

In the coverage of national and international scientific and economic developments, as well as political events, the CBS Radio Network and the CBS Television Network presented a new high total of some 93 CBS News Specials—documentary reports which went behind the news for treatment in-depth of the background and significance of the issues involved. At the end of the year, the tenth appraisal of world activities, "Years of Crisis: 1949-1959," was presented on both the radio and television networks.

five years as the agency through which charitable and educational contributions are now made on behalf of CBS and its Divisions. It expanded contributions of unrestricted funds to include five additional graduate schools of universities in the United States. These were from among the privately supported institutions which set the standards of higher education and in large measure supply our leading educators and researchers. During 1958, the second group of eight Fellows began their studies under the annual News and Public Affairs Fellowships established by the Foundation at Columbia University. The Paul W. Kesten Memorial Fellowship in Advertising and Marketing continued successfully at the Harvard Business School, established there by the Foundation in 1957 as a memorial to the late Vice Chairman of the Board of Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc.

MANAGEMENT ANNOUNCEMENTS. Louis G. Cowan was elected to the Board of Directors and appointed President of the CBS Television Network Division. Mr. Cowan had been Vice President—Creative Services.

Merle S. Jones was appointed President of the CBS Television Stations Division. Mr. Jones, who is also a Director, had been President of the CBS Television Division.

James T. Aubrey, Jr. was elected Vice President—Creative Services. Mr. Aubrey had been Vice President of the American Broadcasting Company in charge of programming and talent since 1956. Prior to that he had served as General Manager of KNXT, CBS Owned television station in Los Angeles, and as Manager of CBS Television Network Programs—Hollywood.

The Columbia Phonograph Department was transferred from the Columbia Records Division to the CBS-Hytron Division. The Department's operations are being reorganized and expanded.

**PAYTELEVISION.** Last Spring, as a result of Congressional hearings, the Senate and House Interstate and Foreign Commerce Committees concluded that in the absence of specific Congressional authorization the Federal Communications Commission should not permit tests of pay television systems.

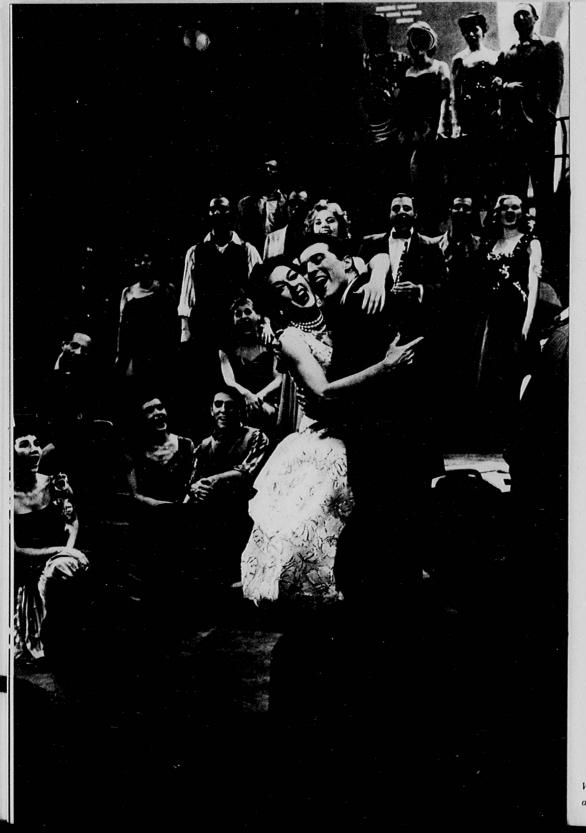
Early in 1959, bills were introduced in Congress which would authorize limited testing of pay television.

We continue to believe that the use of the public's channels for pay television is against the public interest. We believe we have already fully met every reasonable obligation to make our views known and, over the air, to present both sides of the controversy. If our views are sought by the Congress, as proposed legislation comes under discussion, we will of course respond.

**OUTLOOK FOR 1959.** The year 1958 was a year of expanding net sales and increased net income for the Columbia Broadcasting System. We believe 1959 will show a continuation of this trend.

William S. Paley, Chairman of the Board Frank Stanton, President

February 24, 1959



# **Television Network**

CBS TELEVISION NETWORK. Today, after one decade of network television, 86 per cent of the families in the United States own television sets; two million families joined the television audience in 1958, bringing the total to almost  $44\frac{1}{2}$  millions. The family in the United States continued to watch television for an average of about five hours a day.

The CBS Television Network made significant contributions to the progress of its medium. It presented 50 per cent more special news programs than ever before. Its entertainment programs attracted the largest audiences in television, for the fourth consecutive year. For the fifth consecutive year, it was the world's largest single advertising medium. Business invested four per cent more dollars in the Network's schedule than in 1957, and 15 per cent more than in any other network in 1958. The Network had its most profitable year to date.

**NETWORK FACILITIES.** At the close of 1958, the Network was affiliated with 243 stations—200 in the Continental United States, 37 in Canada, two in Puerto Rico, one each in Bermuda, Guam, Hawaii, and Mexico.

During the year, the Network made extensive additions to its video tape facilities. Through a combination of live and tape techniques, programs were able to achieve flexibility which could not have been attempted in earlier years. Similarly, Network advertisers were able to achieve new flexibility in the production of commercial messages.

WONDERFUL TOWN, with Rosalind Russell, drew the biggest audience of any special entertainment show of the current season



 $The \ popular \ Desi\ and\ Lucy\ provided\ six\ specials, a\ drama\ series, a\ weekly\ comedy, and\ five\ morning\ shows\ a\ weekly\ comedy\ a\ downline\ five\ morning\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ a\ downline\ five\ morning\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ shows\ a\ downline\ shows\ show$ 

Because of tape, the Network was able to make more efficient use of its entire plant.

The Network raised from 34 to 40 the number of stations participating in its Extended Market Plan. Through the Plan's sales efforts and discount structure, small-market stations are able to share in national network advertising budgets, and their audiences gain improved program service. In various combinations, these stations carried 68 network programs for an average of 401 station-hours per week.

**PROGRAM LEADERSHIP.** In 1958, the CBS Television Network added significantly to its creative resources by contracting for the services of some of the most distinguished producers, directors and writers in the entertainment world.



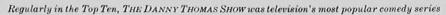


In 1958, too, the CBS Television Network presented a majority of television's most popular programs and for the schedule as a whole achieved the largest average audiences, both night and day. At night the Network attracted 21,504,000 viewers for every 19,373,000 who watched its nearest competitor.

The average nighttime program on the Network this year attracted 665,000 more viewers than the year before.

Late in the Fall, the CBS Television Network presented a two-hour broadcast of the musical comedy, "Wonderful Town." Its estimated audience of 45 million viewers was the greatest for any special entertainment program in the current season.

"Playhouse 90" continued to be the outstanding weekly program series in the medium. Particularly noteworthy broadcasts included





12

Faulkner's "Old Man," Saroyan's "The Time of Your Life," J. P. Miller's original television play "The Days of Wine and Roses," and "The Nutcracker" ballet, with choreography by George Balanchine.

The "Du Pont Show of the Month" presented, among others, "The Bridge of San Luis Rey," "A Tale of Two Cities," "Wuthering Heights," "Harvey," "The Member of the Wedding," "The Count of Monte Cristo," and "The Hasty Heart."

Early in the year, the Network introduced a series of "New York Philharmonic Young People's Concerts" conducted by Leonard Bernstein. In the Fall it added a second music series for adult audiences with the same conductor and orchestra.

NEWS AND PUBLIC AFFAIRS. In November, the CBS Television Network broadcast of the 1958 election returns strikingly pointed up the

 $Leonard\ Bernstein\ and\ the\ New\ York\ Philharmonic\ Symphony\ began\ two\ programs, for\ young\ and\ adult\ audiences$ 



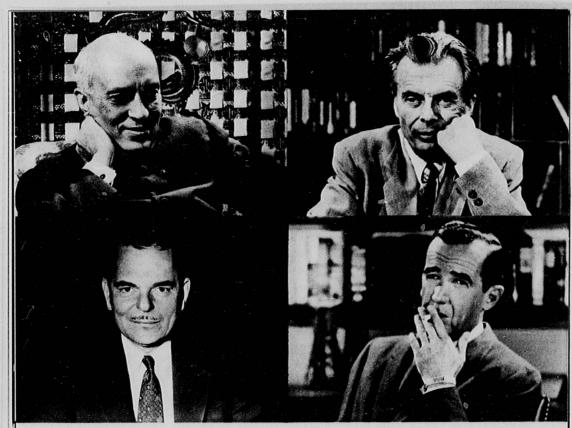


THE BRIDGE OF SAN LUIS REY was noteworthy even in a distinguished dramatic season

fact that the largest national audiences typically tune to this Network for the most complete coverage of news in all fields. On the same evening the Network not only presented the swiftest and most comprehensive reports of election returns but also broadcast the first pictures of the Papal Coronation which had taken place that very morning in Rome.

Throughout the year, the CBS Television Network presented 20 news broadcasts per week, including "Douglas Edwards with the News," whose Monday-through-Friday audience of 38 million viewers makes it the world's largest single news medium.

The Network has been successful in gaining sponsorship for its news and public affairs programs. The significance of this achievement goes far beyond the obvious commercial advantage. Sponsored programs



Jawaharlal Nehru, Aldous Huxley, and Thomas Dewey were among the guests on the new program, SMALL WORLD

of any kind are generally carried by more stations than sustaining programs, are promoted more intensively by stations, are frequently advertised by their sponsors, and are thus enabled to serve the largest possible audiences. For their part, the sponsors of news and public affairs programs have the double satisfaction of reaching a vast national audience and serving that audience in a most constructive way.

The only sponsored programs to win awards by the Thomas Alva Edison Foundation were two series presented by the CBS Television Network. These were "The Twentieth Century" ("... the television program best portraying America") and "Conquest" ("the best science television program for youth"). In the former series, an hour documentary dealing with the developing crisis in American education, "The





Class of '58," was so enthusiastically received by educators that it was repeated within six weeks. "Conquest," dramatizing new frontiers in science for audiences of all ages, was also presented under educational auspices, in cooperation with the National Academy of Sciences and the American Association for the Advancement of Science.

In "Small World," the CBS Television Network introduced a most provocative and absorbing program. Produced by Edward R. Murrow and Fred W. Friendly, by combining film and telephone facilities, it brings together notable persons from all points of the world for conversations with each other, and with Mr. Murrow. Participants in its first few broadcasts included Harry S. Truman, Clement Attlee, Artur Rubinstein, Aldous Huxley, Jawaharlal Nehru, Rebecca West, Admiral Hyman Rickover, Antoni Slonimski, Archibald MacLeish, Bertrand Russell, and Aneurin Bevan.

"Face the Nation" began its fifth year of interviews with leading figures in national and international politics.

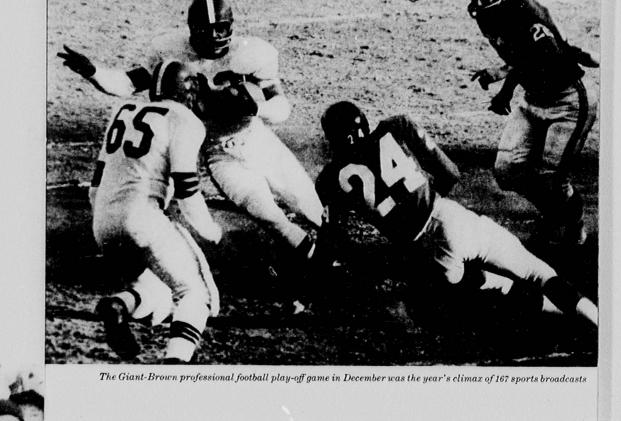
In a year when East-West pressures were felt around the world and when political and military eruptions occurred in France, Algeria, China, Cuba, and the Middle East, the Network presented many special news broadcasts such as "Cuba in Arms," "Ceiling Unlimited," "France at the Brink," "A Special Report on Soviet Education," "The United States and South America," "Hungary: Return of the Terror," "The 49th State," "The Ruble War," "Kuwait: Middle East Oil Prize," "The Arab Tide," "Jordan: Key to the Middle East," "Integration: Battle in the Courts," "The Case of Dr. Zhivago," "China, War or Peace?" and "The Face of Red China."

At year's end, the Network presented five television summaries of various aspects of the year's news and political developments. These included "Years of Crisis: 1949-59," the tenth of the yearly CBS News correspondents' comprehensive round-table discussions; and "Where We Stand II," the second annual balance sheet of the United States and U.S.S.R. resources in education, economics, and armaments. Both were sponsored and both attracted large audiences.

sports. In 1958, the CBS Television Network presented 15 per cent more sports events (167) than ever before. In amateur athletics it televised four football bowl games, the opening and closing games of the National Invitation In ercollegiate Basketball Tourney, and the National Men's AAU Swimming and Diving Championships. In professional sports, the Network broadcast 65 football games, 43 baseball games, 20 hockey matches, and 27 horse races including the Triple Crown. The Network also presented both the Masters and the PGA Golf Tournaments.

**EXECUTIVE APPOINTMENTS.** During the year Edmund C. Bunker was appointed Vice President and General Manager, Sales; Michael Dann was appointed Vice President, Programs—New York; Guy della Cioppa was appointed Vice President and Program Director—Hollywood;

THE FACE OF RED CHINA gave the American people their first comprehensive view of a wast excited revolution



William Dozier was appointed Vice President, Programs—Hollywood; Thomas K. Fisher was appointed Vice President and General Attorney; Harold C. Lang was appointed Acting Controller; Harry G. Ommerle was appointed Vice President, Programs; and Carl S. Ward was appointed Vice President and Director, Affiliate Relations.

general considerations. Television remained a subject of wide public interest throughout the year. Much of this interest was reflected in the words and actions of Government officials, who obviously see television as a major factor in the lives of their constituents. It remains the policy of the CBS Television Network to keep these officials fully informed of industry practices and the implications of various regulatory proposals.

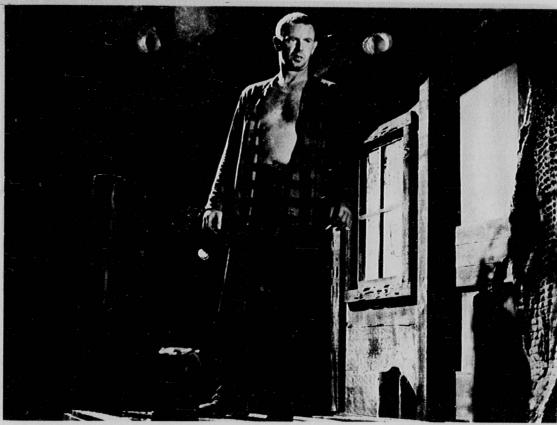
Among the subjects of special attention in Washington was "option time"—the agreement between networks and affiliated stations that, under certain conditions, a limited amount of the affiliates' time will be available to the networks for sponsored programs. This practice—which is wholly consonant with the present rules and regulations of the Commission—has operated to the mutual benefit of viewers, stations, advertisers and networks; it has assured advertisers and networks of national coverage, and viewers and stations of a flow of distinguished network programs. After extended investigation, the Federal Communications Commission has not yet announced its conclusions regarding the option time practice.

In 1958, television occupied increased attention of the printed media. It was a year marked by intensified competition for the advertising dollar, in which other media have not fared as well as television.

Most of the critical attention that was directed to television programming failed to reconcile the minority preferences of many of the critics with the simple fact that television is a mass medium. In order to survive economically, and continue to be an expression and instrument of a democratic society, network television, because it serves the broadest audience of all mass media, must try to serve the interest of most of the people most of the time.

For this reason all networks program the highly-popular but oftencriticized "Westerns." Nevertheless, on the CBS Television Network they occupied less than one-eighth of the CBS Television Network nighttime program schedule and one-sixteenth of its over-all program schedule. On the other hand, Westerns accounted for nearly a third of all new mass market paperbound books of fiction in 1958, and for nearly a third of weekly magazine serials.

The problem of the broadcaster is to balance the demands of the minority tastes with the demands of the general audience. It is not only a responsibility but it is an economic necessity to satisfy the public taste and to be progressively ahead of that taste with new experiments in programming, so that the public, if it chooses, may develop new and



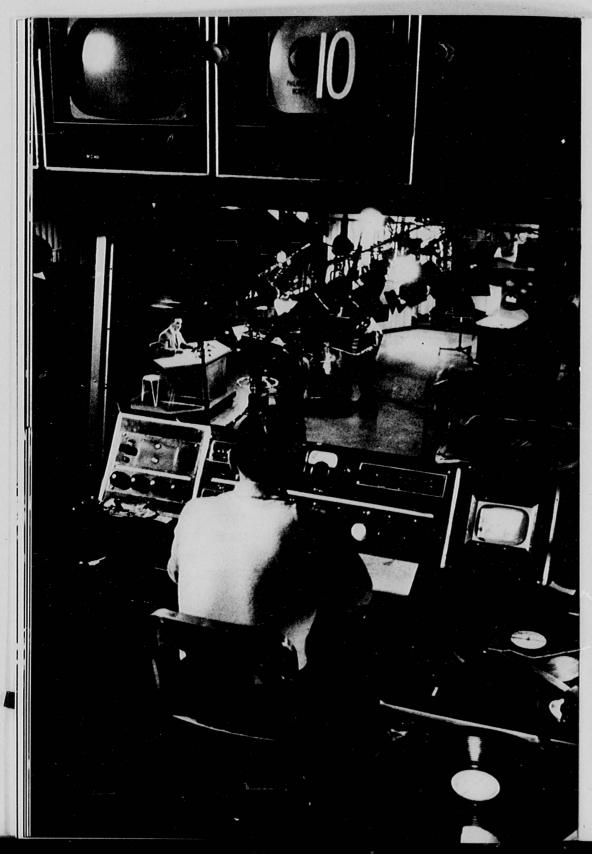
 $One\ of\ PLAYHOUSE\ 90's\ full-length\ dramas\ created\ especially\ for\ television\ was\ William\ Faulkner's\ "Old\ Man"$ 

different tastes. To this end, the CBS Television Network has made the greatest investment in creative talent of all the networks. Indeed, it is the only network today that maintains in its program operations a staff that is capable of conceiving, developing, and producing a significant proportion of the programs it broadcasts.

This policy, together with the increasing effort in news and public affairs, offers assurance that the Network will continue to provide the balanced variety that is necessary to extend its great audiences.

OUTLOOK FOR 1959. With the strongest schedule in its history, the CBS Television Network looks forward to 1959 with optimism.

Louis G. Cowan, President, CBS Television Network Division



# Television Stations

cbs television stations. Approximately half the profit from CBS television activities is earned by the non-network units which comprise the CBS Television Stations Division, namely, the CBS Owned television stations, CBS Television Spot Sales, and CBS Films Inc., a subsidiary of Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. The sales and profit from operations of these units increased in 1958.

CBS OWNED STATION FACILITIES. On March 1, the CBS Television Stations Division began operation of Channel 4 in St. Louis, and on March 16 changed the station's call letters from KWK-TV to KMOX-TV to identify the station more closely with KMOX, the CBS Owned radio station in St. Louis. On August 30, the Division began operation of WCAU-TV, Channel 10 in Philadelphia, which, in 1948, was the first station to affiliate with the CBS Television Network.

In Hartford, where for two years CBS had owned a UHF station, WHCT, the CBS Television Network was offered the opportunity to affiliate with WTIC-TV, Channel 3, one of the two VHF stations serving the Connecticut River Valley. Because WTIC-TV could provide entertainment and information service to more homes throughout a substantially larger area, the CBS Television Network affiliated with that station on November 16. Simultaneously, CBS suspended operation of WHCT, and subsequently sold the station on January 16, 1959.

WCAU-TV Philadelphia, the first station to affiliate with the CBS Television Network, became a CBS Owned station in 1958 In addition to KMOX-TV in St. Louis and WCAU-TV in Philadelphia, the CBS Owned television stations group at year's end included WCBS-TV, Channel 2 in New York, WBBM-TV, Channel 2 in Chicago, KNXT, Channel 2 in Los Angeles and WXIX, Channel 18 in Milwaukee. Thus, CBS now operates five VHF stations, the maximum allowed under FCC regulations, and one UHF station, one less than allowable.

During 1958, the gross billings of the CBS Owned television stations group increased 19 per cent over the preceding year.

cbs owned station programming. During 1958, each CBS Owned station presented an expanded schedule of informational, educational, and cultural broadcasts. Representative of these were WCBS-TV's "Sunrise Semester," New York's first televised course for college credit,

Guests facing a panel with opposed views resulted in many news stories on WXIX's MILWAUKEE REPORTS





News and Public Affairs, such as CLOSE-UP, constitute 30 per cent of all KMOX-TV local programs

which was expanded in the Fall to four courses; WBBM-TV's "Camera Two—Atomic Primer," with Nobel Prize-winner Dr. Harold C. Urey; KNXT's hour-long editorial presentation on capital punishment, "Thou Shalt Not Kill," hailed as an outstanding experiment in local public service programming; WCAU-TV's "The Big Blackboard," a series of lectures and demonstrations by authorities in the arts and sciences; KMOX-TV's "Eye on St. Louis," a nightly exploration of the city, its citizens and problems; and WXIX's "Milwaukee Reports," a weekly presentation in which distinguished guests are questioned by citizens representing opposite points of view. Each CBS Owned station also provided a regular schedule of local news, as well as comprehensive coverage of local and state election campaigns, culminating on Election



WCBS-TV's RIGHT Now! presented the only face-to-face debate by New York's four gubernatorial candidates

Night with regional returns that supplemented nationwide reports on the CBS Television Network.

Major awards made to this group of stations, in 1958, for outstanding contributions to the welfare of city, state and nation included eight awards from the Academy of Television Arts and Sciences, two awards from the Ohio State University Institute for Education by Radio-Television, and the Robert E. Sherwood Award of the Fund for the Republic. The CBS Owned television stations, in 1958, contributed more than \$10,000,000 worth of talent and broadcast time devoted to programs and announcement campaigns serving community interests.

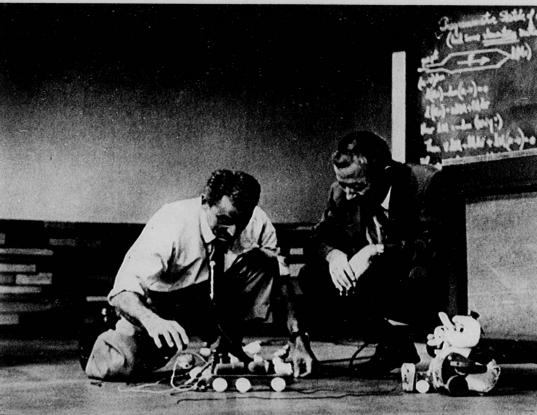
News and public affairs programming, supplemented by local and CBS Television Network entertainment series, enabled the CBS Owned





stations in New York, Chicago, and Los Angeles each to maintain its position as the most popular television station in its community during each month of the year. In St. Louis, KMOX-TV became the most popular station two months after CBS began its operation; and in Philadelphia, WCAU-TV increased its average share of audience by 20 per cent during its four months of CBS ownership. In Milwaukee, however, CBS Owned WXIX, a UHF station competing against three VHF stations, attracted only about 20 per cent of the total television audience even within the metropolitan area, and despite a shift from Channel 19 to Channel 18 to eliminate interference from the signal of a competing station. WXIX's 20 per cent share compares with a 33 per cent share of audience for the average CBS Television Network affiliate in a four-station market.

Toys demonstrating basic physical laws help explain Why Is It So? to the KNXT audience



26



CBS Newsfilm distributed nationally WBBM-TV film of Chicago's tragic fire at Our Lady of Angels school

CBS TELEVISION SPOT SALES. This organization, in 1958, as in the past, functioned as the nationwide sales representative for the six CBS Owned stations, the CBS Television Pacific Network (CTPN), and seven stations affiliated with the CBS Television Network.\*

Non-network time and program sales to national advertisers on the 13 stations represented by CBS Television Spot Sales increased ten per cent, in 1958, over the preceding year.

CBS FILMS INC. In October, CBS Television Film Sales, Inc. was reorganized and renamed CBS Films Inc. By the end of 1958, CBS Films Inc.

\*In January 1959, the FCC issued notice of rulemaking to consider adoption of a rule which would prevent CBS from being in both the business of network television and the business of representing television stations not owned by CBS. CBS will oppose such a rule.





had scheduled for 1959 production, 273 half-hour episodes representing seven new entertainment series, two to be produced in Europe. As in previous years, CBS Films Inc. continued to sell its catalog of entertainment and informational film series to stations regardless of network affiliation, and to local, regional, and network advertisers.

At the close of the year, more than 400 stations within the Continental United States were customers of CBS Films Inc.

Total sales for CBS Films Inc. were 12 per cent higher in 1958 than in the preceding year.

**CBS NEWSFILM.** CBS Films Inc., in 1958, continued to function as sales representative for CBS Newsfilm, a film summary of the news of the day prepared by CBS News. During the year, the number of stations

Over~400~United~States~stations~broadcast~part~of~the~CBS~Films~Inc.~catalog~of~31~series, including~Colonel~Flack~films~fil



subscribing to the news service increased from 86 to 96. This total included 70 stations in the United States, as well as 26 foreign stations and networks in 19 countries: Algeria, Australia, Canada, Colombia, Cuba, El Salvador, England, France, Holland, Japan, Luxembourg, Mexico, Monaco, Peru, Scotland, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland and Venezuela.

TERRYTOONS. Terrytoons, a Division of CBS Films Inc., in 1958, produced animated cartoon films for four different groups of users. For theatrical showing throughout the world, the organization produced 12 new cartoons in CinemaScope and Technicolor and, in addition, re-issued 12 more out of its cartoon library. For broadcast on the CBS Television Network, Terrytoons produced three animated cartoon series: "Mighty Mouse Playhouse," "The Heckle and Jeckle Show," and "Tom Terrific,"

Terrytoons used new animation techniques to produce Tom Terrific for broadcast on Captain Kangaroo



a daily segment of "Captain Kangaroo." For sales to individual stations, regardless of network affiliation, and to non-network advertisers, Terrytoons made available, through CBS Films Inc., a series of 52 half-hour cartoon shows. In addition, Terrytoons produced animated film commercials for 19 television advertisers.

FOREIGN OPERATIONS. CBS Films Inc., in 1958, expanded its international sales operation, with sales to networks and stations in 21 countries. In November, Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. established CBS Europe—a wholly owned subsidiary in Zurich—to sell and distribute CBS Films Inc. product throughout Continental Europe. At the same time, to expand television program sales in Great Britain, CBS Ltd., London, was formed as a subsidiary of CBS Europe.

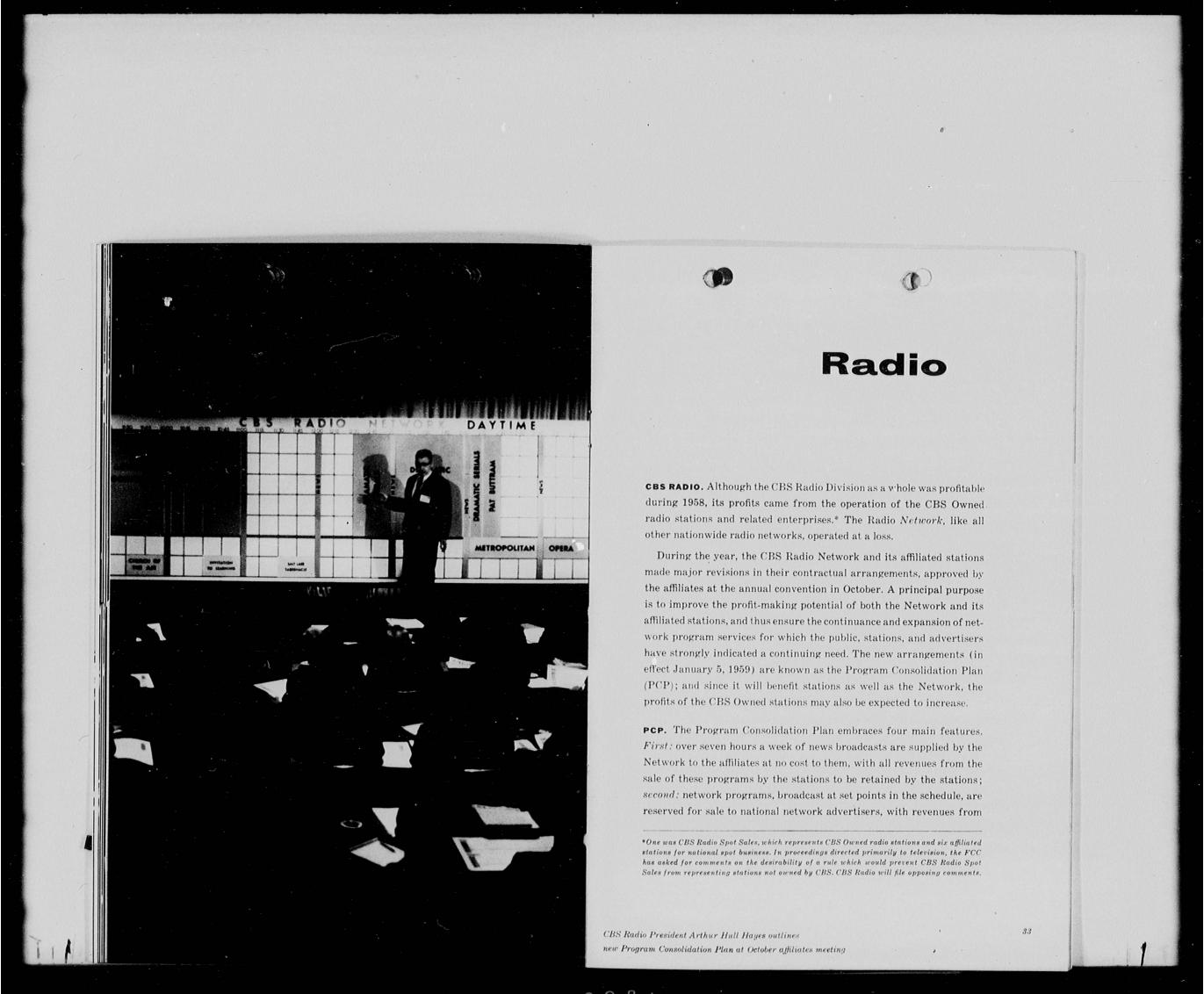
President—Advertising and Sales Promotion. William J. Flynn was appointed Controller. Thomas K. Fisher was appointed Vice President and General Attorney. Craig R. Lawrence was appointed Vice President—CBS Owned Stations and CBS Television Spot Sales. As officers of CBS Films Inc., Sam Cook Digges was appointed Administrative Vice President; Leslie T. Harris, Vice President—Production; and John F. Howell—Vice President and General Sales Manager.

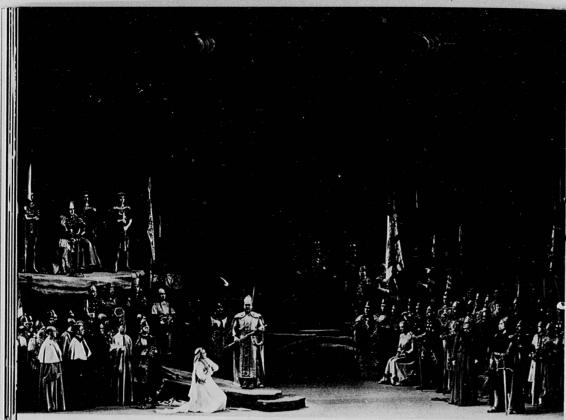
OUTLOOK FOR 1959. The CBS Owned television stations move into 1959 with expanded plans for public affairs programs responsive to local community needs, attractive entertainment series, and advertising opportunities of increasing value to American business. Backed by the strong CBS Television Network schedule of entertainment, news and information, the stations confidently look forward to the opportunity of the year ahead.

CBS Films Inc., in 1959, anticipates the strengthening of its position through increased production of new films and expanded sales, within the United States, and throughout the broadening international market.

To the Division as a whole, therefore, 1959 holds considerable promise.

Merle S. Jones, President, CBS Television Stations Division





The Texas Co. moves Metropolitan Opera broadcasts to CBS Radio Network

these sales retained by the Network; *third*: in addition to special documentary reports, public addresses, and unscheduled coverage of news events, a minimum of four-and-one-half hours weekly of public affairs and established feature programs (among others, the New York Philharmonic Orchestra, "Capitol Cloakroom," and the Salt Lake Tabernacle Choir) will be supplied by the Network; *fourth*: special, sponsored programs, like the Metropolitan Opera, sports events, elections and conventions will be presented, with payments made to stations.

Altogether, the CBS Radio Network will broadcast a total of over 50 hours of programming weekly, a reduction from the previous schedule of less than 25 per cent. The reduction lies largely in programs which were carried by relatively few affiliates.



The consolidation and regrouping of this network schedule will give affiliated stations the advantages of longer periods of consecutive time for the build-up of audiences to local personalities, the development of effective program sequences, and fuller coverage of local and regional events of importance.

The initial affiliate response to the Plan was encouraging. Although some stations indicated their unwillingness to accept it, by early February 172 of the 198 affiliates had endorsed the Plan. Steps are being taken to acquire affiliation with stations in those areas where the previous affiliate rejects the new Plan.

ADVERTISERS. In 1958, The Texas Co., after sponsoring the Metropolitan Opera on another radio network for 18 years, moved this presentation to the CBS Radio Network. Nationwide Insurance Companies sponsored a six-part examination of American man and society, "The Hidden Revolution." Other ventures of interest in the advertising area were the presentations of the America's Cup Races sponsored by Jaguar Cars, Inc.; the Newport Jazz Festival, four one-hour broadcasts presented in behalf of Garrett & Company, Inc.; and the C. H. Masland & Sons, Inc. "Radio Color Roundup," an all-star, two-hour entertainment. For the fourth successive year, The Insurance Co. of North America sponsored the holiday event participated in by the nation's leading voluntary organizations, and choral groups from many different places, "Christmas Sing with Bing."

The Basilio-Robinson championship fight on the CBS Radio Network, sponsored by Miles Laboratories, Inc. and the Mennen Company, attracted the largest radio audience for a single sponsored broadcast since 1955. The Network's audience strength was evidenced, too, in the measured listening results of a four-network purchase by the Pepsi-Cola Co. Of the four networks, CBS Radio delivered the largest audiences per commercial minute, averaging 43 per cent higher than the second network. (Source: Nielsen Radio Index.)

Even larger audiences for advertisers are anticipated as a result of the new Program Consolidation Plan. The strengthening of local and network programming, the improved grouping of programs and improvement in station clearances (because of the greater availability to stations of time for local use), all add significantly to the advertising values available on the Network and its affiliated stations. In recognition of these increased values, large new or expanded network commitments for 1959 were made, after PCP was announced, by leading advertisers, including Bristol-Myers Company, General Electric Company, Lever Brothers Co., Lewis-Howe Co., Stewart-Warner Corp. and others.

**NETWORK PROGRAMS.** In 1958, for the tenth consecutive year, programs on the CBS Radio Network attracted the largest network audiences in radio. In the nation's 26 largest markets, for example, of all the quarter-hours in which listeners could choose between programs on

The Couple Next Door starring Peg Lynch and Alan Bunce injected new vitality into popular daytime line-up





 $The\ responsibility\ for\ juvenile\ delinquency\ was\ explored\ in\ the\ documentary\ Who\ Killed\ Michael\ Farmer?$ 

CBS Radio and those on at least one other network, the CBS Radio Network was first choice over 90 per cent of the time.

Almost without exception, the programs responsible for this consistent leadership will continue under the Program Consolidation Plan. The line-up for 1959 includes Arthur Godfrey, Art Linkletter, "Amos 'n' Andy," and Mitch Miller; reporting and analysis by Charles Collingwood, Walter Cronkite, Richard C. Hottelet, Allan Jackson, Larry LeSueur, Edward R. Murrow, Eric Sevareid, Howard K. Smith, Lowell Thomas, Robert Trout, and other CBS News correspondents; dramatic programs ranging from the consistently popular daytime serials (including a successful comedy innovation in this field, "The Couple Next Door") to weekend presentations such as "Indictment," "Gun-

smoke," and the new radio feature, "Have Gun-Will Travel"; plus regular and special public affairs presentations.

News and public affairs. In 1958, the Network's news and public affairs broadcasts again were accorded high praise by listeners and critics. The Unit One Series of the Public Affairs Department of CBS News presented 15 special broadcasts. Outstanding among them were "Who Killed Michael Farmer?"; "The West and The Soviet Union: An Opposition View," with Adlai Stevenson, Hugh Gaitskell and Pierre Mendes-France; transatlantic interviews with President Habib Bourguiba of Tunisia and President Camille Chamoun of Lebanon; a discussion of United States-South American relations; and "P.O.W.—A Study in Survival," a broadcast based on United States Army findings regarding the behavior of American prisoners of war in Korea.

Listeners heard the full three-and-a-half hour ceremonies of the Papal Coronation as they occurred



CBS News' on-the-spot coverage of news events crisscrossed the globe. From the launching of Explorer I at Cape Canaveral in January, to the French and Algerian crises, to the dispatch of United States troops to Lebanon, the shelling of Quemoy, the American elections, the new Pope, and the Berlin crisis late in the year—CBS News correspondents around the world brought the nation's radio listeners fast, first-hand reports.

AWARDS AND RECOGNITION. In 1958, many CBS Radio Network programs and projects were honored. Among the year's citations, the Institute for Education by Radio-Television, Ohio State University, gave First Awards to "The Galindez-Murphy Case" and "Update." A Sidney Hillman Foundation Award for "promoting international understanding" through the "Radio Beat" series went to producer George A. Vicas. National Education Association "School Bell Awards" were given to Edward R. Murrow and to "Radio Beat." To Larry LeSueur went an English-Speaking Union Award. Eric Sevareid was named a Fellow of the national journalistic fraternity, Sigma Delta Chi, "in recognition of many outstanding achievements."

MUSIC. Biggest musical news of the year on the Network was the Metropolitan Opera broadcasts. Audiences of the initial broadcasts on CBS Radio were over 20 per cent larger than the largest reported audiences of the previous season on another network. Twenty full-length performances will be heard in the 1958-59 season. The New York Philharmonic began its 29th season on the Network, with Leonard Bernstein as new musical director. The Cleveland Orchestra was heard in its 41st anniversary season. And 1958 marked the 26th year of broadcasts by the Salt Lake Tabernacle Choir. Other programs included "World Music Festivals," "The Longines Hour," "The Symphonette," and special concerts on United Nations Day and Human Rights Day.

**SPORTS.** Again, in 1958, the CBS Radio Network expanded its coverage of major sports events. In addition to the Basilio-Robinson fight and America's Cup Races, the Network provided 14 weeks of professional football; an international hockey match between the United States and

U.S.S.R., live from Norway; horse racing's Triple Crown; the Grand Prix sports car races from Sebring, Florida; the Masters Golf Tournament from Augusta; and the Soap Box Derby from Akron. "Sports Time," with scores and comment, was presented six nights a week. This program and special sports coverage will continue as part of PCP.

cbs owned stations. In 1958, acquisition of WCAU-AM-FM, Philadelphia raised the total number of CBS Owned radio stations to seven AM stations and six FM stations—WCBS-AM-FM, New York; WBBM-AM-FM, Chicago; KNX-AM-FM, Los Angeles; WEEI-AM-FM, Boston; KCBS-AM-FM, San Francisco; and KMOX, St. Louis.

CBS, on occasion, has expressed itself editorially on the CBS Radio Network. In 1958, four CBS Owned stations inaugurated a policy of presenting editorials on matters of unusual community or regional importance. WCBS, New York urged greater attention from the State on the problem of drug addiction. KMOX, St. Louis presented the cases for and against fluoridation and took a strong stand for. KCBS, San Francisco, after presenting both sides, spoke against a proposed tax bill. KNX, Los Angeles supported a bill for new county prison facilities.

Among the outstanding programs presented on the CBS Owned stations in 1958, a number stood out. WCBS' "This Is New York," was cited in a George Foster Peabody Award. WBBM brought listeners a live stereophonic broadcast of opening night at Chicago's Civic Opera House. When an appearance in Boston by the Salt Lake Tabernacle Choir was sold out, WEEI brought listeners a two-and-one-half hour broadcast of the concert. WCAU, Philadelphia introduced a daily program "Operation Outer Space," which received a First Award for outstanding reporting from the Pennsylvania Press Broadcasters Association. St. Louis listeners heard the first broadcast in radio history of open heart surgery in the KMOX documentary, "A New Life for Larry." KNX initiated a weekly broadcast exploring America's cultural



 $Largest\ single-broadcast\ audience\ in\ years\ heard\ Basilio-Robinson\ fight$ 

heritage, "Trojan Digest," in cooperation with the University of Southern California; KCBS, in two broadcasts, pro and con, examined United States policy regarding trade with Communist China.

**EXECUTIVE APPOINTMENT.** George J. Arkedis was appointed Vice President in Charge of Network Sales, effective March 2, 1959. Mr. Arkedis had been General Sales Manager of WBBM-TV, Chicago.

**OUTLOOK FOR 1959.** The Program Consolidation Plan is expected to strengthen all components of the CBS Radio Division. The Division now looks forward to greater advertising investment, renewed programming vigor, and an increase in financial strength.

Arthur Hull Hayes, President, CBS Radio Division

<sup>\*</sup>In July, WBBM-FM became a separately programmed facility. Previously, the station duplicated the WBBM schedule. The new service was created in response to growing interest in high fidelity broadcasting and equipment.



## Records

COLUMBIA RECORDS. In 1958, the tenth anniversary year of the Columbia-introduced long-playing record, the Columbia Records Division maintained its commanding leadership in total long-playing record sales. The significance of this position is underscored by the fact that long-playing records now account for 70 per cent of total dollar sales of records marketed in this country.

In the popular music market, the long-playing record has shown particularly impressive growth, now accounting for two-thirds of total dollar sales in the popular records category. At the same time, however, Columbia Record sales in the single 45 rpm record market have declined for two reasons: first, the production by many small independent manufacturers of popular recordings with relatively unknown artists have claimed a larger share of the market; and second, the Division has not attempted so far to meet the large demand for rock and roll recordings.

Columbia's (production, already the industry's largest, exceeded 1957 unit output by 25 per cent, but the Division's over-all profits, although the second highest in its history, were not so large as for the year before.

The Columbia (a) Record Club was a continuing stimulant to (a) sales; and stereophonic sound, the newest development in high fidelity reproduction, gained considerable popularity by the end of the year.

The symbol (p) in 1958, became a truly international mark. Eugene Ormandy and The Philadelphia Orchestra touring Russia and Roumania, Leonard Bernstein and the New York Philharmonic in Peru and

Bruno Walter devotes the major portion of his time to the recording studio, producing lasting documents of his art in both monaural and stereophonic sound 43



 $Eugene\ Ormandy,\ The\ Philadelphia\ Orchestra\ and\ their records\ find\ enthus iastic\ reception\ behind\ the\ Iron\ Curtain$ 

Chile, Dave Brubeck and his Jazz Quartet in Poland and India—all found their records had preceded them to help create enthusiastic concert audiences. "My Fair Lady," an American stage success with a million and a half domestic record sales, was exported to England where more than a quarter of a million albums were sold after the play's London opening—an unprecedented British sale for any album of any type. "West Side Story," another Columbia-recorded hit show, has also been very popular in London.

An excellent means for recording history as well as art, the precord was the vehicle this year for such unusual volumes as "The Union," the second in a series of musical histories of the Civil War, and "The Organ," an aural survey of that instrument's development.

Eighty-two-year-old conductor Bruno Walter chose to spend the major portion of his working year in Columbia's studios rather than on concert stages, repeating for the stereophonic age his interpretations of Beethoven symphonies and many other works. Record critics, in 1958, paid tribute to this effort by voting his recording of Mahler's Second Symphony the best orchestral release of the year.

Recordings by Albert Schweitzer and Pablo Casals were made as part of Columbia's program for broadening the scope of its (a) catalog. Promising young virtuosi such as Glenn Gould, Eugene Istomin, and Philippe Entremont, were also recorded.

An unusual recording was that of E. Power Biggs playing the 150-year-old organ designed by composer Georg Friedrich Handel. The recordings were made in an ancient English chapel at Great Packington.

Richard Rodgers, composer of "Flower Drum Song," coaches its children's chorus for the original-cast recording



The Berlin of the 1920's was recalled in a recording of Kurt Weill's, "The Threepenny Opera," starring the composer's widow, Lotte Lenya, who won new critical acclaim this year for stage and television appearances in this and other works recorded first by Columbia.

HITS. Broadway continued to be a prime source of hit show albums. Three such albums were "Oh, Captain," "Goldilocks," and Rodgers' and Hammerstein's "Flower Drum Song." Also, Rosalind Russell's memorable performance in "Wonderful Town" was recorded with the same supporting cast that appeared in the CBS Television Network version.

In popular music Johnny Mathis, Columbia Records' young discovery, emerged as the most successful popular album artist of the year, with four best-selling new albums—an unprecedented sales achievement.

Johnny Mathis, reigning popular recording success of the year, with four best-selling albums





 $Epic's \ best-selling \ popular \ album \ star-society \ bandleader \ Lester \ Lanin$ 

Johnny Cash, another youthful artist, attained wide popularity as a composer and a performer, and became a strong new addition to Columbia's best-seller lists.

Mitch Miller, Director of Columbia's Popular Artists and Repertoire Department, became an album best-seller artist in his own right with (§) "Sing Along" albums. (These are choral recordings which invite listener accompaniment by providing song lyrics as well as tempos.) Ray Conniff's inventive instrumental albums also proved highly successful, as did the vocal recordings of the Kirby Stone Quartet.

"Adventures in Sound," a new series, was launched to present such diverse music as the voice of the talented French star Jeanmaire, a Sicilian mandolin band, church carillon chimes and advanced modern



 $Pianist\,Leon\,Fleisher\,records\,with\,George\,Szell\,and\,The\,Cleveland\,Orchestra$ 

jazz commissioned for a Brandeis University music festival.

Benny Goodman and his famous jazz band recorded albums in Brussels during their week-long appearance at the American Pavilion of the World's Fair; and Victor Borge in a New York studio recorded "Piccolo and Saxie," a new children's guide to the orchestra written by the gifted young French composer Andre Popp.

Two popular © recordings outside of the music field were "An Action History of Baseball"; and Living Language Lessons, in conversational French, German and Spanish.

**EPIC RECORDS.** Recordings of The Cleveland Orchestra, under conductor George Szell, became Epic Records' best-selling classical albums in 1958. This orchestra is winning growing recognition as one of the coun-

try's four leading symphonic organizations. Notable European ensembles such as the Amsterdam Concertgebouw Orchestra and the *I Musici* Chamber Players strengthened Epic's steadily improving position in the classical record field.

Society bandleader Lester Lanin continued to be a popular artist, recording three new best-selling Epic popular music albums.

Exploring new areas of repertoire, Epic produced "And God Said," selections from the Bible read by film and stage star Dana Andrews to folk song accompaniment.

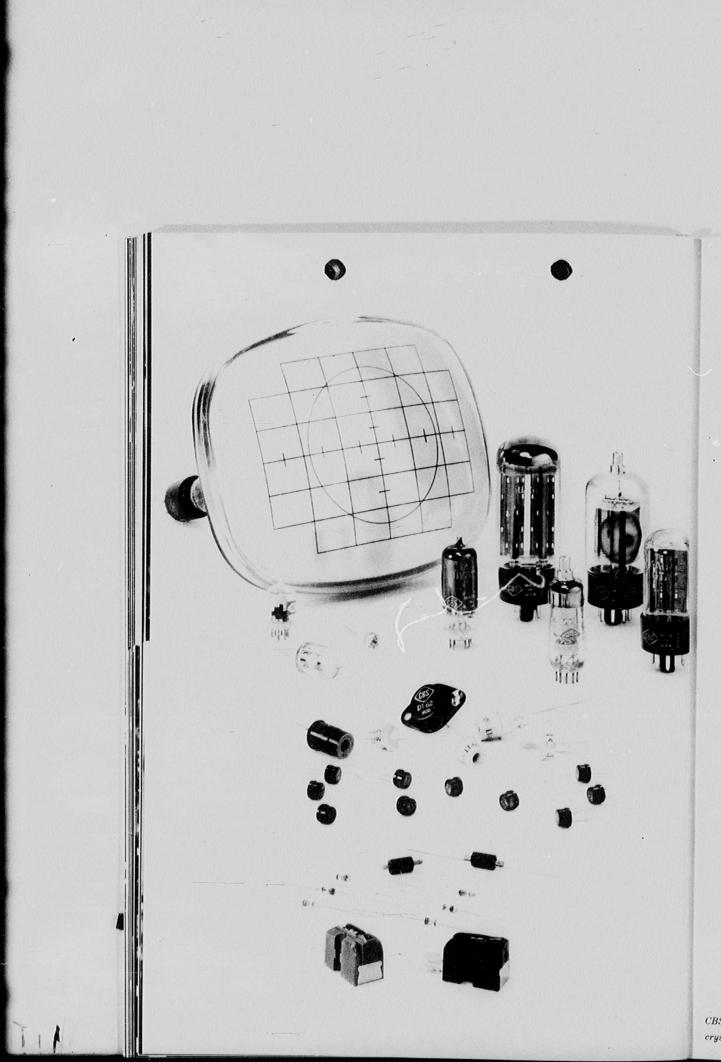
**PHONOGRAPHS.** The 1958-1959 Columbia phonograph line, one of the industry's most comprehensive, was designed to accommodate both the existing monaural market and the new stereophonic field. Nineteen out of twenty-four models, at prices ranging from \$39.95 to \$525.00, were equipped for stereophonic reproduction. These instruments, in addition to their own sales importance, provide a base for expanding stereophonic record sales.

In December, Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. announced plans for substantial expansion of its phonograph operations, and the transfer of the Columbia Phonograph Department from Columbia Records to CBS-Hytron. The organizational change, effective in January 1959, was made in order to take greater advantage of the manufacturing know-how of CBS-Hytron.

prospects for the year ahead: first, despite a degree of confusion which inevitably accompanies the introduction of any new product such as the stereophonic record, it is now more widely understood that both records will sound better on stereophonic equipment and that monaural records are not made obsolete by the new development. Second, the music-loving public is revealing a growing preference for records that long remain on the best-seller lists, and also for a highly diversified catalog. Both factors should have a good effect on our business next year, which we expect to be more profitable than for the year gone by.

 ${\tt Goddard\ Lieberson}, President, Columbia\ Records\ Division$ 

4



### **Electronics**

CBS-HYTRON. The year 1958 showed substantial improvement for this Division, which produces tubes, transistors and other electronic components: for television and radio sets, for phonographs, and for a variety of other entertainment, industrial and military electronic devices. Division sales increased ten per cent over those for 1957, despite a drop of 15 per cent in unit sales of the major product lines for the industry as a whole; the Division's share of the market also increased. Despite these improvements, however, the Division operated at a slight loss.

Growth continued in older product lines and in new lines as well. Shipments to the armed services increased slightly in the face of general military cutbacks. Plant modernization continued. A quality program aimed at producing tubes of highest reliability was extended into design, materials control, processing, manufacturing techniques, and test procedures. This program resulted in greater acceptance of CBS-Hytron products by set manufacturers, and hence increased sales.

**RECEIVING TUBES.** In 1958, the Division attained an increase of over 15 per cent of its share of industry sales for original-equipment receiving tubes. Because of reduced television and radio set production during the year, unit sales of original-equipment receiving tubes for the industry as a whole declined, but CBS-Hytron's sales exceeded those for 1957.

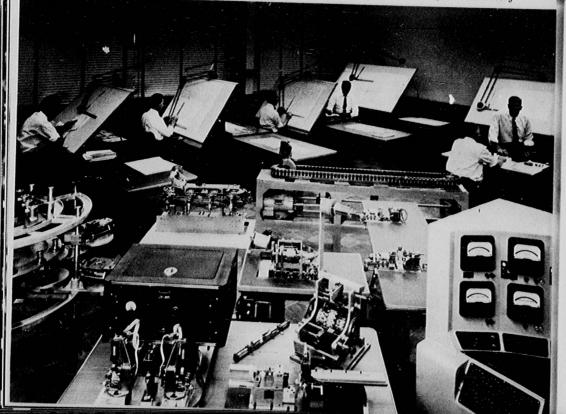
Product lines remained essentially the same, but with more emphasis on audio tubes for monaural and stereophonic phonographs, tape recorders and sound systems. Distribution was substantially improved, particularly in the West and Midwest.

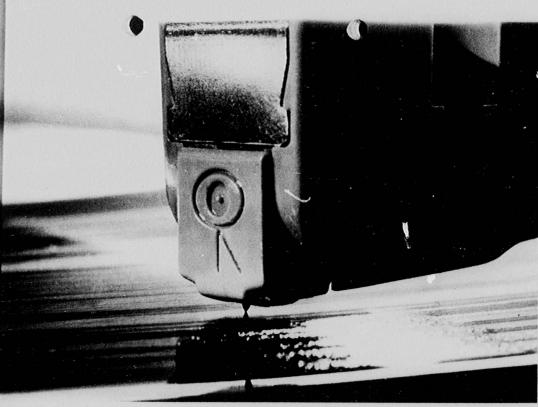
CBS-Hytron products include audio components, crystal diodes, transistors, and special, receiving and cathode ray tubes

Much was done by the Division, in 1958, to assist the independent electronic parts distributor and the independent service-dealer in meeting the growing competition from direct factory service. Typical was the Controlled Inventory Service Plan designed to increase distributor profits by improving inventory replenishment and turnover. Good relations with the service-dealer were signalized by dealer-association awards and by an educational award made to CBS-Hytron for its Transistor Course, designed for electronic technicians.

**INDUSTRIAL TUBES.** The Division placed great emphasis on original equipment and replacement industrial tubes. The industrial tube line was expanded to over 400 types. CBS-Hytron unit sales of replacement industrial tubes increased 51 per cent over those for 1957. In terms of dollars, the increase over 1957 was 76 per cent.

 $Endless\,array\,of\,ingenious,\,money-saving\,machines\,is\,designed,\,and\,built\,by\,equipment\,development\,laboratory$ 





 $Magnified\ photo\ of\ new\ stereophonic\ cartridge-designed\ by\ Columbia\ Records, manufactured\ by\ CBS-Hytron$ 

The ultrahigh-resolution cathode ray tube, announced in 1957, has progressed from the laboratory into a line of 48 types varying in size, screen and resolution. A new line of Krytrons (cold-cathode trigger tubes developed by CBS-Hytron) has also progressed from a military research phase to a practical line of military and commercial types. Both of these lines offer interesting profit potentials for 1959.

Many other military, industrial, special-purpose, premium and audio tubes (including tuning indicators) are in development to continue the Division's further expansion into this field.

**SEMICONDUCTORS.** Reorganization in this Department has been completed and semiconductor (transistor and crystal diode) operations have been greatly strengthened. Semiconductor sales increased 50 per

cent over those for 1957, and more than 300 new types were added, tripling the number of available products. Comprehensive lines of power and switching transistors and of general-purpose and computer diodes were introduced. Among new products being developed are transistors for much higher frequencies, and diodes for noise-free parametric amplifiers that could greatly extend television reception.

Sales policies were reorganized to utilize the distributor and originalequipment tube sales forces to complement the expanded semiconductor sales organization.

Industry unit sales of diodes increased 25 per cent for original equipment; and 26 per cent for replacement. Comparable figures for CBS-Hytron were 60 per cent and 105 per cent. The Division's unit sales of replacement transistors increased 97 per cent.

 $Four of the {\it nineteen stereophonic models in the increasingly popular 1958-1959 line of Columbia {\it phonographs}}$ 



AUDIO COMPONENTS. A new ceramic cartridge for stereophonic phonographs, designed by Columbia Records, was put into production by CBS-Hytron in July. Its ability to reproduce all the breadth, depth and realism of stereo records is exceptional. It is also produced by CBS-Hytron for other manufacturers as well as the Columbia Records Department. Four models with diamond and sapphire styli are being merchandised widely.

Simultaneously CBS-Hytron has designed and developed a complete line of tubes for the reproduction of high fidelity sound remarkably free from hum, noise and distortion.

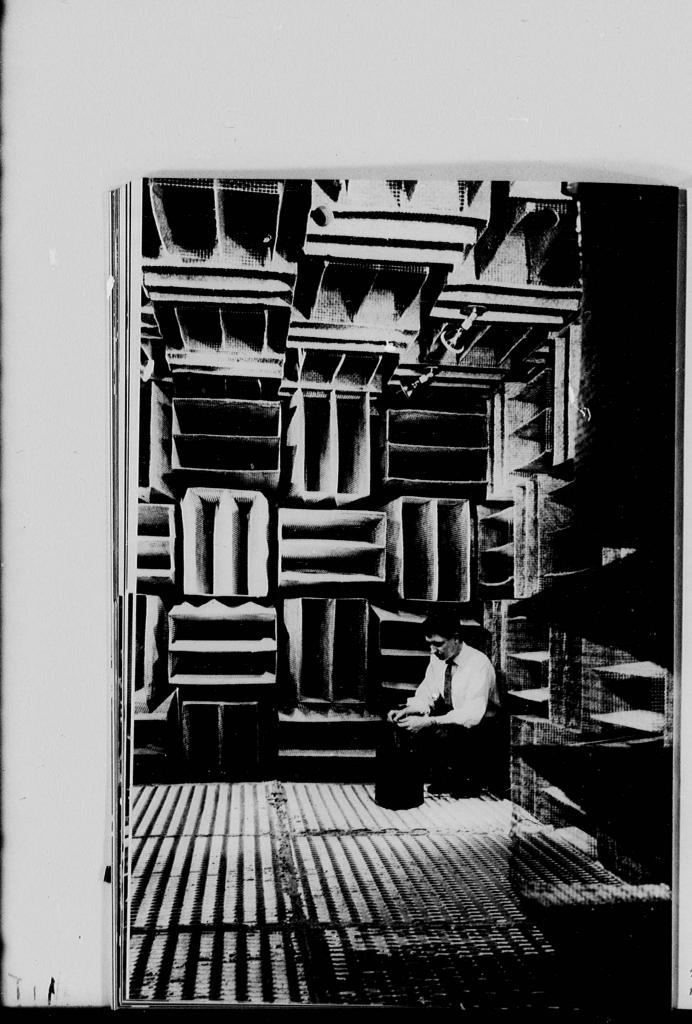
**COLUMBIA PHONOGRAPH DEPARTMENT.** Plans were completed during the year to transfer the Columbia Phonograph Department from Columbia Records to CBS-Hytron.

The Department is now being reorganized in order to enable substantial expansion of phonograph operations. The great popularity of the Columbia phonograph line, the growth potential in both high fidelity and stereo reproducing equipment, and the manufacturing know-how of CBS-Hytron are chiefly responsible for management's decision to expand in this market.

EXECUTIVE APPOINTMENTS. Three new Vice Presidents were appointed in 1958. Reed Vail Bontecou, Vice President—Marketing, came to the Division from General Electric Company where he was manager of marketing for the tube department. Norman L. Harvey, Vice President—Engineering, was formerly manager of special tube operations for Sylvania Electric Products, Inc. James J. Shallow, Vice President—Columbia Phonographs Department, was General Merchandising Manager, Consumer Products, Philco Corp.

OUTLOOK FOR 1959. With industry recovering from the recession, the Dirision expects to continue the progress of the past year and looks to dest profits based upon increased sales for 1959.

Arthur L. Chapman, President, CBS-Hytron Division



## Research

cbs laboratories. The CBS Laboratories Division assists in the growth and diversification of CBS operations through research and development activities. In addition, this Division undertakes, on a contract basis, projects for other industries and for the Government. For the year past the Division operated at a profit.

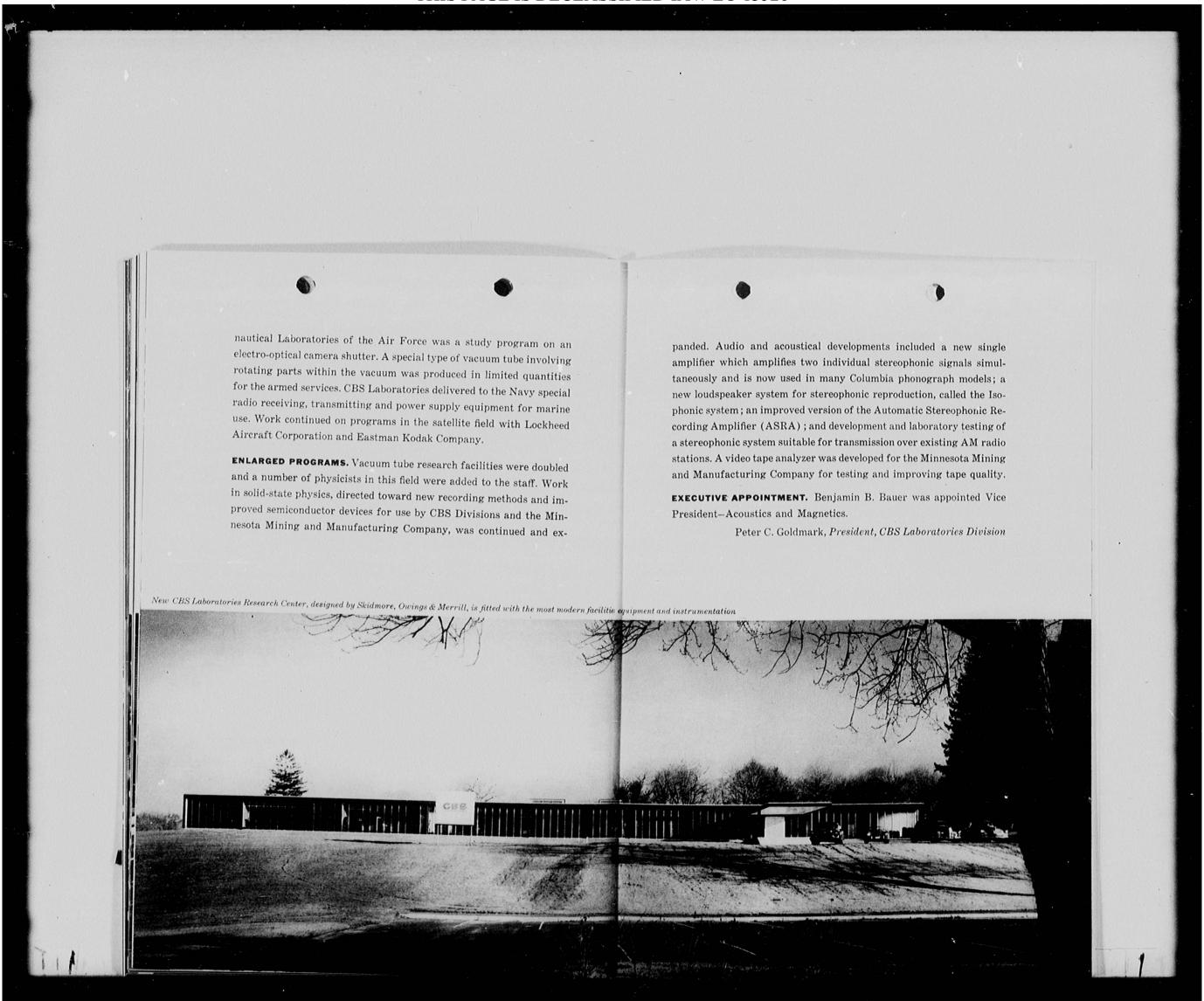
**NEW RESEARCH CENTER.** Expansion of the activities and facilities of the CBS Laboratories Division was signalized, in 1958, by the opening of its new Research Center in Stamford, Connecticut, on October 7.

The Research Center building, housing a staff of 150 people, is a single-story, air-conditioned structure fitted with modern facilities and equipment for development and research work in audio-video systems, acoustics, magnetics, solid-state physics, physical chemistry, optics, vacuum tubes, data processing systems and electronics for communications and other applications. It includes an anechoic chamber for acoustical measurement in an area free of all sound reflections.

FURTHER GROWTH. Additional acreage adjacent to the site of the Research Center was purchased during the year. Also, construction commenced on a 20-thousand square-foot, two-story building on Research Drive in Stamford which the Division will lease and which will increase the Laboratories' facilities by approximately 60 per cent.

NATIONAL DEFENSE. During 1958, CBS Laboratories completed and delivered to the United States Air Force an improved model of the AR5 (Mark II) Reconoscope for use in rapid analysis and interpretation of aerial reconnaissance photographs. Also completed for the Aero-

The sound-free anechoic chamber where precise acoustical measurements are made





## **Export**

cbs international. The CBS International Division, in 1958, achieved its highest sales and profits since its formation in 1954. Sales were ahead of 1957, by more than 50 per cent. Profits were also well ahead despite severe price competition in world markets. Increased export activity by German, Dutch, and Japanese manufacturers in the electronic field was particularly intensive.

**CBS PRODUCTS.** Although the Division handles many different items for export, the largest proportion is of CBS-manufactured products. Its sales of CBS-Hytron tubes and transistors were far in excess of last year, as were its sales of Columbia, Epic, and Harmony records.

Large volume orders for CBS-Hytron tubes were placed during the slack Summer months. A Spanish recording, "La Violetera," produced by Columbia Records as an "Adventures in Sound" release, resulted in sales of over 40 thousand Columbia © records in the Caribbean area during the late Summer season—an unusual accomplishment, and most welcome during a normally quiet period.

Sales of records to the Military Post Exchanges throughout the world were also greatly increased. Several special promotions were developed in cooperation with these Exchanges, resulting in large volume orders.

**OTHER PRODUCTS.** The Division continued to distribute several lines of broadcast equipment, and substantial sales were made to television stations in Brazil, Cuba, and Mexico as the year ended.

Other lines sold in export included magnetic recording tape; radios and television sets; kits of parts for television sets; refrigerators, freez-

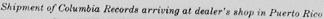
CBS-Hytron tubes and transistors being loaded for export

ers, and air-conditioners; and Spanish classical and popular recordings on various labels.

**EXECUTIVE APPOINTMENT.** William P. Munro was made Vice President of the Division. He had served as Assistant to the President from the time the Division was organized early in 1954.

**OUTLOOK FOR 1959.** A large part of the Free World is embarked upon a program of industrialization. This is especially true of Latin America, our most convenient market. The pattern of exports from the United States has changed radically since 1946. Prior to 1946, 50 per cent of all exports was consumer goods. Today the figure is only 20 per cent.

In the future, exporters must look toward foreign manufacturing and licensing for additional income. As the larger nations develop local in-







Steel drum band sponsored by Columbia Records distributor in Trinidad, B.W. I.

dustries, they will need to purchase components, machinery, and heavy equipment. This Division is now exploring ways of taking advantage of the opportunities both of these activities present.

As in the past, CBS International will continue to seek markets still open for American finished products. Although there may be some loss in sales in some of the larger Latin-American countries—because of expanded local manufacturing operations—CBS International expects that other countries, where the Division has not operated heretofore, will take up the slack. And although the prediction of continued yearly increases in export sales is hazardous, CBS International, nevertheless, expects to maintain its volume close to the high level achieved in 1958.

Lewis Gordon, President, CBS International Division

#### Statements of Income

Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. and domestic subsidiaries

	53 WEEKS ENDED Jan. 3, 1959	52 WEEKS ENDE Dec. 28, 1957
Sales and other income:		
Net sales	\$411,800,203	\$385,409,018
Other income	3,317,093	3,018,925
	415,117,296	388,427,943
•		
Costs and expenses:		
Operating expenses and cost of goods sold	279,381,170	266,934,345
Selling, general and administrative expenses .	72,884,004	63,986,323
Depreciation, and in 1958, amortization of con-		30,000,020
tract rights	7,832,008	6,435,380
Interest, net	1,316,744	1,086,015
Loss on disposal of fixed assets	174,558	1,392,513
	361,588,484	339,834,576
	53,528,812	48,593,367
Federal income taxes	29,100,000	26,400,000
Net income	\$ 24,428,812	\$ 22,193,367

### Statements of Retained Earnings and Capital Surplus

Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. and domestic subsidiaries

RETAINED EARNINGS:	Jan. 3, 1959	52 WEEKS ENDER Dec. 28, 1957
Balance at beginning of period	\$65,769,708	\$57,024,222
Net income	24,428,812	22,193,367
	90,198,520	79,217,589
Deduct:		
Cash dividends, \$1.00 per share	7,881,320	7,651,643
Stock dividends, three per cent; 1958, 236,449 shares at \$40.50 per share; 1957, 229,554 shares at \$25.25 per share (note 1)	9,576,184	5,796,238
		0,190,200
Write off of goodwill	5,064,950	
CAPITAL SURPLUS:	,	
CAPITAL SURPLUS:	\$12,876,153	\$ 7,644,811
	\$12,876,153 18,000	
Balance at beginning of period		\$ 7,644,811 8,988 5,222,354

The accompanying notes are an integral part of these statement

Balance Sheets	Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. and domesti subsidiaries
	guidantes and domest subsidiaries

ASSETS:	Jan. 3, 1959	Dec. 28, 1957
Current assets:		
Cash	\$21,666,943	\$23,458,476
United States Government and municipal securities, at cost and accrued interest (approximates market)	266,519	
Notes and accounts receivable, less allowance for doubtful accounts, January 3, 1959, \$2,391,300; December 28, 1957, \$1,225,344		,,
Inventories, at the lower of cost or market	74,271,150	7, 10,000
Films, film rights and other prepaid expenses	23,405,638	22,666,782
	32,293,442	25,458,485
Total current assets	151,903,692	160,875,414
nvestments:		
Wholly owned foreign subsidiaries, at cost Other, at cost or less	1,969,443	1,317,086
state, accost of less	2,735,847	3,443,637
	4,705,290	4,760,723
ixed assets, at cost;		
and		
	7,463,507	6,271,454
uildings, improvements and equipment	90,152,703	81,939,963
	97,616,210	88,211,417
Less, Accumulated depreciation	39,094,468	39,116,238
	58,521,742	49,095,179
ontract rights and other assets at cost, less		
mortization	16,291,611	3,074,006
oodwill		5,064,950
		0,004,000

LIABILITIES AND STOCKHOLDERS' EQUITY:	Jan. 3, 1959	Dec. 28, 1957
Current liabilities:		
Accounts payable and accrued liabilities	\$42,016,288	\$41,689,88
Federal income taxes	22,962,743	24,674,83
Current instalments on notes and mortgages	3,170,052	1,513,25
Total current liabilities	68,149,083	67,877,969
Amounts due after one year:		
Notes payable, 31/2 %-41/4 %, due 1960 to 1973	44,348,000	47,332,00
Mortgages	3,523,152	3,707,19
Other	3,910,197	4,093,75
Total amounts due after one year	51,781,349	55,132,94
Deferred federal income taxes	1,640,000	1,510,000
Stockholders' equity:		
Common stock, par value \$2.50 per share; authorized 12,000,000 shares; issued and outstanding, January 3, 1959, 8,118,649 shares; December 28, 1957, 7,881,400 shares (notes 1 and 2)	20,296,622	19,703,50
Capital surplus	21,879,215	12,876,15
Retained earnings (note 3)	67,676,066	65,769,70
Total stockholders' equity	109,851,903	98,349,36
•		

\$231,422,335 \$222,870,272

The accompanying notes are an integral part of these statemen

### **Notes to Financial Statements:**

- I. As approved by the Stockholders, all previously authorized shares of Class A and Class B capital stock, \$2.50 par value, were changed on December 23, 1958 into a like number of shares of a single class of stock designated "Common Stock" with the same par value. References in the financial statements to shares of common stock are after giving effect to such change. The shares outstanding at January 3, 1959, include 236,449 shares issued on January 16, 1959 as a stock dividend declared November 12, 1958.
- 2. The Company has granted options to certain officers to purchase shares of common stock at a price not less than 95% of market value on the dates the options were granted. Unissued shares of common stock under option to officers at the beginning and end of the year (exercisable at various dates through 1965) and changes during the year are summarized as follows:

Shares under option at December 28, 1957	38,991
Options granted (at \$25.00 and \$28.75 per share) .	10.500
Adjustment regulting for actions of the second of the seco	10,500
Adjustment resulting from 3% stock dividend	1,460
	50,951
Less, Option exercised (at \$25.00 per share)	800
Shares under option at January 3, 1959 (at prices	
ranging from \$20.16 to \$29.22 per share), of which	
options on 36,107 shares were exercisable at Janu-	
ary 3, 1959	50,151

Shares of unissued common stock reserved for future options at the beginning and end of the year were 243,053 and 231,093, respectively.

Options for these shares may be granted prior to January 1, 1961 at the discretion of the Board of Directors.

**3.** Under the agreements covering notes payable there are certain restrictions with respect to the payment of dividends (other than stock dividends) on the Company's stock and to the purchase, redemption or retirement of its stock. At January 3, 1959, \$34,200,000 of retained earnings was free of such restrictions.

#### **Report of Auditors:**

To the Stockholders of Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc.:

We have examined the consolidated balance sheet of Columbia Broad-casting System, Inc. and its domestic subsidiaries as of January 3, 1959, and the related statements of income, retained earnings and capital surplus for the fiscal year (53 weeks) then ended. Our examination was made in accordance with generally accepted auditing standards, and accordingly included such tests of the accounting records and such other auditing procedures as we considered necessary in the circumstances. We made a similar examination for the preceding year.

In our opinion, the accompanying balance sheet and statements of income, retained earnings and capital surplus present fairly the consolidated financial position of Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. and its domestic subsidiaries at January 3, 1959, and the results of their operations for the fiscal year (53 weeks) then ended, in conformity with generally accepted accounting principles applied on a basis consistent with that of the preceding year.

Lybrand, Ross Bros. & Montgomery

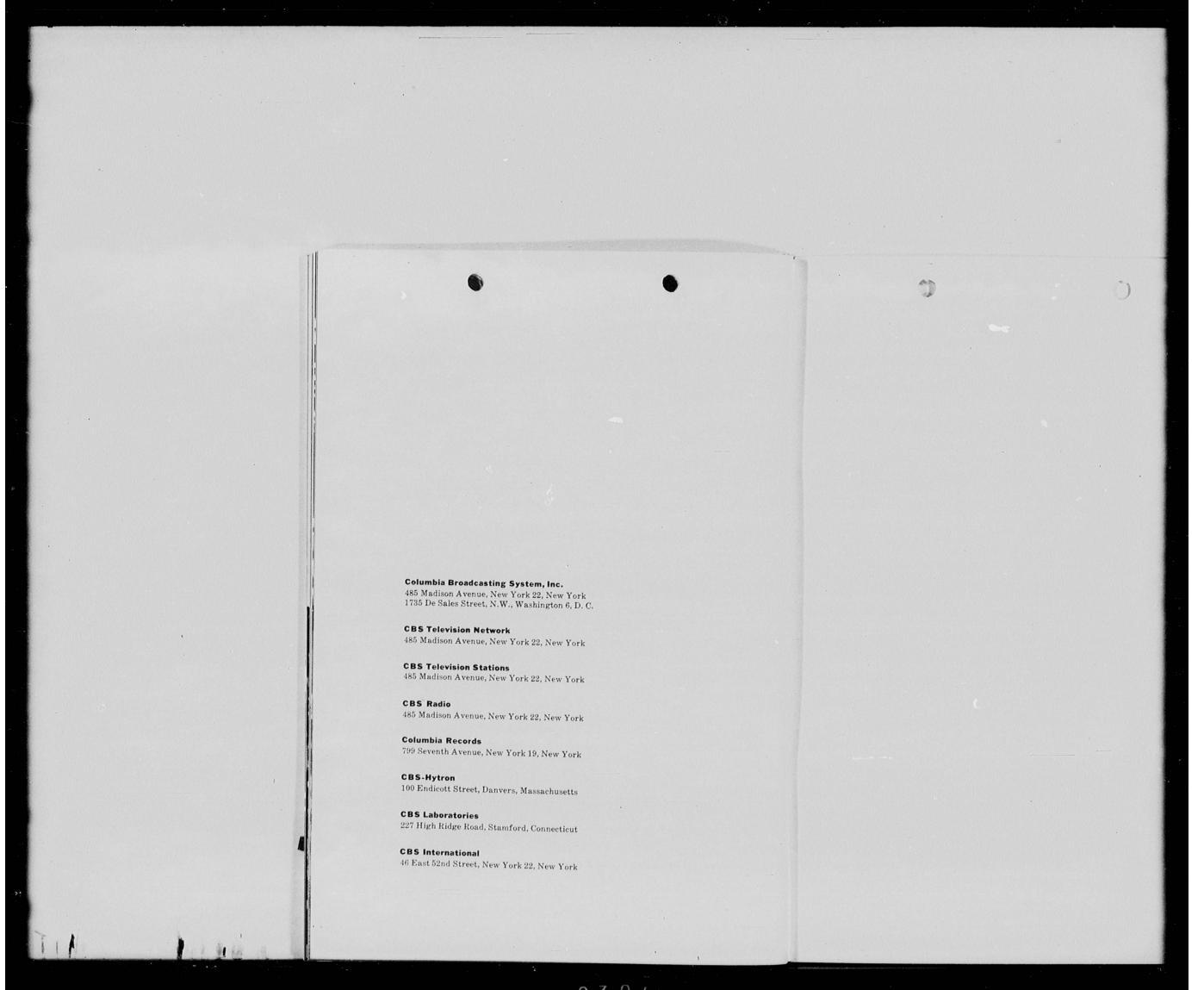
New York, February 24, 1959

## 10-Year Financial Summary Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc. andomestic subsidiaries

(Dollars in thousands)

	1958	1957	1956	1955	1954	1953	1952	1951	1950	1949
Total current assets	\$151,904	\$160,875	\$131,496	\$117,369	\$105,936	\$78,593	\$64,054	\$66,002	\$29,194	\$27,587
Total current liabilities	68,149	67,878	57,040	51,529	48,785	42,278	34,194	30,284	14,433	11,313
Net working capital	83,755	92,997	74,456	65,840	57,151	36,315	29,860	35,718	14,761	16,274
Current ratio	2.23	2.37	2.31	2.28	2.17	1.86	1.87	2.18	2.02	2.44
<b>P</b>										
Property, plant and equipment (net)		49,095	53,107	52,117	53,410	46,971	40,119	26,933	16,622	13,628
Investments and other assets	20,996	12,900	11,494	10,603	9,953	10,477	7,548	8,546	8,017	8,579
	163,273	154,992	139,057	128,560	120,514	93,763	77,527	71,197	39,400	38,481
Less: Long term liabilities	53,421 109,852	56,643 98,349	55,259 83,798	54,527 	54,599 65,915	41,785 51,978	30,113	26,560 44,637	6,947 32,453	
Stockholders' equity:										
Common stock	20,297	19,703	19,129	18,715	6,097	5,852	5,852	5,845	3,719	3,719
Capital surplus	21,879	12,876	7,645	3,407	8,733	3,825	3,825	3,758	162	162
Retained earnings	67,676	65,770	57,024	51,911	51,085	42,301	37,737	35,034	28,572	27,215
	\$ 109,852	\$ 98,349	\$ 83,798	\$ 74,033	\$ 65,915	\$ 51,978	\$ 47,414	\$ 44,637	\$ 32,453	\$ 31,096
Net sales	\$411,800	\$385,409	\$354,780	\$316,573	\$280,291	\$236,972	\$194,109	\$146,380	\$99,589	\$82,326
Income before federal income taxes	53,529	48,593	35,083	29,897	23,215	21,395	15,246	13,619	9,555	7,634
Net income	24,429	22,193	16,283	13,397	11,415	8,895	6,446	6,360	4,105	4,184
Per cent of net income to net sales	5.9%	5.8%	4.6%	4.2%	4.1%	3.8%	3.3%	4.3%	4.1%	5.1%
Earnings per share (note)	\$3.10	\$2.81	\$2.07	\$1.71	\$1.48	\$1.16	\$0.84	\$0.95	\$0.73	\$0.74
Cash dividends paid per share (note)	\$1.00	\$0.97	\$0.86	\$0.72	\$0.58	\$0.56	\$0.49	\$0.48	\$0.49	\$0.43

NOTE. Based on the average number of shares outstanding in each year, adjusted for 3 for 1 stock split in 1955 and stock dividends of 3% in 1958 and 1957 and 2% in each of the years 1956, 1955, 1954.





United Cerebral Palsy of Washington, D.C. • 1720 M Street Northwest • REpublic 7-0075

Honorary Campaign Chairman MRS. DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

Honorary Chairman, "53 Minute March" MRS. RICHARD M. NIXON

Campaign Chairman

GENERAL GERALD C. THOMAS, USMC (Ret.)

Chairman, "53 Minute March"

Chairman, "53 Minute March' MRS. WILLIAM P ROGERS

Chairman, Business Gifts MR. ROBERT F. HURLEIGH

Chairman, Special Gifts MR. RUFUS S. LUSK

Chairman, Public Information MR. M. BELMONT VER STANDIG

Chairman, Special Events MRS. ALBEN BARKLEY TRUITI

General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF(Ret.) 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase 15, Maryland

My dear General Spaatz:

As we close our ledgers on the 1959 campaign, we would be remiss if we did not express our thanks to you for your kindness in serving as one of our sponsors.

Your participation - and that of our other patrons - gave added assurance to the public that our appeal was a worthy one, meriting support. This confidence was reflected in the friendly response we have had.

So - in behalf of the 10,000 men and women who gave of their time to conduct our "53 Minute March" in the residential districts . . . and for all of us closely allied with UCP . . . and for the hundreds of handicapped we serve - please accept our appreciation for your interest and assistance.

Sincerely,

August 13, 1959

Gerald C. Thomas General, USMC (Ret.)

Campaign Chairman

JOIN THE 53 MINUTE MARCH



SINCE 1951, WASHINGTON RESIDENTS
HAVE GIVEN UCP THEIR GENEROUS
SUPPORT FOR THE DEVELOPMENT
OF A PROGRAM OFFERING HELP AND
HOPE TO THE HANDICAPPED



Any child suspected of cerebral palsy is given, upon request of a parent, an examination. If the diagnosis is CP, the child is enrolled, according to medical need, in the hospital's physical and occupational therapy, neurological, speech and hearing clinics. Some visit the clinic daily. Some require therapy less often. Many have been receiving treatment since our program began in 1953.

Because parent as well as child often needs help — a special UCP grant to the Hospital's Social Service Division enables a staff worker to devote 20 hours a week to visiting and counselling with CP families — that they may better adjust to problems ahead.



#### AT CHILDREN'S HOSPITAL . . .

Without therapy, cerebral palsy can be pitifully progressive. With therapy—the younger a child is reached, the better the chance, not only to halt but to lessen its crippling. In our free treatment program at Children's Hospital, some 130 youngsters receive the therapy that offers this chance.



# r adjust to problems ahead. MEETING SPECIAL NEEDS... TRANSPORTATION IS IMPORTANT...

Getting places is a problem to a CP. Many cannot use public transportation — nor afford private. To insure that all in our program can participate regularly, UCP provides cab fares for those who need this added help. Many drivers who regularly answer our calls have become gently skilled in handling crippled children and their wheelchairs. —

## A SPECIAL KIND OF HELP FOR THE CP . . .

Care of a CP makes many demands on an average family budget. UCP tries to help by meeting expenses of orthopaedic devices. Requests from doctors for wheelchairs or special braces are promptly submitted to our Medical Board for approval.

#### PUBLIC EDUCATION IS IMPORTANT, TOO ...

Our program — if it is to truly help the cerebral palsied — must reach beyond the individual CP. It must reach the public, if the CP is to hope for a normal life. People must know that an awkward gait is not necessarily evidence of a visit to a bar... that behind the mobile features of a CP there may be a brilliant brain... and that given an opportunity, many CPs would be valuable employees. It is important, too, that early symptoms of cerebral palsy be recognized so that therapy will not be delayed. For these, and other reasons, Public Education is vital to our program.

AN AFFILIATE OF UNITED CEREBRAL PALSY OF AMERICA INC



#### AT THE S

Shady Hill D handicapped, and planned r Because the C children was District Gove and children







REGISTERED UNDE

#### members of our UCP Boy and Girl Scout Troops. Although uniforms may not always be smartly new, they couldn't be worn with greater pride than by our children — from the littlest lame Brownie to the wheelchaired Eagle Scout.

IN OUR SCOUT TROOPS ...

Not long ago, the Scout oath was the proud property of normal boys and girls.

Today, some 60 handicapped youngsters share the benefits of Scouting — as



SPITAL . . .

alsy can be pitifully

— the younger a
the chance, not only
pling. In our
Children's Hospital,
e the therapy that



#### PECIAL KIND OF HELP THE CP . . .

of a CP makes many ands on an average ly budget. UCP tries slp by meeting expenses thopaedic devices. Rets from doctors for selchairs or special es are promptly subted to our Medical d for approval.

#### 00 ...

the CP is to hope for t is not necessarily features of a CP there runity, many CPs t early symptoms not be delayed. For our program.

EBRAL PALSY OF AMERICA INC.



#### AT THE SHARPE HEALTH SCHOOL ...

Shady Hill Day Camp, now held on the grounds of the District's school for the handicapped, was opened in 1954 by UCP, to give palsied children vacation-time therapy and planned recreation.

Because the Camp's contribution as a supplement to the District's program for crippled children was quickly recognized by city officials, Shady Hill is now a joint project of the District Government and UCP — and its "campers" include both the cerebral palsied and children crippled by polio and other diseases.



### AT GEORGE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY HOSPITAL . . .

Because the term "spastic" was for so long broadly applied to anyone handicapped by a disturbance of nervous and muscular systems, many CPs reached adulthood without proper diagnosis or treatment. To help meet this need, UCP turned to a fine-hospital center — offering the most modern diagnostic and evaluation equipment available to medical science. In numbers served, our program at George Washington University Hospital is not large. But its value as a basic part of a well-balanced overall program for our CPs is large indeed!



#### AT UCP'S YOUNG ADULT CENTER ...

The CP child of 15 or 20 years ago — growing up without benefit of modern therapy techniques, — was overly sheltered or badly neglected. Thus, aid for the adult CP presents special problems now. Yet the outlook is NOT hopeless. Long neglected muscles can still be nudged to take on some of the work they were meant to do. Recognizing this, UCP — as its first project — in 1951 — opened a Young Adult Crafts and Recreation Center.

Today, we employ two instructors, to teach daily classes in leather and metal work, painting and weaving. The Center has its own kitchen for serving lunches. It is also headquarters for our Young Adult Club—of some 150 CPs—who regularly meet to share the pleasures of checker games, hi-fi, and friendly talk.



#### IN RESEARCH THERE IS HOPE ...

Today, a cerebral palsied birth occurs somewhere in the U. S. every 53 minutes. That tragic statistic will continue to cast its shadow on thousands of families each year unless — and until — the cause of CP is found. But research is costly. Twenty-five percent of all funds we raise in the District goes to our National Research Foundation. Locally, grants under its program have been made to the American Speech and Hearing Association — for advancement of speech therapy training, and to Children's, George Washington, and Georgetown Hospitals — for blood and tissue studies. The avenues of search are many — and all hold hope.

REGISTERED UNDER DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA CHARITABLE SOLICITATION ACT 6-07-49

#### SPONSORS

H.E. Sheikh Abdullah Al-Khayyal The Ambassador of Saudi Arabia Mrs. Robert B. Anderson Mrs. Robert Low Bacon Mrs. Ezra Taft Benson Mrs. Robert Woods Bliss General Omar N. Bradley, USA Mrs. Wiley Buchanan H.E. The U.S. Ambassador to NATO and Mrs. Burgess Dr. Leroy E. Burney H.E. The British Ambassador and Lady Caccia General Clifton B. Cates, USMC (Ret.) Mrs. Raymond E. Cox Mrs. Arthur S. Flemming Rabbi Norman Gerstenfeld Mrs. Charles C. Glover, Jr.

Dr. Carl F. Hansen
H.E. The Ambassador of Ireland
and Mrs. Hearne
Mrs. Christian Herter
Dr. Mordecai W. Johnson
The Hon. Eric Johnston
Mrs. David B. Karrick
Mr. Ernest K. Lindley
Mrs. Neil H. McElroy
Mrs. Robert E. McLaughlin
Mr. George Meaney
Mrs. James P. Mitchell

Mrs George Gordon Moore
H.E. The Ambassador of the
Dominican Republic
and Senora de Moya

Chief Robert V. Murray, MPD The Most Reverend Patrick A. O'Boyle Mrs. Andrew Parker
Dr. Robert Parrott
Mrs. Donald A. Quarles
The Very Rev. Francis B. Sayre, Jr.
Mrs. Fred A. Seaton
H.E. The Ambassador of Nicaragua
and Senora Sevilla-Sacasa
General Lemuel Shepherd, USMC (Ret.)
H.E. The Belgian Ambassador
and Baroness Silvercruys
Major Gen. Howard McC. Snyder
(MC) USA
General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF (Ret.)
Mrs. Lewis L. Strauss
Mrs. Arthur E. Summerfield
Fire Chief Millard H. Sutton, DCFD
Mrs. Earl Warren
General Albert C. Wedemeyer
Mrs. Alvin C. Welling

#### WOMEN'S COMMITTEE

Mrs. Paul C. Aiken Mrs. William B. Ardery Mrs. Ian Bald Mrs. Fred E. Batrus Mrs. James Robert Browning Mrs. Charles E. Chamberlain Mrs. Thomas Coggeshall Mrs. John Sherman Cooper Mrs. Harvey Donaldson
Mrs. George Cochran Doub
Mrs. Herman LeRoy Emmet, Jr.
Mrs. William Flythe Mrs. Whitney Gilliland Mrs. Elizabeth Goodman Miss Louise Gore Miss Ella F. Harllee Mrs. Gardner Jackson Mrs. James Johnston Miss Leah Kaplan Dr. Margaret M. Kendrick Mrs. E. A. Killingsworth Mrs. David King Mrs. J. N. McKean
Mrs. J. N. McKean
Miss Rose McKee
Mrs. Carl D. McManamy
Mrs. Charles McVay, IV
Mrs. Allen C. Minnix Mrs. Edmund S. Muskie Mrs. Leo Brisson Norris Mrs. Dan J. O'Brien Mrs. Iva Ormes Mrs. Charles Keating Rice Mrs. Ralph Rivers Mrs. Nancy C. Robinson Miss Christine Sadler Mrs. Hugh Scott Mrs. Rocco C. Siciliano Mrs. Silver L. Tesone Miss Virginia Warren Mrs. William Wilson White

#### BUSINESS COMMITTEE

Mr. Irving Berger Mr. William C. Birely

Mrs. Max Blatt Mr. Jack P. Blume Mr. Cecil Brooksher Mr. Leon Cherner Mr. Kenneth Cox Mr. David Datlow John DeJoseph Mr. H. D. Fangboner Mr. A. J. Fogel Mr. Jack A. Gertz Mr. Richard Gibbs Florenz Hinz Herbert Hodge Mr. L. Wilber Horning Mr. Charles Kligman Mr. Charles Kngm.
Mr. Philip Lampkin
Mr. Lee Laurin
Carl Levin Mr. Carl Levin Mr. M. H. Lingenfelter Mr. James W. Mangold Miss Barbara Norton Mr. Edward Paberg Mr. Henry Rau Mr. Jack A. Schwab Mr. Frank Shah Mr. Arthur Clarendon Smith, Sr. Mr. Arthur Clarendon Smith, Jr. Mr. Douglas R. Smith Mr. Richard J. Stanley Mr. William R. Teunis William Tiney

Mr. Duke Zeibert

## SPECIAL GIFTS COMMITTEE

Mr. Edward C. Baltz
Mr. Edward Burling, Jr.
The Hon. Oscar Chapman
Dr. Melville B. Fischer
Mr. Hans W. Ireland
Mrs. Lillian C. Montgomery
Mr. and Mrs. Charles M. Potter
Brig. Gen. Harry H. Semmes
Mr. Carl L. Shipley
Mrs. David Stone
Mr. Silver Tesone
Mr. Glenn E. Watts
Mr. William A. Xanten

## PUBLIC INFORMATION COMMITTEE

Mr. Henry Altman
Miss Patty Cavin
Mr. H. Walton Cloke
Mr. George Doty
Mr. William Flythe
Mr. Maurice Johnson
Mr. Scott Kirkpatrick
Mr. Frank La Falce
Miss Patsy Parkin
Miss Mary-Stuart Montague Price
Mr. Matthew Warren
Mr. J. L. Whitehead



PRESIDENT VICE ADMIRAL LELAND P. LOVETTE, USN (Ret.)

EXECUTIVE DIRECTOR RICHARD J. CURRY PUBLIC RELATIONS DIRECTOR BETTE EVANS

CHAIRMAN, MEDICAL ADVISORY BOARD JONATHAN M. WILLIAMS, M.D.

May 1, 1959

General Gerald C. Thomas Campaign Chairman United Cerebral Palsy of Washington, D. C. 1720 M Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.

Dear Thomas:

Thank you for your letter of

April 22.

I wish I could have the opportunity of talking with Cheryl Roberts and Jeffrey Jackson. However, I am leaving town for an extended absence and will not have that opportunity.

Sincerely,



# UNITED CEREBRAL PALSY OF WASHINGTON, D. C. 1720 M STREET, NORTHWEST WASHINGTON 6, D.C. REpublic 7-0075

April 22, 1959

Gen. Carl A. Spaatz, USAF (Ret) 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

My dear General Spaatz:

We were very pleased that, in response to Admiral Lovette's recent letter, you have advised that you will be among the sponsors of our 1959 campaign. Your support will mean a great deal in insuring the success of this annual drive, and, in turn, the continuation of our program during the coming year.

I wish that each of you who will be associated with this effort could talk with Cheryl Roberts and Jeffrey Jackson, the little CP girl and boy who have been named as our junior leaders. I believe that the courage they show would give you an added sense of personal satisfaction in knowing that you are helping make it possible for hundreds of such handicapped youngsters to receive the therapy that they need so much.

Again, thank you for your kindness.

Sincerely,

Gerald C. Thomas General, USMC, (Ret.)

Campaign Chairman

GCT:bl

March 26, 1959

Mr. Bennett Crain Attorney at Law Mt Victoria, Maryland

Dear Bennett:

The enclosed letter is for your information.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Enclosure

February 27, 1959

Senator Dennis Chavez United States Senate Washington 25, D. C.

Dear Senator:

Referring to your letter of January 27 and my interim reply to you, I have just returned from an extended absence from Washington and find General O'Donnell's answer to my inquiry.

For your information, I am enclosing a copy of his letter dated February 13.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Enc.

C+ O Canal

Home address:

7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

March 18, 1959

Honorable Gracie Pfost Chairman Subcommittee on Public Lands House of Representatives Washington, D. C.

My dear Mrs. Pfost:

I understand hearings will be held in the near future by your subcommittee on the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal National Historical Park bills.

May I emphasize strongly my fullest support for the principles of H.R. 953 and H. R. 2331 and my concern if either H.R. 5194 or H. R. 5344 should become the law.

Sincerely,

## POTOMAC VALLEY CONSERVATION AND RECREATION COUNCIL

Washington, D.C.

March 14, 1959

HEARINGS SCHEDULED ON CHESAPEAKE AND OHIO CANAL NATIONAL HISTORICAL PARK BILLS

Hearings on bills to establish the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal National Historical Park have been scheduled for March 23, 24, and 26 by the Subcommittee on Public Lands of the Interior and Insular Affairs Committee in the House of Representatives. Every possible effort of conservationists will be needed to bring about a successful outcome.

Conservationists in the Washington area are already familiar with the issues and the history of bills in past years. They know the great need for the Park. They know that the bills met defeat last year through the efforts of rural electrification interests bent on furthering their desires to dam all our free-flowing streams for the production of power on a subsidized basis. They know how the Subcommittee perverted hearing procedures in order to serve the desires of the electrification group. This year the rural coops have greatly intensified their efforts. They have increased their pressure on the Subcommittee, on a national scale. A well-financed local "front" organization, called the Potomac River Development Association, has been formed to present a program "for full comprehensive development of all the river's resources," with electric power placed near the end of a long list of high-sounding purposes.

At present four bills are before the Subcommittee, H.R. 953, introduced by Repr. John P. Saylor (Pa.), H.R. 2331, by Repr. John R. Foley (Md.), H.R. 5194, also by Repr. Foley, and H.R. 5344 by Repr. Richard E. Lankford (Md.). The Saylor bill fully represents the views of proponents of the Park, providing for its creation without any qualifications. H.R. 2331 is acceptable, since it is identical with Mr. Saylor's bill except for the simple reservation that creation of the Park would not bar Congress from approving dams later, which the vast majority of conservationists were willing to accept as a reasonable compromise last year. Mr. Foley's later bill, H.R. 5194, and Mr. Lankford's bill, H.R. 5344, which are identical, are thoroughly bad. They would completely subordinate the Park to the dam-building program, giving the Corps of Engineers and the District Commissioners the power to interfere with the development of the entire Park and endorsing the survey of the River which has so long been propagandized by the Corps for the purpose of justifying a series of dams along the entire River. It is rumored that Mr. Foley intends to introduce still another, and worse, bill.

(over)

- 2 -

#### Recommendations

- 1. Member organizations should send statements supporting the principles of H.R. 953 and H.R. 2331 and opposing H.R. 5194 and 5344 to the Hon. Gracie Pfost, Chairman of the Subcommittee, and should urge their members to write letters to Mrs. Pfost.
- 2. Since it appears that it would probably be advantageous to hold down the number of witnesses at the hearings, it is suggested that local groups unite in designating Mr. William C. Grayson as their spokesman. Any group desiring to do this should send a letter at once to Mr. Grayson, authorizing him to appear in its behalf and stating the number of its members. The address is: National Broadcasting Company, 4001 Nebraska Avenue, N.W., Washington 16, D. C.
- 3. Personal contact with members of the Subcommittee and other Congressmen is extremely important. Also, it would be desirable to have a large audience at the hearings. Everyone who can be there as a spectator should attend, to give further evidence of the interest the bills have aroused.
- 4. If you are affiliated with a national organization which does not have regular Washington representation, try to interest it in submitting a statement to the Subcommittee and in taking other action to support the Park along the lines recommended in 1 and 3 above.
- All constituents of either Repr. Foley or Repr. Lankford should advise him of their views about the bills which they have introduced.

\* \* \*

Copies of the leaflet The Chesapeake and Ohio Canal Park which the Council issued last year are still available for any group which wishes to use them. Contact Elting Arnold, 4914 Dorset Ave., Chevy Chase 15, Md.; OLiver 2-7344.

#### HOUSE COMMITTEE ON INTERIOR AND INSULAR AFFAIRS

Democrats		Democrats	
Wayne N. Aspinall, Chairman	Colo.	*Ralph J. Rivers	Alaska.
Leo W. O'Brien	N. Y.	*Quentin Burdick	N. D.
Walter Rogers	Tex.	*John A. Burns	Hawaii
*Gracie Pfost	Idaho	A. Fernos-Isern	P. R.
James A. Haley	Fla.	Bonub 1 danna	
Adam C. Powell	N.Y.	Republicans	
Ed Edmondson	Okla.	*John P. Saylor	Pa.
B. F. Sisk	Calif.	J. Ernest Wharton	N. Y.
Stewart L. Udall	Ariz.	E. Y. Berry	S. D.
*J. T. Rutherford	Tex.	Jack Westland	Wash.
*Walter S. Baring	Nev.	Craig Hosmer	Calif.
*Al Ullman	Ore.	*J. Edgar Chenoweth	Colo.
*LeRoy H. Anderson	Mont.	Harold R. Collier	111.
*D. S. Saund	Calif.	*Gardner R. Withrow	Wisc.
*Donald F. McGinley	Nebr.	Bob Wilson	Calif.
Thomas G. Morris	N. Mex.	*Glenn Cunningham	Nebr.
		*Odin Langen	Minn.
		*Edna Simpson	111.

\* Denotes members of Subcommittee on Public Lands, Congresswoman Pfost, Chairman.

Address of all members of Committee is Honorable
Representatives, Washington 25, D. C.

#### POTOMAC VALLEY CONSERVATION AND RECREATION COUNCIL

Washington, D.C.

The present threat to Glover-Archbold Park is well summarized in this story from THE SUNDAY STAR. Groups should make their protests promptly in an effort to remove the appropriation from this year's District budget. The proposal has had hearings in the subcommittee, so protests should best be made to Clarence Cannon, Chairman of the full House Appropriations Committee. Senate hearings are scheduled for after Easter, so also put in your request now for a chance to be heard. This should go to Senator John O. Pastore, chairman of the subcommittee for the District. of the Senate Appropriations Committee.

This expressway would completely destroy the last fine, unspoiled, and safe park remaining in the District. There are other and better solutions to the future traffic problem. The road plan also blandly disregards the specific use for which the Park land was given by Mrs. Archbold and Mr. Glover. Details of the Park's value and the history of the case may be found in our publication, SHALL GLOVER-ARCHBOID PARK BE DESTROYED?, which was distributed at the time of the Route 240 hearings. A few copies are still available. Also, a small folding exhibit showing the beauties of the park and the effects the road would have is available for group meetings or other presentations. Make your request to Shirley Briggs, 4201 Massachusetts Avenue, N.W. (16), Telephone WOodley 6-4528.

# Glover-Archbold Park

By JAMES G. DEANE
Star staff writer

The District has completed tentative plans for a dual, fourlane roadway through Glover-Archbold Park, which extends from the Potomac River to Upton street N.W. west of Georgetown.

The projected parkway has been given top priority as a link between the planned Potomac freeway, Virginia highways and upper Wisconsin and Massachusetts avenues. It also may serve as the western end of a proposed District intermediate loop highway. And there is a possibility it may point directly to a new Potomac bridge.

First construction is planned this summer. The parkway may not be ready for motorists, however, before late 1963.

Development Opposed

The park, slightly over 2½ with a tunnel under Tenley with a tunnel under Tenley Circle and a possible freeway and any onnect with Military content of about 1,300 feet wide, follows Foundry branch, a method in about 1,300 feet wide, follows Foundry branch, a method in a barbor foxes and within the city limits.

Most of the park land was defend to park land was a dered to restrict the donated land to park land was deeded to the city by property owners, according to conservationists, only to allow a sewer in the valley, however. A footpath now runs above the sewer line.

Park officials are expected to ask for some changes in the year of the right-of-way to the park.

Two Roadways Planned

Plans called for two 26 for the park land was possible freeway and andering brook. It is still will want a tunnel under Tenley Circle and a possible freeway ander way may connect with a tunnel under Tenley way may connect with the totylons the a method for way and andering brook. It is still will way may and the park land was called for two for the park land way and an

THE SUNDAY STAR, March 1, 1959

Development Opposed
Glover-Archbold Park now has only footpaths. Conservationists and nature groups long have opposed its use for any roads, contending this would destroy a valuable natural stream valley and wildlife refugge.

Two Roadways Planned

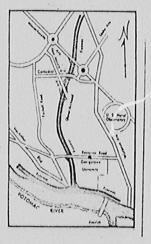
Two Roadways Planned

Two Roadways Planned

Plans called for two 26-foot roadways running generally generally along the center of the park, with access roads at various crossing streets. The roads have designed for a 50-mile stream valley and wildlife refugge.

Critics Outspoken

Road critics charged two would be barred to trucks would invite loiterers, endanger children who use the park for louget now pending in Ccn-gress for the first construction. Bridges on Reservoir road and New Mexico avenue are the concluded in would also be adverse to neighboring homes. The probable first projects, officials said. The total parkway cost probably will be about \$5 million.



It might still become such a link, officials said. But it would be barred to trucks o under existing legal agree-

March 18, 1959

Mr. Bennett Crain Attorney at Law Mt. Victoria, Maryland

Dear Bennett:

Reference your letter of March 14, I have talked to Pete Quesada over the phone and forwarded Buschman's letter to him. He seemed interested.

Phone me when you get to Washington.

As ever,

BENNETT CRAIN

WASHINGTON BOWEN BUILDING NATIONAL 8-4286 ATTORNEY AT LAW MT. VICTORIA MARYLAND

TELEPHONE CLEARBOOK 9-2435

March 14, 1959

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Tooey:

The Honorable George W. Radebaugh's son Joe is married to a girl who has a brother in the Air Force. He is a Major stationed at Andrews Field, a member of the Swann Point ducking gang of hoodlums and although like the rest of the members he is unable to kill very much but very hard to beat in number of shells fired. Enclosed is a letter from him dated March 8th, which I found this morning upon my return from Annapolis.

John called me last weekend and I told him to put on paper just what he had in mind. He saw in the paper that General Pete had been given a new job and having heard George talk about you and having met you himself down here, he is wondering whether arrangements could be made to have him considered for a position with the new organization.

If you are in a position to do so, you might forward John's letter to the General with the comment that I assure him that Major Buschman is not capable of operating a one lunged Fairbanks Morse cyster boat whose reverse gear is adequately controlled by placing the two raw ends of the battery wires together at the exact time when the fly wheel is in the correct position to make the motor reverse itself. You might also suggest to him that so long as he is going to be around Washington we might take him fishing this summer on a boat that is not much of an improvement on the one which the Navy at one time permitted him to fish from in the Potomac River during the last world conflict.

I am still operating in Annapolis, but will give you a ring as soon as I get to Washington.

Sincerely,

Bennett Crain

BC:hj Encl.

Re: ( stee Coombe Group

January 28, 1959

Mrs. Betty Younger c/o Douglas Aircraft Company, Inc. Suite 603, Commerce Building 1700 K Street, N. W. Washington 6. D. C.

Dear Betty:

I have just received the annual invitation to the reunion of the Castle Coombe Group on February 21-22.

Under present plans, I will probably be in California during that time but in case I do get back to town I would certainly plan to be one of those present.

Sincerely,

#### THE CASTLE COOMBE GROUP

#### Charter Members

#### Associate Members

Lt Gen Ira C. Eaker Beirne Lay, Jr. Glenn L. Jackson Maj Gen R. G. Ervin Brig Gen C. P. Lessig James Parton Lt Col C. O. Mason Charles A. Jones Peter Beasley (deceased)

Lt Gen F. A. Armstrong, Jr. Col E. E. Toro Brig Gen Edward J. Tracy Carl Norcross Col Harris B. Hull Col W. S. Cowart, Jr.

Col W. R. Smith

John Edmondson. J. Dabney Penick E. D. Gray

January 13, 1959

SUBJECT: 17th Annual Reunion

TO: Members and Friends of the Castle Coombe Group

1. The members of the CC Group cordially invite you to attend and participate in the festivities (listed below) of the 17th Annual Reunion of the 8th Air Force/VIIIth Bomber Command Alumni to be held in the city of Washington, D. C. on 21 - 22 February 1959.

> a. Cocktail Party - 21 Feb 59 - 5 to 7 P. M. Location: Lt Gen Ira Eaker's Residence

3045 West Lane Keys

Georgetown (Just off P St. between 30th & 31st Streets)

Important: Your ladies are most welcome - bring em!!

b. STAG Dinner for all alumni at Army Navy Town Club - 21 Feb 59 -7:30 P. M.

- c. After Dinner "Benefit Performance" for those eligible and charitable gentry who enjoy a game of chance!!! Time and place later.
- d. BRUNCH for Charter and Associate Members only 22 Feb 59 -12:30 P. M. at Army Navy Town Club.
- 2. RSVP make it affirmative by 9 Feb and please indicate whether you'll attend the Cocktail Party, Dinner or both.

Looking forward to seeing you!!!

RSVP to: Mrs. Betty Younger c/o Douglas Aircraft Company, Inc. Suite 603, Commerce Building

1700 K Street N. W. Washington 6, D. C. C.O. (Mase) Mason C. O. MASON, Lt Col, USAF ret. Secretary-Treasurer Castle Coombe Group

Sparts. Hope you can be will us again this year!!

January 28, 1959

Senator Dennis Chavez Senate Office Building Washington, D. C.

Dear Senator:

Receipt is acknowledged of your letter of January 27th.

I will discuss this matter with those in the Air Force who are in charge of the entrance requirements and will let you know what reaction I obtain.

Sincerely,

December 19, 1958

Countess Jacqueline de Contades c/o Morgan Bank Paris, France

Dear Jacqueline:

I have just visited with Julian Allen who told me the sad news about Helene. She was a wonderful person whom everyone was the better for knowing. I am very sorry that I did not see her once more before the end.

Sincerely,

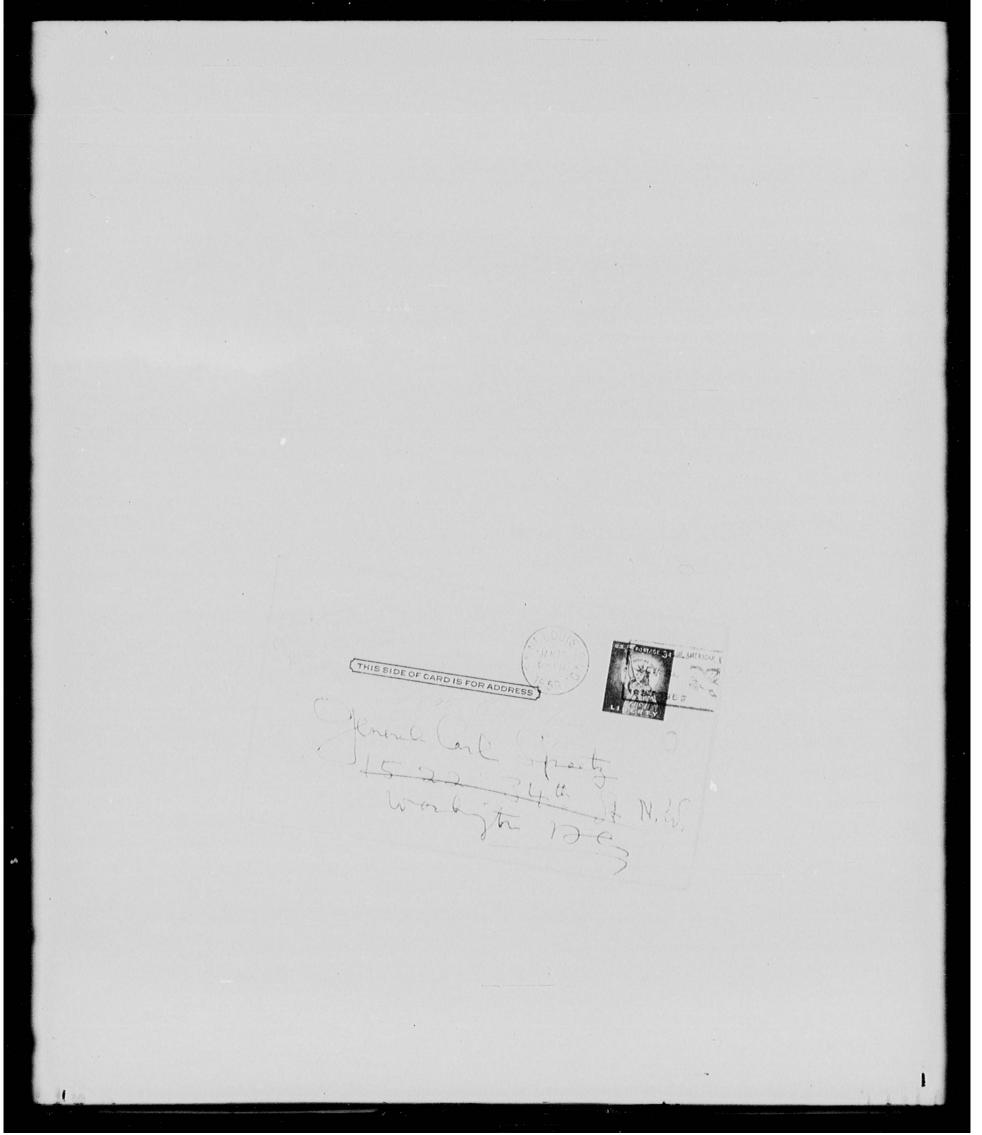
January 19, 1959

Mr. Cyril Clemens, Editor Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Clemens:

I am going out of town and will be back on the 17th of February. If you are here then, I will be delighted to see you.

Sincerely,



Dear General Spaatz

I shall be in

Washington next month
and am writing to ask

if I may have the
pleasure of calling to
pay my respects

I hope the Mark

Twain Journal reached
you

Cyril Clemens

December 31, 1958

Mr. Newt Crumley The Holiday Reno, Nevada

Dear Newt:

I appreciate very much your nice Christmas card and also the credit card which I will undoubtedly use during the next year, providing you keep the wheels

Ruth joins me in best wishes for the

Sincerely,

January 10, 1957

The Comtess de Contades 21 Avenue des Peupliers Villa Montmorency Paris XVI, France

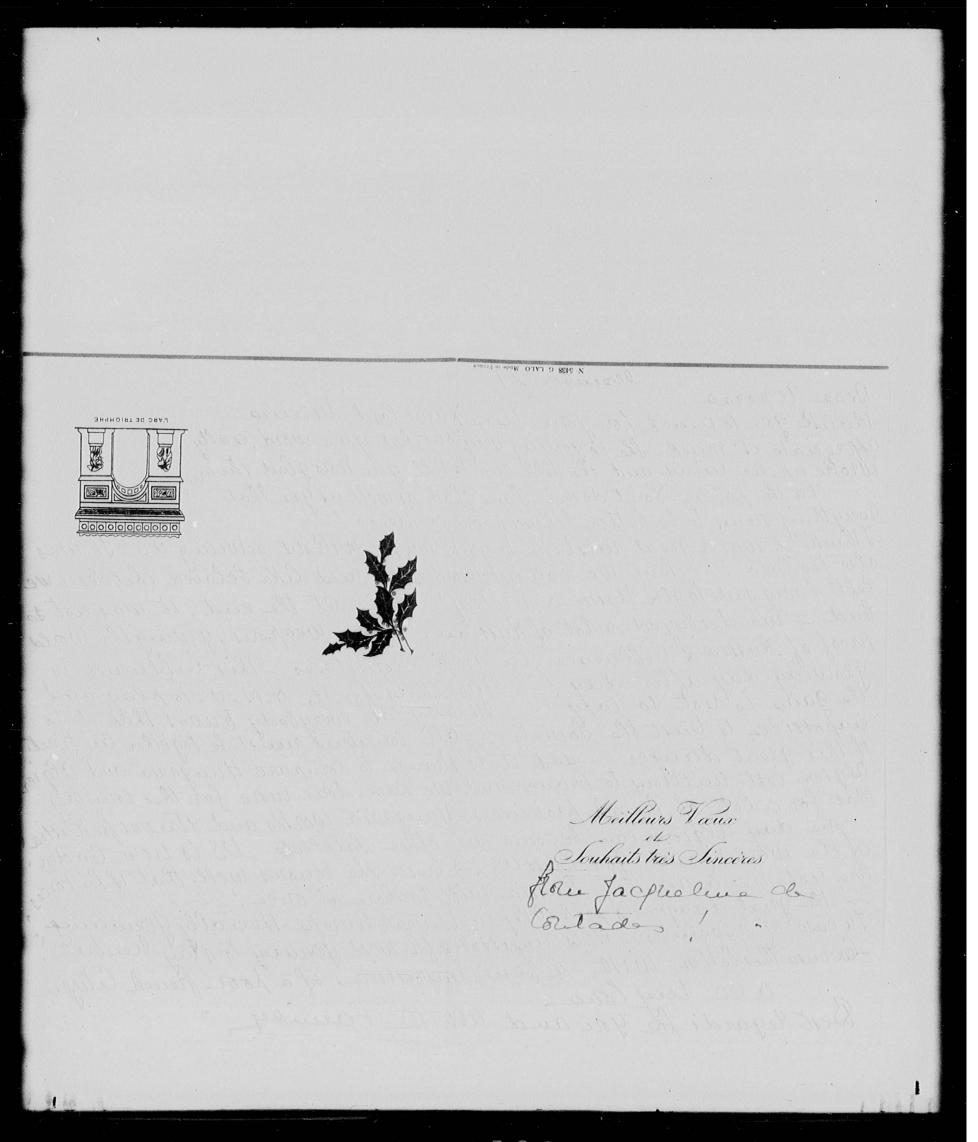
Dear Jacqueline:

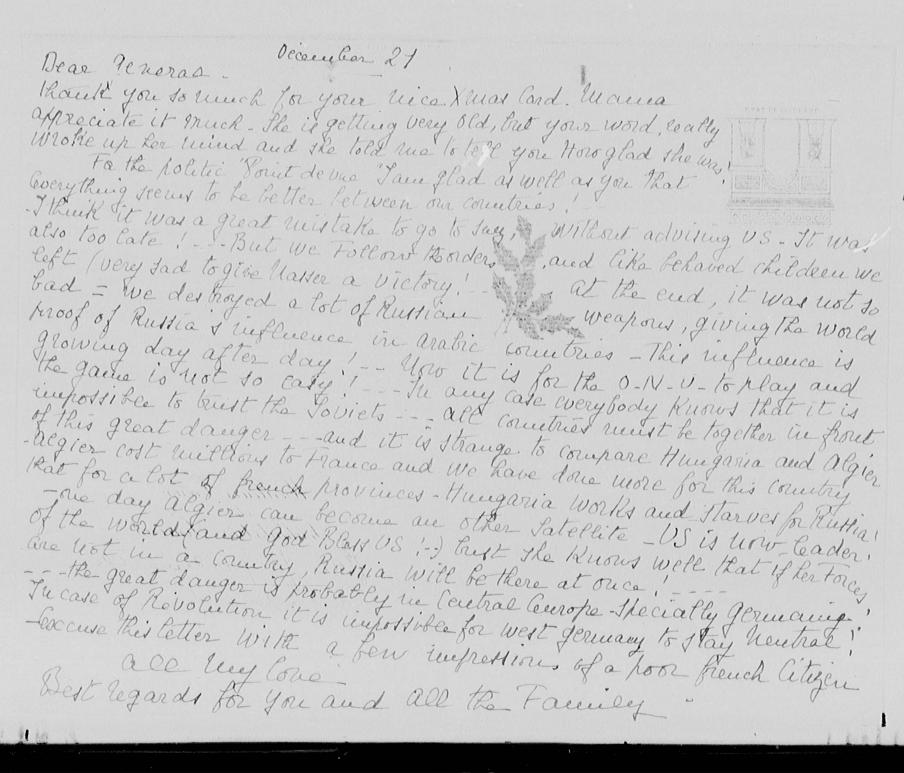
I appreciate very much your letter of December 21st with the news of Helene. I hope we may get to France this year and see you all. We were very much distressed that it was not possible for us to get there this past year.

I have every confidence that the relationship between our countries has not been strained to the point where we cannot resume our united, strong position against the Soviets.

Please give my love to Helene and keep some for yourself.

Sincerely,





Telegram to:

Ralph P. Cousins 727 West Seventh Street Los Angeles 17, California

Poker party on fifteenth okay.

Tooey

Charge to Newsweek

### RALPH P. COUSINS

MAJOR GENERAL UNITED STATES AIR FORCE RETIRED
727 WEST SEVENTH STREET
LOS ANGELES 17

NOVEMBER 5 I 9 5 8

DEAR TOOEY:

I AM HAPPY TO HAVE YOUR LETTER WITH YOUR STATEMENT THAT YOU WILL BE ABLE TO SPEND THE NIGHT OF THE FIFTEENTH WITH ME.

AS YOU KNOW, DIANA HAS LEFT FOR THE EAST. BILL AND SHEILA WILL BE GLAD TO HAVE US FOR DINNER WITH THEM ON THE NIGHT OF THE FIFTEENTH, AND BILL WILL ARRANGE A POKER PARTY FOR US IF YOU WOULD LIKE.

SO THAT HE CAN FINISH HIS PLANS AND GET A QUORUM, PLEASE WIRE ME WHETHER OR NOT THAT WILL BE PLEASING FOR YOU.

SINCERELY,

GENERAL CARL SPAATZ
NEWSWEEK
NATIONAL PRESS BUILDING, SUITE 1229
WASHINGTON 4, D. C.

October 21, 1958

Andrew W. Caffrey c/o General Delivery Laconia, New Hampshire

Dear Caffrey:

Receipt is acknowledged of your letter dated September 24, 1958.

Rickenbacker is the official American ace of aces of World War I despite all opinions to the contrary.

Rickenbacker learned to fly at Issoudun, France while I was in command there. I am assure you that there is no doubt about his record.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Sept. 24, 195 F

Gen. Cal Spaaty Yo an Forme Pentagon, J. E

Hear General:

O'm going to ask you a question, maybe you won't care to answer it then again perhaps you will. It has to all with who was our World War I are of ones. I know the standard, excepted answer; but "Ruhenbarber" has never sounded right to me.

When the report of Richenbacker's first victory came back to clesondran everybody in the know said, "Hoes-shit! Richenbacker can't even fly."

and assording having given Richenbacker a wash-out, never changed its opinion.

Mon- we find Rich' credited with 26, and

Suhe with 15; but Horald Hartney (see Wp and at En")

say he tenew of several". Suhe victories that the

bid never received credit for. Suhe had to get

his credits from Wehner, while Richenbacker took

a sequadron car, ran along the front, (behind, of

course) and manufactured his own confirmations.

Richenbacher in olefending This system, claims that a member of a man's own group or

unit could not confirm for hom. But Wehner was of the 27th What say you - could your fellow 1st Pursuit Group confirm for you, and did They? another thing Richentacher claims That he was the only 1 st Parsuit grouf man in the ari on the morning of nov 11,1918; and that at 11 o'clock he glanced at his watch, knew then and there that the war was over, so lifted his more high in the air, emptred both guns, then came in for his landing; and, sure enough, The war was over. Didn't maxwell Kuby get that last victory of the war on the morning of the 11th ? Of you were still on the front, were you and the others oflying? Richenbacher says it was a bad-sky day, grounding all leaser men, but I recall that we were doing our work at Fild 8, Ossoudin. How about a few anomers! Smerely, andrew a. Caffrey % gen Del Laconia, N.H. P.S. Jalmost forgot - my main question is who, mi your openion, was over ose of eces?

October 21, 1958

Mr. Newt Crumley HOLIDAY Reno, Nevada

Dear Newt:

Sorry I didn't get to see you again before taking off for the south and later for Washington.

We thoroughly enjoyed the hospitality of HOLIDAY as well as the nice going—away gift. Please tell your publicity man that the picture arrived today and I think it is very good of you but can't say as much for myself. However, this was not the fault of the camera.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

newt crumley's



in Reno

October 16, 1958

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear General:

It was a genuine pleasure to have you with us during your too short a stay.

 $$\operatorname{Mr.}$  Crumley asked me to send the enclosed picture.

Very truly yours,

Robert S. Hughes Public Relations Director

RSH:jds Enclosure

the

2 September 1958

Dear Ira and Tooey:

With the greatest of regret, your most efficient Cabin Boy is forced to drop out of any visit to the Rogue this year. You don't know what a disappointment this is to me, but I see no alternative.

A combination of the international situation and the late adjournment of Congress delayed Allen Dulles' departure until 29 August for his more than a month's trip to Europe. Counting the overlap necessary with him after his return, and the continuing difficult international situation, it will be out of the question for me to make any of the periods mentioned in your letter.

So, many thanks for inviting me and letting me have the pleasure of anticipation for so long a time.

Best wishes to you both and here's hoping you catch all the Steelhead and Rainbow you want. I hope, too, that you find that Tooey has not lost his touch with the Hot Punch and Ira with the skillet. And, if either of you more than tolerates any new Cabin Boy, I'll haunt you.

Sincerely

C. P. Cabell General, USAF

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

the

### MERIAN C. COOPER

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, Cal September 8, 1958

Dear Tooky

I want to tell you again how fine and proud an affair for the Air Force was General Chennault's funeral, much of which was due to your efforts. Sad as the occasion was, it heartened me to see so many of his loyal friends and followers, and the impressive number of Air Force officers who came to pay him homage.

You may be sure all of his family also appreciated everything you did.

With best regards,

Yours, as ever,

Cook Merian C. Cooper

General C. A. Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

October 22, 1958

Mr. Charles Robert Copeland 815 So. Corona Denver 9, Colorado

Dear Mr. Copeland:

I am enclosing the autographed picture which you requested.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Enclosure

Charles Robert Coreland 815 So. Corona Denver 9, Colo. Lt. Jen. Carl Sheatz 7405 Cak Lone Dear ir. nould you blease send he mutographed bicture o wourselfe in your uniform if possible. I would like to have it autographed to me. hanks a lot. i ci ely, Charles Robert Copeland

August 1, 1958

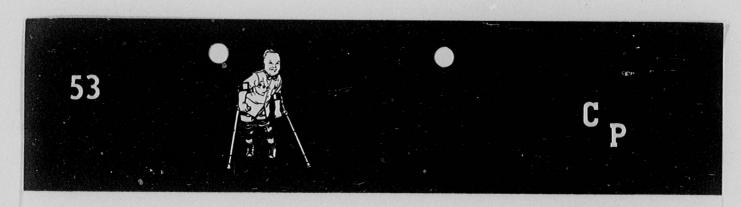
Vice Admiral Leland P. Lovette, USN (Ret.) 1958 Campaign Chairman United Cerebral Palsy 1720 M Street, N. W. Washington, D. C.

Dear Lovette:

I appreciate very much your nice letter of July 25th. It is very gratifying to know the splendid results of this year's campaign.

Sincerely,

General Carl Speats



Vice Admiral Leland P. Lovette, USN (Ret.)
Campaign Chairman
Mrs. Harold Hitz Burton
Chairman, 53 Minute March
Mrs. Neil H. McElroy
Chairman, Public Education
Mr. Daniel W. Bell,
Campaign Treasurer
Ar. Ralph H. Mittendorff
Assistant Treasurer Mr. Leon Cherner Chairman, Business Division Mr. Maurice Friedman Chairman, Special Gifts Division Mr. Frank LaFalce Chairman, Public Relations

### Sponsors

Mrs. Earl Warren
H.E. The Belgian Ambassador
and Baroness Silvercruys
H.E. The Ambassador of Ireland
and Mrs. Hearne
H.E. Sheikh Abdullah Al-Khayyal,
The Ambassador of Saudi Arabia special "thank you" to each of the wonderful people who home and with theories of the known of the wonderful people who home as by serving as a sponsor.

It. E. The British Ambounder on Mrs. Feixed Parish Ambounder on Mrs. Prixed Parish Ambounder on Mrs. Shield Parish Parish Parish Mrs. Shield Parish Parish Mrs. Denied A. Gourles Mrs. Denied A. Gourles Mrs. Denied A. Gourles Mrs. Thomas D. White Mrs. Denied A. Gourles Mrs. Thomas D. White Mrs. Thomas D. White Mrs. Denied Parish Mrs. Parish Pari

July 25, 1958

Mrs. Dwight D. Eisenhower Honorary Campaign Chairman Mrs. Richard M. Nixon, Honorary Chairman, 53 Minute March

Gen. Carl A. Spaatz, USAF (Ret.) 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase 15, Md.

My dear General Spaatz:

As the work of our 1958 campaign comes to an end, one important - and very pleasant - duty remains. That is - to say a very special "thank you" to each of the wonderful people who honored us by serving as a sponsor.

To you, I wish to express not only my own personal appreciation, and that of our Board, but also the gratitude of the cerebral palsied patients in whose behalf the drive is annually conducted.

You will be pleased to learn that, to date, money raised already totals more than in any previous year. The facts are, of course, that such an increase was vital, if we were to continue our program - since both costs and needs have increased even

And - again - let me say that we could not have succeeded had

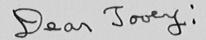
JOIN THE 53 MINUTE MARCHERS

All

### MERIAN C. COOPER

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California August 5, 1958

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland



I, as well as all of Claire Chennault's friends, deeply appreciate how much you did for his funeral, as did both branches of his family.

I tried to come out to see you and Ruth a couple of the few hours that I was not looking after Anna, or in Baltimore and New York. The last day when Ruth said you might be down at the Army and Navy Club, Anna pretty nearly cracked up, and I was doing what I could for her.

I know that Chennault had the deepest admiration for you - in fact he told me so more than once when I served as his chief-of-staff. Of all the airmen I served under during the war, you, George Kenney, Chennault and Whitehead seemed to me to be great leaders of men - all of you quite different, but all great inspirational fighting leaders.

As you know, I was chucked out of China because I was a loyal chief-of-staff and supported Chennault's theory, in which I heartily concurred, that we not only had to defeat the Japanese but that we should never let China fall under Communist domination.

Chennault was certainly loyal to the men under him -- loyal to me to an extreme degree. He was my friend in a very true sense, and I can never forget it. Therefore I am grateful he was given suitable military honors, which I am sure was in large part due to your efforts. Let me again give you my deepest appreciation.

Please give Ruth fondest affection from both Dorothy and me. Best regards,

As ever,

Merian C. Cooper

wee.

P.S. I am not certain I have your correct address, so I am sending a copy of this letter to you in care of Sarah Root at the Pentagon.

July 2, 1958

Mr. Charles B. Coates Citizens Committee for the Hoover Report 441 Lexington Avenue New York 17, New York

Dear Coates:

Thanks for sending me Hardy's memorandum.

It was nice seeing you at the Club the other day and I hope to run into you again there.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

# CITIZENS COMMITTEE FOR THE HOOVER REPORT 1958 CLIMAX DRIVE



777 Fourteenth St., N.W., Washington 5, D.C. • St. 3-4244

reply to 441 LEXINGTON AVE., NEW YORK 17 . MU. 2-0755

June 26, 1958

HONORARY CHAIRMAN
The Hon. Herbert Hoover
CHAIRMAN
Clarence Francis
CHAIRMAN,
FINANCE COMMITTEE
Colby M. Chester
TREASURER
N. Baxter Jackson
Assistant Treasurer

Assistant Treasurer
Keith M. Urmy
Executive Vice Chairman
Charles B. Coates

Charles B. Coales
Administrative Director
E. J. Ade
Research Consultant
Robert L. L. McCormick

Robert L. L. McCormick
VICE CHAIRMEN
Charles R. Blyth
P. B. (Jack) Garrett
B. E. Hutchinson
Frank P. Leslie
Julian S. Myrick
Neil Petree
Allen Rushton
Freeman Strickland
John Stuart
John C. Vivian
Tracy S. Voorhees

BOARD OF DIRECTORS

BOARD OF DIRECTORS

Charles Dana Bennett
E. LaMar Buckner
Mrs. Theodore Chapman
Colby M. Chester
Charles B. Coates
General William Donovan
Ferdinand Eberstadt
James A. Farley
Clarence Francis
Clinton S. Golden
Richard J. Gray
Robert Heller
Solomon C. Hollister
Dr. Robert L. Johnson
Henry Kearns
Mrs. Oswald B. Lord
Neil MacNeil
Roswell Magill
Sidney A. Mitchell
Admiral Ben Moreell
Herschel D. Newsom
Dr. Fred D. Patterson
Neil Petree
Stanley Resor
Capt. Edward V. Rickenbacker
Wallace H. Savage
Joseph P. Spang
Steve Stahl
Robert G. Storey
John Stuart

Joseph P. Spang
Steve Stahl
Robert G. Storey
John Stuart
Advisory Board
Warren R. Austin
Donald Comer
Colgate W. Darden, Ir.
Charles Edison
Henry Ford II
John N. Garner
Lessing J. Rosenwald
Dr. Robert G. Sproul
Anna Lord Strauss
Charles E. Wilson
Harry H. Woodring

General Carl Spaatz

Newsweek
1227 National Press Building
Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

Here is that memorandum which Rep. Porter Hardy put out to those who joined Clarence Francis in signing the telegraphic message to Congress.

As you suggest, you probably received one of these and gave it the heave-ho. Since you expressed interest in it the other day, I thought you might like to see it.

It was a great pleasure to meet you in the company of Bill Doherty at the Press Club the other day. Allow me to express my admiration for the continued great service you are rendering in your present capacity.

Sincerely yours,

Charles B. Coates

CITIZENS COMMITTEE FOR REORGANIZATION OF THE EXECUTIVE BRANCH OF THE GOVERNMENT, INC.

A Voluntary Bipartisan Organization for Public Education in Support of Federal Reorganization Contributions are deductible for Federal income tax purposes June 18, 1958

Mr. Arthur H. Dean Chairman, Membership Committee Council on Foreign Relations 58 East 68th Street New York 21, N. Y.

Dear Mr. Dean:

Thank you for your letter of June 16. I shall abide by the Council's suggestions regarding the selection of members.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

## COUNCIL ON FOREIGN RELATIONS, INC. THE HAROLD PRATT HOUSE 58 EAST 68TH STREET NEW YORK 21, N. Y.

CABLE ADDRESS: FORAFFAIRS, NEW YORK

June 16, 1958

General Carl A. Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase 15, Maryland

Dear General Spaatz:

I am writing you as Chairman of the Council's Membership Committee.

As you may know, the Board of Directors has set a ceiling of 700 on the Council's resident membership. We believe that this ceiling is necessary if the Council is to serve the present members properly. Unfortunately, however, this means that the membership situation is exceedingly tight. For example, at a recent meeting of the Committee, there were only 5 vacancies in the resident category and there were 55 names to consider, excluding in this count a very large backlog.

The Council's by-laws provide that membership be "by invitation of the Board of Directors." Selection is intended to be made on the basis of the usefulness of the candidate to the particular purposes of the Council rather than on his other qualifications. In this respect the Council differs from a club or other social organization.

Past experience indicates that there will be approximately 30 resident vacancies to be filled each year -- a very small number in relation to the number of nominees. It is proposed, therefore, that members be as selective as possible in suggesting candidates and not write letters for candidates they do not know very well. Candidates must have a real interest in international affairs and an ability to contribute substantially to the Council's discussions and other work. Furthermore, in writing both proposing and seconding letters, which should be detailed, candor about a candidate's qualifications will be particularly appreciated and will greatly aid the Committee in making its difficult choices. In future the four additional endorsing letters by members, formerly required, will not be necessary. In lieu of endorsing letters, however, the proposer in his letter is asked to list those Council members known to the candidate. This less formal procedure will, I hope, save embarrassment both to members and to our Committee. I am enclosing a small leaflet giving the new procedure for admission to Council membership, as well as the criteria.

The pressure is not as great in the non-resident category. In fact, there are still some vacancies for men living and having their place of business 50 miles or more from New York. Nevertheless, the Committee is concerned that the quality of the non-resident list be kept at the same high standard as the resident.

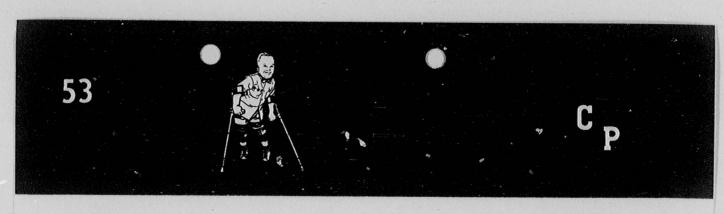
I shall much appreciate your help and cooperation.

Sincerely yours,

nur

Arthur H. Dean

Chairman, Membership Committee



Vice Admiral Leland P. Lovette, USN (Ret.) Campaign Chairman Mrs. Harold Hitz Burton Chairman, 53 Minute March Mrs. Neil H. McElroy Chairman, Public Education Mr. Daniel W. Bell, Campaign Treasurer Mr. Ralph H. Mittendorff Assistant Treasurer Assistant Treasurer
Mr. Leon Cherner
Chairman, Business Division
Mr. Maurice Friedman
Chairman, Special Gifts Division Mr. Frank LaFalce Chairman, Public Relations

Chairman, Public Relations

Sponsors

Mrs. Earl Warren
H.E. The Belgian Ambassador
and Baroness Silvercruys
H.E. The Ambassador of Ireland
and Mrs. Hearne
H.E. Sheikh Abdullah Al-Khayyal,
The Ambassador of Saudi Arabia
H.E. The Brazilian Ambassador
and Mrs. Peixolo
H.E. The British Ambassador
and Mrs. Peixolo
H.E. The British Ambassador
and Lady Caccia
Mrs. John Foster Dulles
Mrs. Robert B. Anderson
Mrs. Robert B. Anderson
Mrs. Robert B. Anderson
Mrs. Fred A. Seaton
Mrs. Fred A. Seaton
Mrs. Sinclair Weeks
Mrs. James P. Mitchell
Mrs. Marion B. Folsom
Mrs. Sherman Adams
Mrs. Estes Kefauver
Mrs. Stuart Symington
Mrs. Donold A. Quarles
Mrs. Wilbur M. Brucker
Mrs. James H. Douglas
Mrs. Thomas D. White
General Comar N. Bradley, USA
Mrs. James Killian
Mrs. Wiley Buchanan
The U.S. Permanent Representative on the Council
of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization
and Mrs. Burgess
General Albert C. Wedemeyer, USA (Ret.)
General Cliffon B. Cates, USAC (Ret.)
General Albert C. Wedemeyer, USA (Ret.)
General Cliffon B. Cates, USAC (Ret.)
General Cliffon B. Cates, USAC (Ret.)
General Cliffon B. Karrick
A. O'Boyle
The Honorable Epic Johnston
Mrs. Robert Woods Bliss
The Honorable Spic London
Mrs. Robert Woods Bliss
The Honorable Spic Johnston
Mrs. Roy W. Johnson
The Very Reverend Francis B. Sayre, Jr.
Rabbi Hugo B. Schiff
Major General Howard McC. Snyder, (MC) USA
Mrs. Royer W. Johnson
The Very Reverend Francis B. Sayre, Jr.
Rabbi Hugo B. Schiff
Major General Howard McC. Snyder, (MC) USA
Mrs. Royert M. Powrary
Mrs. Robert Low Bacon
Mr. O. Roy Chalk
Mrs. Raymond E. Cox
Mrs. Charles C. Glover, Jr.
Mr. Carl F. Honsen
Dr. Mordecai Johnson
Mrs. Peter Marshall
Mrs. George Gordon Moore
Chief Robert V. Murray, MPD
Mrs. Andrew Parker
Dr. Robert H. Parrott
Mrs. Jouett Shouse
Millard H. Sutton, Fire Chief, DCFD

Mrs. Dwight D. Eisenhower Honorary Campaign Chairman Mrs. Richard M. Nixon, Honorary Chairman, 53 Minute March

May 13, 1958

General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF (Ret.) 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase 15, Maryland

My dear General Spaatz:

On Monday afternoon, May 19, the Ambassador of Brazil and Mrs. Peixoto are graciously opening their Embassy for a reception honoring the Volunteer workers of United Cerebral Palsy.

As a sponsor of our 1958 campaign, you will receive a formal invitation from the Ambassador and his wife. We wish to express to you our own personal hope that you will be able to be present that afternoon.

We will be honored if you can join with other sponsors and campaign leaders - for even a few minutes - in the receiving line. We know that our Volunteers would deeply appreciate this opportunity to meet you. Certainly your welcome would further encourage them to do their best in fulfilling their assignment during the residential march the following evening.

Enclosed for your convenience is a postal, on which you may indicate whether or not you can attend and also the period(s) during the afternoon that might best fit into your busy schedule.

We know that you share our interest in this worthwhile effort and will want to be with us on May 19 if you possibly can.

> Sincerely, Jelma F. J. Burton Mrs. Neil H. McElroy

JOIN THE 53 MINUTE MARCHERS

April 22, 1958

Mr. Robert Campbell NEWSWEEK 6505 Wilshire Boulevard Los Angeles 48, California

Dear Bob:

I have just returned from the Bahamas and believe you will enjoy your visit there next month. You may want to take a run down to the Bang Bang Club and do some bone-fishing. In case you do get in touch with Colonel H. S. Thorne, Telephone No. 3457, Nassau.

The best place to stay in Nassau is the Prince George Hotel. It is right on the beach and the rates are reasonable. The Cumberland House is not in a particularly good location and the rates are rather high, although the food is supposed to be the best in Nassau. It is open to other than guests for meals so you will undoubtedly do better by staying at the Prince George.

I enjoyed being with you and your wife on my recent visit to Los Angeles.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

March 11, 1958

Mr. Benajmin F. Castle 1145 - 19th Street, N.W. Washington, D.C.

Dear Ben:

I have forwarded Ira's proposal for membership in the Club as of this date.

Sincerely,

Gen. Carl Spaatz

## BENJAMIN F. CASTLE 1145-1919-STREET, N. W. WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

March 7, 1958

General Carl Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Maryland

Dear Twoey:

Enclosed is the application for Ira's membership at Burning Tree. Please sign and mail to the Club
as soon as possible. I understand that there are a
hundred applicants for membership now standing in line.
Best regards.

Sincerely,

Benjamin F. Castle

Enclosure

March 11, 1958

Mr. Howard Cady 210 Madison Avenue New York, N.Y.

Dear Cady:

Hope you will parter my long delay in answering your letter of February 26th but I have been out of town and am just now catching up on my correspondence.

I have enjoyed reading "Five Down and Glory." I believe it is a very comprehensive compilation of World War I, World War II and Rorean War aces. It should we a valuable book for all those interested in combet aviation.

Best wishes,

Gen. Carl Spaatz

CS:jm

### G · P · PUTNA, M'S SONS

210 MADISON AVENUE NEW YORK 16, N. Y.

42 . GREAT . RUSSELL . STREET . LONDON . W.C.I. . ENGLAND

HOWARD CADY EDITOR-IN-CHIEF AND VICE PRESIDENT

February 6, 1958

General Carl Spaatz Newsweek 1229 National Press Building Washington 4, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

After you have had a chance to read FIVE DOWN AND GLORY, I wonder if you would be willing to give us a brief statement concerning the book we can use in our advertising and publicity. It has been purchased by the Air Force for the library kits which go all over the world and we are receiving all sorts of wonderful comments. A brief statement from you would certainly help insure the success of the book.

We all enjoyed meeting and working with your daughter on WHITE HOUSE CHEF.

Best wishes,

Horone Care

HC:sc

February 5, 1958

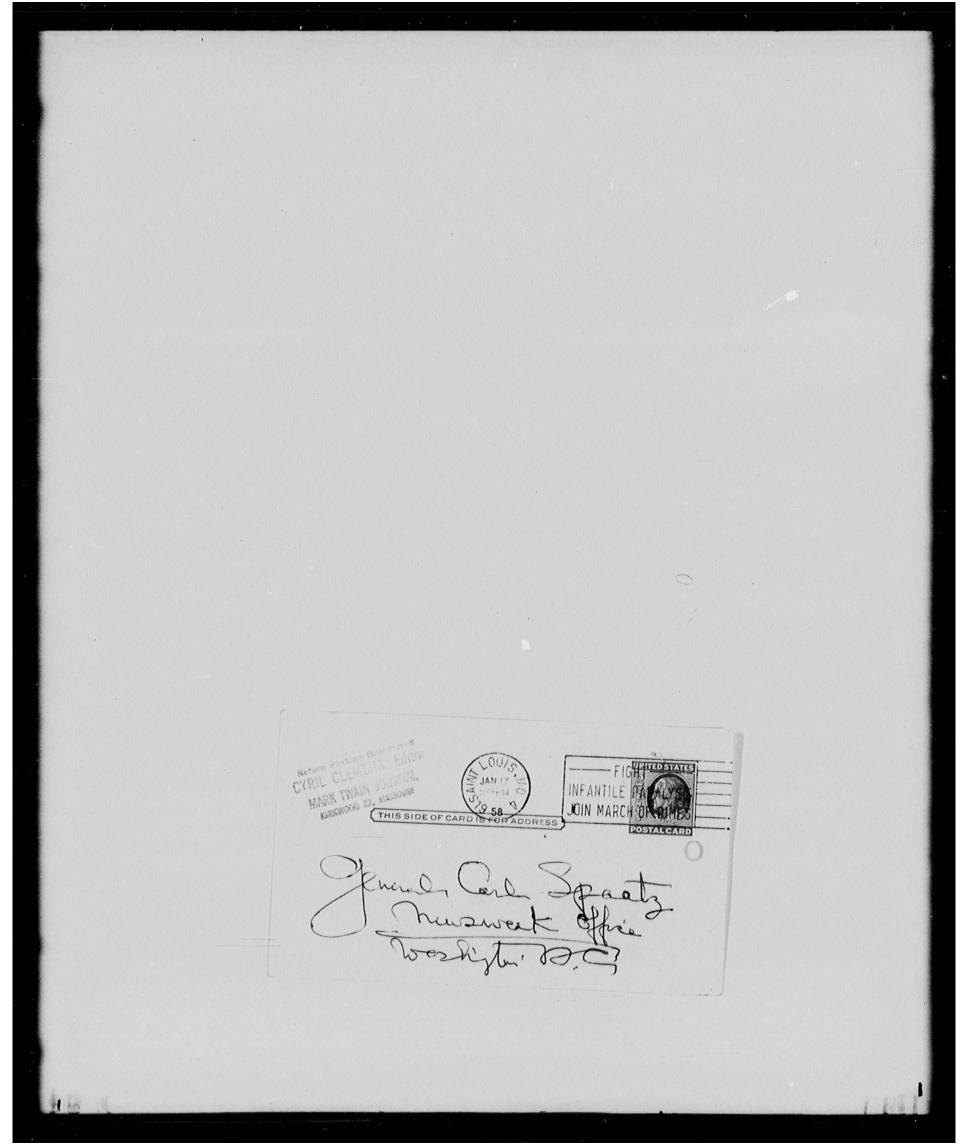
Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Clemens:

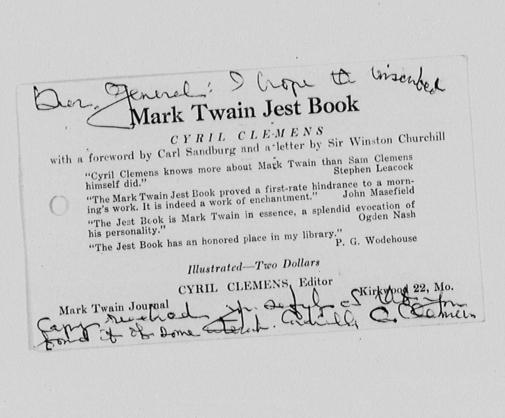
Thanks ever so much for sending me a copy of Mark Twain Jest Book. It was very kind of you to remember me. I shall read it with interest.

Sincerely.

General Carl Spaats



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526



February 5, 1958

Mr. Charles Currie DeWitt, Arkansas

Dear Charles:

I was very glad to know that Ginger is proving out so well. I enjoyed very much seeing you again this past shooting season and certainly am looking forward to being with you next year and watching the dog work.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

January 22, 1958

Genera 1 Spaatz c/o Newsweek Press Builaing Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

Enjoyed shooting with you again this year. I am already looking forward to next season.

I am anxious for you to see Ginger work. She had, had no hunting experience, but from the first day has made a good retriever. She improved with every hunt and the last day I could see little difference between her and Skip. She is a beautiful dog with a winning disposition.

I sincerely thank you for making it possible to have her.

hadee burne

December 24, 1957

Mr. James B. Cress 1945 Byron Street Palo Alto, California

Dear Jim:

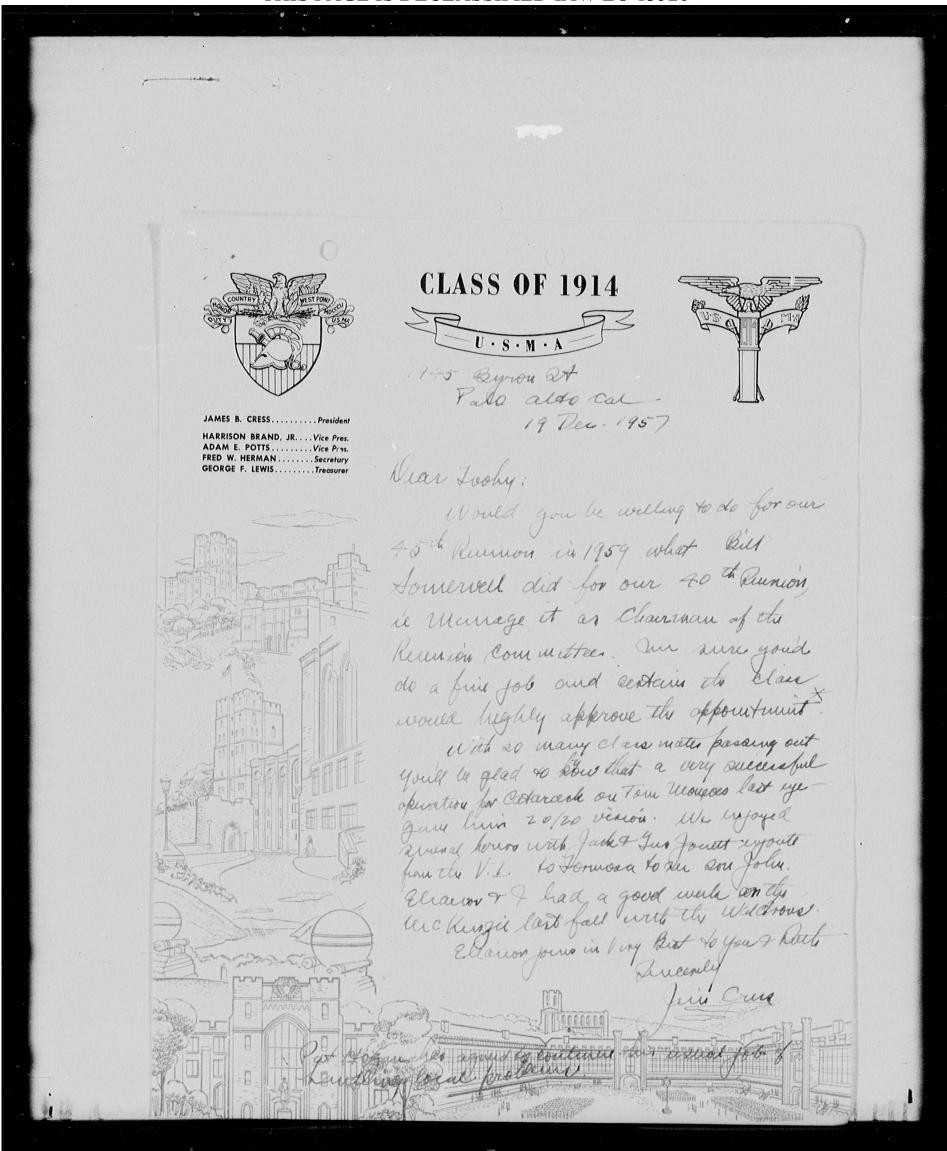
I just received your letter of December 19.
I would like very much to respond to your request. However, 1959 is the year during which the remaining memorials will be dedicated in the cemeteries in Europe. As a member of the Battle Monuments Commission, I am committed to be there at that time which will embrace practically the entire summer commencing early in May.

I was delighted to hear the news about the success of Tom Monroe's eye operation.

Ruth joins me in very best to Eleanor and yourself.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526

December 24, 1957

Air Marshal A. C. Curtis 475 Oriole Parkway Toronto, Canada

Dear Wolf:

I certainly was surprised and delighted to open the package and find the line dryer together with the priest. I was very much intrigued with it, as you were when seeing it at the fishing camp last year.

Roth joins me in all good wishes for the holiday season.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

475 ORIOLE PARKWAY
TORONTO

December 12, 1957.

Dear Tookey,

At last year's fishing camp I was intrigued with the "Line Dryer", which Tom Pike brought over from England.

I ordered some of these from Hardies in London, and am sending you one under separate cover, together with a "Priest" (salmon killer). I hope the Line Dryer will help to keep your line in good shape until next August, when they both should go into daily use.

With all good wishes for the Christmas Season.

Sincerely,

General C.A.Spaatz, 1654 Avon Place NW., Washington, D.C.

· · Fle

LIEUTENANT GENERAL C. P. CABELL QUARTERS 72, BOLLING AIR FORCE BASE WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

24 October 1957

Dear Tooey and Ira:

Since my return, the problems of Sputnik, impending British visits and a myriad of other things have kept me hopping. It all made me long for a return to the Rogue River.

You two gave me the most wonderful vacation of my life. There were only two things which in any way marred its perfection. The first was that on my first morning there, the weather was so good that I had no excuse to stay in bed and get my full eleven hours of sleep. The second was that my analytical powers were too slow to fathom all your card tricks and so avoid making a modest contribution.

The vacation was just what I needed and my Family hanks you for making me an easier person to live with.

Thanks to your patient and skillful coaching, and your generous loan of fishing equipment, I learned more about fishing than I ever knew before -- and caught more fish -- even if I didn\*t pull in any Steelhead.

Just being with two delightful Gentlemen -- my old Commanders -- was the greatest pleasure of all.

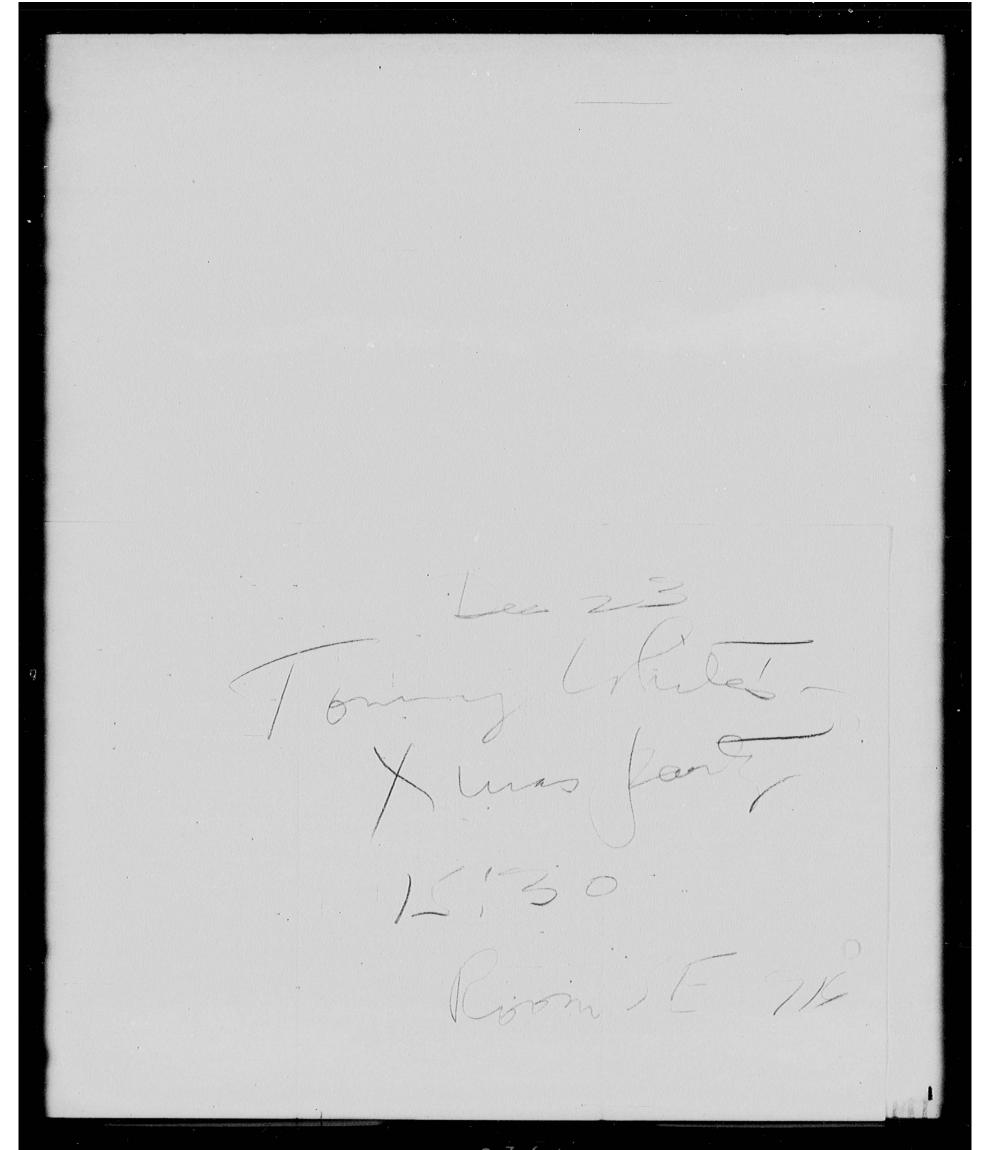
I m sorry to have missed Ruth Eaker in Los Angeles, except by phone, but during my few days in Pasadena. I was so completely involved with Jacklyn's family that it left me little leeway. Upon my return to Washington, I found that Ruth Spaatz had already left for California.

Jacklyn and I send best wishes to you all and look forward to seeing you.

Sincerely.

C. P. Cabell Lieutenant General, USAF

cc: Ira



October 31, 1957

Dr. W. Classen Wehrkunde Muchen 2, Germany

Dear Dr. Classen:

Thank you very much for your letter of September 29 inviting me to write an article for your review.

I regret that I cannot comply with your request inasmuch as I cannot see my way clear to take on any other commitments.

Sincerely,

General Carl Speats

# WEHRKUNDE

# ORGAN DER GESELLSCHAFT FÜR WEHRKUNDE

Herausgeber:

Hans Reinhardt, Generaloberst a. D.; Vollrath v. Hellermann, Gen. Maj. a. D.; Eberhard Graf v. Nostitz, Oberst i. G. a. D Friedrich Ruge, Vize-Admiral; Josef Kammhuber, Generalleutnant

Schriftleitung: Professor Dr. Wilhelm Classen

MÜNCHEN 2, den 27.9.57

Die Schriffleitung

To: General C.A. Spaatz 9405 Oak Lane

Chevy Chase, Md.

Dear General:

It is with the greatest interest that I read - since years ago - your article on modern warfare, and I am wondering whether you would accept an invitation to write - some time - an article for our review WEHRKUNDE ("Military Science").

WEHRKUNDE is the official organ of the "Gesellschaft für Wehrkunde" ("Association for Military Science"). Although wholly independent, we are working in close cooperation with the German Ministry of Defense. Among the edit#ors of WEHRKUNDE are Generalleutnant Kammhuber, Chief of the German Air Forces, and Vice-Admiral Ruge, Chief of our Naval Forces. There are many American, French and English Officers who are contributors to our review. WEHRKUNDE is distributed in the whole world, especially in all member countries of NATO. Attached please find some copies of recent issues of our magazine.

There are primarily two sujets which I should like to suggest for writing on:

- 1) "The Future of Overseas-Bases". I am fully aware that you are rather sceptical as to the future military value of those bases, and it seems to me both useful and necessary to make our readers in Europe familiar with your arguments in regard to this problem.
- 2) "Cooperation between Air-Forces and Naval-Forces in long range operations". - I believe that no other nation was in a position to gather as much experiences in this field as you did during the Pacific War.

--2--

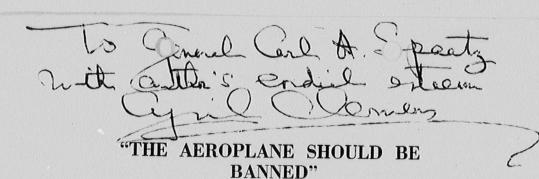
62 ) - 0,

But these of course are suggestions only, and naturally any other theme would be equally welcome.

Hoping to hear from you, dear General, and thanking you in advance for a reply, I am  $\,$ 

Yours respectfully

(Dr. W.Classen)
Redacteur in Chief



By CYPLL CLEMENS

OME years before the First World War, in 1911 to be exact, some noted English authors, fearing that the new fangled machine called the aeroplane would add a new horror to modern warfare if it went on being further developed, actually tried to have it banned. Winston Churchill, then First Lord of the Admiralty, had been attracting considerable attention to the aeroplane by using it to go to and fro from his office in London to his country home, narrowly escaping death on several occasions. Although the scheme was wholly impractical and chimerical, it called forth some stimulating and amusing (when viewed in the light of subsequent events) letters which can be read with interest and doubtless some profit even today.

It all started with John Galsworthy writing letters to *The Times* and *The Manchester Guardian* strongly urging that the manufacture and use of aeroplanes be forthwith stopped and forbidden under heavy penalty. He stated that if their development continued, they would surely be used by both sides in the first war that broke out, and that the conflict would thus become unbelievably cruel and barbarous. Galsworthy soon received a letter from the Secretary of the International Arbitration League asking if he thought a memorial would do any good. The novelist replied immediately that he felt a memorial signed by important people—other than politicians—and given wide circulation in the press of all countries, would help a great deal.

The novelist Thomas Hardy wrote from Max Gate under date of June 26th, 1911.

Dear Mr. Galsworthy:

I have been away in the north for eight days, no letters being forwarded; and yours came just after I started.

I write a hasty line to say that I will consider the draft protest you send about flying and war. Of course, I quite agree that these machines, if they are ever effectively constructed (which they are not at present), will make war worse than ever. But does not the appeal tacitly admit that war in other ways will have to go on? Now, I am one of the extremists about this, and think it is an insanity that people in the twentieth century should suppose force to be a moral argument.

Perhaps the addition after the first sentence of some words

### THE DALHOUSIE REVIEW

about "adding a new hideousness to the present hideousness of war" might remove the objection,

However, of late years I have almost despaired of civilization making any big step forward. Possibly in the year 4000 we shall be nearly as barbarous as we are now in beligerency, marriage, treatment of animals, etc. etc.

Sincerely yours

### THOMAS HARDY

Gilbert K. Chesterton wrote under date of July 1st, 1911, from his home "Top Meadow", Beaconsfield, not far from London:

Dear Mr. Galsworthy:

In clearing up old papers, it distresses me very much to find that (as far as I can make out) I have neglected to acknowledge an appeal from you—in connection with aeroplanes in war. I am horribly sorry; but I was born unbusinesslike, and my wild orders to an efficient secretary seem to make things worse. Please forgive me if you can. Frankly, I will not pretend that the delay has lost you a signature; for I doubt if I could have signed the paper. I am against all these attempts to attack war on its material outskirts. If you suddenly forbid some special weapon, the club or crossbow or culverin or whatnot, you enter the business so abruptly and at so irrational an angle that you are very likely to be helping the person who is in the wrong against the person who is in the right. In this case, for instance, to stop aeroplanes would simply be to help the Prussians against the French who have the best aeroplanes; and who surely require the sympathies of all who care for freedom and civilization as against a solemn barbarism.

Yours, in some haste,

### G. K. CHESTERTON

P.S. This brief note does not lessen my annoyance at having neglected you, whom I have to thank for many splendid strokes against the deceit and cruelty of our society.

The novelist Arnold Bennett wrote from Anon-Fontainebleau, where he was spending a French vacation, July 22, 1911: My dear Galsworthy:

My first instinct was to sign the thing on the strength of your recommendation. But on reflection I feel you would not like me to do this. My objection to signing it is that it is absolutely unpractical—in my opinion. All the European armies are busy in the air, and there is not the slightest chance of them abandoning

"THE A

the air. Why thing to bring of war. For r in any real figh against war in to me to be bot with me....

And last, b Shaw, who once "I am a thi I shall get unde constructive by "War brea per cent and pe

Dear Galsworthy

I can't sig I can't sig ing's suggestion this about "the biggest armies of idle propert warfare will not bullets have be express. It ma the newspapers with showers of

The really ment will make ble. Nations we the difficulty is North American

Meanwhile piffle.

Shaw's mod become really jo crowded cities' the First, World ban the atom bo

# EVIEW

present hideousness of

t despaired of civilizaibly in the year 4000 e now in belligerency,

#### HARDY

date of July 1st, 1911, onsfield, not far from

me very much to find lected to acknowledge haeroplanes in war. inesslike, and my wild things worse. Please pretend that the delay could have signed the to attack war on its some special weapon, you enter the business at you are very likely one against the person nee, to stop aeroplanes ainst the French who require the sympathies n as against a solemn

aste.

## STERTON

y annoyance at having many splendid strokes y.

from Anon-Fontainecation, July 22, 1911:

on the strength of your l you would not like is that it is absolutely pean armies are busy ce of them abandoning

### "THE AEROPLANE SHOULD BE BANNED."

the air. Why should they? On the contrary, really first-class horror caused by the use of air vessels might do more than anything to bring home to the public the extreme criminal stupidity of war. For me a war means the abandonment of all rules, as in any real fight when the blood is up. I would sign any protest against war in general, but to try to limit the field of war seems to me to be both impossible and against nature. Do not be angry with me.

Yours sincerely

### ARNOLD BENNETT

And last, but by no means least, comes the genial Bernard Shaw, who once wrote Cyril Clemens about war:

"I am a thinker, not a fighter. When the shooting begins I shall get under the bed, and not emerge until we come to real constructive business," and,

"War breaks out when interest on capital falls below 2 per cent and peace comes when it rises to 5 per cent."

London, July 14, 1911

Dear Galsworthy:

I can't sign that absurdity: I might as well revive Fielding's suggestion that armies should fight with their fists. All this about "the burden of armaments" is rubbish: the cost of the biggest armies at present is not worth counting beside the cost of idle property holding. We know perfectly well that aerial warfare will not be ruled out, any more than (virtually) explosive bullets have been ruled out, no matter what pious wishes we express. It may be horrible; but horror is the whole point of war; the newspapers will be really jolly when showers of shells alternate with showers of mangled aeronauts on crowded cities.

The really interesting question is how far the new development will make an international combination against war irresistible. Nations will not stop fighting until the police makes them: the difficulty is to organize and effectively arm your European-North American police, if you get it.

Meanwhile, "burdens of armaments," etc. etc. is all pious piffle.

#### Cordially

### G. BERNARD SHAW

Shaw's mock-serious prediction that "newspapers would become really jolly....with showers of mangled aeronauts on crowded cities" became only too true in the Second, if not in the First, World War. Let us hope that modern attempts to ban the atom bomb prove more successful.

August 5, 1957

Mr. Dwight Chapin 1109 Burrell Avenue Lewiston, Idaho

Dear Mr. Chapin:

Enclosed is the autographed picture which you requested in your letter of July 24th.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Enclosure

1109 Burrell Avenue Lewiston, Idaho July 24, 1957

Gen. Carl Spaatz, U.S.A.F. Ret'd. 1522 34th Street N.W. Washington, D.C.

Dear Sir:

I would appreciate it very much if you would autograph the enclosed card or a picture if you might have one and return it to me. I have an autograph collection and would very much like to add your name to it.

My collection contains 6,897 autographs including such military men as Douglas MacArthur, James Van Fleet, George Marshall, Jonathan Wainwright, Omar Bradley, William Halsey, Curtis LeMay, Richard Byrd Claire Chennault, Jimmy Doolittle, Lucius Clay, Eddie Rickenbacker, C. Turner Joy, W.H. Standley, Anthony McAuliffe, Ben Lear, Thomas Kincaid, Mark Clark, J. Leslie Kincaid, Robert Eichelberger, and Sgt. Alvin York.

I will be a sophomore at Idaho University next fall and have been collecting autographs for five years.

Jung M

Sincerely,

Dwight Chapin V

P.S. Thank you very much. The very best of luck ord good wishes always

July 23, 1957 July 23, 1957

Mr. Henry M. Wriston Executive Director The American Assembly Columbia University New York 27, N. Y.

Dear Mr. Wriston:

Thank you for your letter of July 15, and the copy of International Stability and Progress.

I shall be happy to receive a copy of the results of the Twelfth Assembly in the fall.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

The American Assembly COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

NEW YORK 27, NEW YORK

July 15, 1957

Dear General Spaatz:

It is a pleasure to send you the volume resulting from our Eleventh American Assembly, held at Arden House last May, INTERNATIONAL STABILITY AND PROGRESS: UNITED STATES INTERESTS AND INSTRUMENTS. This publication will be circulated widely and will be used as a basis for several regional Assemblies — in the South, Mid-West, and on the West Coast.

In October, the Twelfth Assembly will consider the various aspects of atomic energy. We shall be happy to send you the results of that conference also.

Sincerely

Henry M. Wriston

General Carl Spaatz 1522 34 Street, N. W. Washington 7, D. C. July 10, 1957

Captain Joseph C. Clifton U. S. Atlantic Fleet A. F. Navy No. 103 New York, New York

Dear Joe:

Thanks ever so much for your letter of June 30th enclosing the fishing license. I will certainly make an effort to get up there sometime during the season, particularly if Everett Cook will make the visit with me. Please thank Mr. Haynes, Deputy Minister of Resources, for arranging the fishing license for me.

I certainly enjoyed my visit with you and I am quite impressed with everything you are doing in your particular area.

Please give my best regards to your Chief Engineer (my fishing companion).

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

# COMMANDER AIRBORNE EARLY WARNING WING U.S. ATLANTIC FLEET

30 June 1957

Dear General:

I am enclosing a season fishing license for you. We had requested a license for you to fish up here the one day you were here, but as you can see, we have a license for the whole season. Therefore, I hope you can get back up here to pay us a visit during the salmon fishing season.

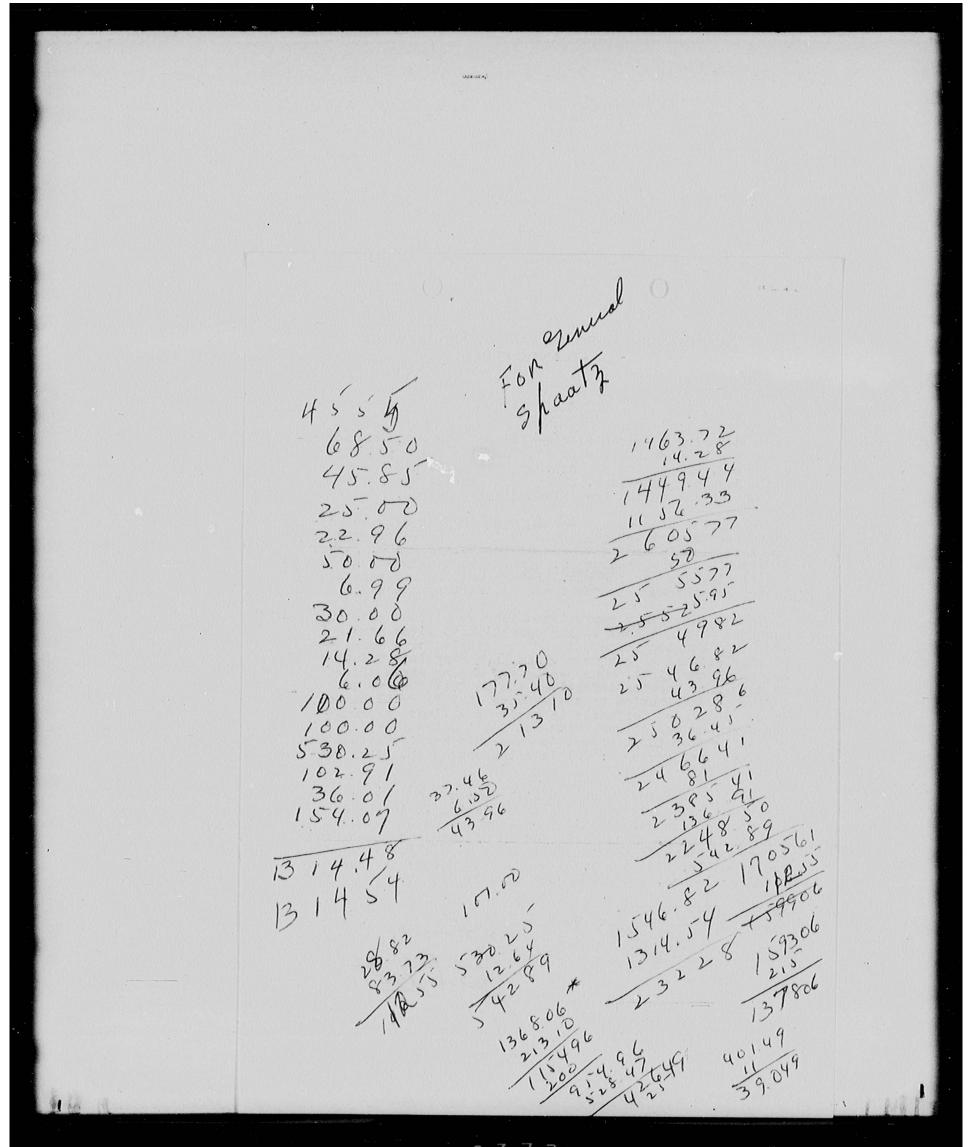
I saw Everett Cook when I was in Memphis last week and he seemed to be very interested in coming up here with you sometime around the first part of August. A Mr. W. Hayes, Deputy Minister of Resources, was the gentleman who arranged the fishing license for you. I have written him a personal letter and thanked him for the complimentary license.

My Command certainly appreciated your Committee coming up here and taking a look at our operation at first hand. It certainly boosted the morale of our people for a Committee of your stature to pay us a visit. We certainly gained a lot from your visit. Our people are making every effort to make this barrier effective, and we feel that we are making a contribution to the defense of this great nation of ours. I am most fortunate in having the finest group of officers and men to work with and I think that they are giving 100% of their effort to make this barrier effective. I depart here around 4:00 this afternoon on the first complete barrier flight.

General, I certainly hope you will come up and pay us a visit and get a little real salmon fishing in in the near future. If you will just let me know the dates that you want to come up, we can pick you up at Patuxent River as we have at least one or two flights a week between Pax River and Argentia. After all, since you now have this season fishing license, you might just as well use it.

My very best regards.

Most sincerely,



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526

July 2, 1957

Mr. Merian C. Cooper 1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California

Dear Coop:

Ruth and I are both overjoyed that Dick has finally made the Air Academy. I will be watching his career with the greatest interest.

I have visited the Academy twice since its opening as a member of the Board of Visitors and have been increasingly impressed with the institution.

Of course, Dick has gone through quite a bit in getting his wings as a Second Lieutenant in the Air Reserve. I hope that the repetition, etc., that he will run into in his first year as a plebe will not dampen his spirit. You, of course, know what the first year is like at any of the academies and I am sure you have enlightened him as to what he may expect. From my observation, the instruction in all of its aspects at the Air Academy is much better than that at either West Point or Annapolis.

Ruth joins me in love to Dorothy and yourself.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

MERIAN C. COOPER

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California June 25, 1957

Dear Jory:

Dick has finally made the Air Academy, and I am sure your letter of recommendation helped immensely.

He turned down West Point and Annapolis three years running in the hope of getting in the Air Academy. He has just received his wings as a Second Lieutenant in the Reserve after a year and a half of flying training, and now he will willingly give up his commission in the Reserve to be a Plebe at the Air Academy, for the Air Academy is his ambition and he has no regrets.

Dorothy and I are deeply grateful to you for your letter of recommendation, which I understand they kept on file at the Air Academy and referred to every year.

Love to Ruthie and you from Dorothy and me, and again thank you with all my heart.

Yours, as ever,

"Coop"

General Carl A. Spaatz 1654 Avon Place, N.W. Washington 7, D. C. June 12, 1957

Mr. Rex Cleveland Rexden Farm Randolph Center, Vermont

Dear Cleveland:

I am very glad to receive your letter of June 1 and I will be looking forward to seeing you at the dinner on June 24th.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

# REXDEN FARM

# RANDOLPH CENTER, VERMONT

R.M. CLEVELAND C. G. CLEVELAND

Registered Guernseys

June 1, 1957

General Carl Spaatz Newsweek Building Broadway and 42nd Street New York 36, New York

Dear General:

I certainly was much pleased to be invited to the testimonial dinner to Bernt Balchen on June 24th and wired an acceptance, as indicated in your telegram, to Charles Wilson at 51 Fifth Avenue.

It is fine that Bernt, who is one of my favorite people, is going to be honored and he surely deserves all that a grateful country can give him.

Looking forward to seeing you and other old friends on this occasion and with renewed thanks, I am

Yours sincerely,

Rex Cleveland

June 12, 1957

Mr. Gerald L. Colvin, Manager National Aviation Club Sheraton-Carlton Hotel 16th and K Streets, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.

Dear Colvin:

Thanks for your letter of June 7 with the enclosed messages.

Mrs. Spaatz and myself enjoyed thoroughly the nice party you gave for us last week.

I hope to see you from time to time at the Club.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz



# NATIONAL AVIATION CLUB

SHERATON-CARLTON HOTEL

16TH AND K STREETS, N.W., WASHINGTON 6, D. C.
TELEPHONE: STERLING 3-3297

June 7, 1957

General Carl A. Spaatz 7405 Oak Lane Chevy Chase, Md.

Dear General Spaatz:

I am enclosing herewith a cable addressed to Mr. Thomas Sim that I know will be of interest to you. Unfortunately, the second page of the message did not arrive until after you had departed last evening.

It was a great pleasure having you and Mrs. Spaatz with us and I trust that you will find many opportunities to visit us in the future.

Sincerely yours,

Gerald L. Colvin, Mgr.

Flat The Within

COUNCIL ON FOREIGN RELATIONS, INC.
THE HAROLD PRATT HOUSE 58 EAST 68TH STREET
NEW YORK 21, N. Y.

September 4, 1956

Dear General Spaatz:

A number of members have expressed the hope that the Council might hold smaller, more intimate meetings more frequently than has been possible in the past. The Council is planning, therefore, a number of such special meetings, beginning this Fall.

In order to make certain that you will be invited as often as possible to attend such meetings, we would appreciate very much your completing the enclosed questionnaire, thus bringing our records up to date.

Sincerely yours,

Melvin Conant, ACTING DIRECTOR OF MEETINGS

General Carl Spaatz 1654 Avon Flace, N. W. Washington 7, D. C.

Enclosure: 1

September 4, 1956

Major General Eugene M. Caffey The Judge Advocate General Department of the Army Washington 25, D. C.

Dear General Caffey:

I appreciate very much your letter of August 17 acknowledging receipt of my memorandum with reference to the application of Private Bennett Crain, Jr., for appointment in The Judge Advocate General's Corps.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz



#### DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY OFFICE OF THE JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

17 August 1956

General Carl Spaatz, USAF Retired 1229 National Press Building Washington 4, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

This is in reference to your memorandum of 14 August 1956 wherein you express interest in the application of Private Bennett Crain, Jr. for appointment in The Judge Advocate General's Corps.

Private Crain has been in communication with my Career Management Office and it is anticipated that his application will be received in the near future. In accordance with your request your memorandum will be retained in my office and attached to Private Crain's application upon its receipt.

Your interest in seeing that I obtain qualified personnel for service in my Corps is appreciated.

Sincerely yours,

EUGENE M. CAFFEY Major General, USA

The Judge Advocate General

Department of the Army.

JAGC

17 August 1956

General Carl Spaatz, USAF Retired 1229 National Press Building Washington 4, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

This is in reference to your memorandum of 14 August 1956 wherein you express interest in the application of Private Bennett Crain, Jr. for appointment in The Judge Advocate General's Corps.

Private Crain has been in communication with my Career Management Office and it is anticipated that his application will be received in the near future. In accordance with your request your memorandum will be retained in my office and attached to Private Crain's application upon its receipt.

Your interest in seeing that I obtain qualified personnel for service in my Corps is appreciated.

Sincerely yours,

Signed

EUGENE M. CAFFEY Major General, USA The Judge Advocate General



Memorandum to: The Judge Advocate General, Major General Eugene M. Caffey Department of the Army, Washington 25, D. C.

From: General Carl Spaatz, USAF Retired

Subject: Letter of recommendation for Private Bennett Crain, Jr., Hq. & Hq. Det., Spec. Trops., (9301), Aberdeen Proving Ground, Md.

Date: August 14, 1956

I understand that Private Bennett Crain, Jr. is applying for a reserve commission in the Judge Advocate General's Corps.

I have known Bennett Crain for many years. He is of a very fine Maryland family and a graduate of the University of Virginia Law School.

He is presently stationed at Aberdeen Proving Ground, Hq. & Hq. Det., Spec. Trps., (9301).

Private Crain is a very serious-minded, thoroughly intelligent young man and I have no hesitation in recommending him to you for fullest consideration of his application.

I request that my letter be made a part of his application record.

Sincerely,

Hq. & Hq. Det., Spec. Trps., (9301), Aberdeen Proving Ground, Md. 6 August 56.

Gen. Carl Spaatz, 1654 Avon Pl., N. W., Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

It was very pleasant seeing you all again Saturday at Happy's wedding. I hope that this letter reaches you before you and Mrs. Spaatz set out on another trip.

As I mentioned in my conversation with you before the wedding, the Army is reopening their program whereby it is possible to apply for a direct reserve commission in the Judge Advocate General Corps. I have decided to do so as soon as I can organize all my records and send them in.

A letter of recommendation from you would do much to aid me in this project. It should be addressed, as you know, to the Judge Advocate General, Department of the Army, Washington 25, D. C. I will leave it up to you to decide if it would carry more weight if sent directly to them, or if forwarded to me to be attached to my application. In either event I can assure you in advance that I am most appreciative of your interest in this matter which is very important to me.

Marhorie joins me in sending best regards to both you and Mrs. Spaatz.

Sincerely yours,

Bennett Crain, Jr. Pvt., US 52390895

April 3, 1956

Mr. Ben H. Cooper 2701 Wilson Boulevard Arlington, Virginia

Dear Cooper:

I have your letter of March 26.
I will be able to attend the meeting of the Directors on Monday or Tuesday, April 9 and 10. Wednesday I am leaving for Colorado and will be gone a week. Please let me know when the meeting will be held.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz



March 26, 1956

General Carl A. Spaatz 1654 Avon Place, N. W. Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

It is indeed a pleasure to welcome you and Mrs. Spaatz as Stockholders of Cooper-Trent Blueprint & Microfilm Corporation. I look forward to a long and pleasant association.

A special meeting of the new Board of Directors is being planned for the second week in April, to be held at eight p.m. in the company office. Please give us a choice of dates that would be most convenient to you so that we may plan accordingly. Your presence at this meeting is very important for we shall discuss some very excellent prospects as well as acquaint you with our complete operation.

inclosed are your stock certificates. Please receipt and return the stubs for our records. A return envelope is enclosed for your convenience.

Sincerely,

Cooper-Trent Blueprint & Microfilm Corp.

Ben H. Cooper President

BHC/ab

"REPRODUCTIONS BY ALL PROCESSES"

March 27, 1956

Mr. Richard W. Clough Vice President Second Air Division Association 802 Philadelphia Pike Wilmington 3, Delaware

Dear Clough:

Thanks ever so much for your nice letter of March 20. In the event that I can be present August 17 to 19 at your meeting in Chicago I shall certainly drop in to see you. However, my present plans would indicate that I will be on the West Coast at that time.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spasts

# SECOND AIR DIVISION ASSOCIATION

Richard W. Clough, Vice President 802 Philadelphia Pike Wilmington 3, Delaware

SYcamore 8-1284

March 20, 1956

General Carl Spaatz, U.S.A.F., Ret. c/o Newsweek Newsweek Building 42nd & Broadway New York 36, N.Y.

Dear General Spaatz:

Recently, Newsweek published an article in which you recommended that we beat the Russians in the ICBM race, and also accelerate the build-up of the B-52 fleet.

The Second Air Division Association does heartily concur with you on this stand. It was air power that paved the way for victory in the past and we must count heavily on it in the future!

The Second Air Division Association commends you for your stand.

The Association is holding its annual reunion in Chicago, Ill., on August 17-18-19 at the Hotel Congress. If you happen to be in Chicago at that time, we would be deeply honored to have you stop in to say, "Hello!"

Sincerely yours,

Richard W. Clough Richard W. Clough

Vice President

rwc; vb

March 27, 1956

Mr. Leo A. Codd American Ordnance Association Mills Building Washington 6, D. C.

Dear Codd:

Receipt is acknowledged of your letter of March 23. I regret very much that my schedule will not permit me to be in New York City on April 4 to meet with General Hollis.

I regret this very much as I would have enjoyed being with the other members of the board and General Hollis on this occasion.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats



# AMERICAN ORDNANCE ASSOCIATION

MILLS BUILDING, WASHINGTON 6, D.C.

A MEMBERSHIP SOCIETY of AMERICAN CITIZENS DEDICATED to INDUSTRIAL PREPAREDNESS for THE NATIONAL DEFENSE of the UNITED STATES

LEO A. CODD

EXECUTIVE VICE PRESIDENT

March 23, 1956

General Carl A. Spaatz 1654 Avon Place Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

As you may know, the Industrial College of the Armed Forces and its Commandant and staff will be the recipients of honors at a dinner to be held in New York City on the evening of Wednesday, April 4, at the Sheraton-Astor Hotel. Today, while visiting General Hollis, Commandant of the College, I suggested that this date might be a convenient one for him to meet also with the members of his Board of Advisers, when he could describe for them briefly the present status and future needs of his important institution.

Accordingly, and with General Hollis' approval, I am inviting the members of the Board who can conveniently attend to meet with the General at 4:30 p.m. at the University Club, One West 54th Street, New York. The gathering will be entirely informal, and will adjourn at about 6:00 so as not to interfere with any plans you may have for the evening.

I do hope the time and place for this informal meeting of the Board will be convenient for you. It may be that there are areas wherein we of the Board can be of assistance in the work at the College and its continued success.

Looking forward to the pleasure of your company,

Iam

Leo A. Codd

pc

March 13, 1956

Mr. Benjamin F. Castle 1145 - 19th St., N. W. Washington 16, D. C.

Dear Ben:

I am returning the article on the Sopwith Camel which Leigh Wade forwarded to me.

I flew a Camel several times while visiting a British squadron at the front. It was very tricky and quite difficult compared to the SE 5.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

Mar 6. 5%.
Mar General:

This is most interesting.

Think either the air Force

BENJAMIN F. CASTLE
+025-EMBERREETH\*\*\* 1145 19th St., N.W.
WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

March 8, 1956

Dear Twoey:

I think the enclosed article from True Magazine regarding a Sopwith Camel which has been restored to flying condition will be of interest to you. I never flew a Sopwith Camel but I did fly the SE 5 which was a honey to fly. Of course the old DH 4 was very familiar to me in my flying days.

Please return the article when you have read it.

Sincerely yours,

Benjamin F. Castle

General Twoey Spaatz 1654 Avon Place, N.W. Washington, D. C.

\* Leigh Wade has sent it to you.

March 6, 1956

Mr. Charles H. Campbell British Information Services \$33 National Press Building Washington 4, D. C.

Dear Campbell:

Thank you very much for the invitation to attend a showing of British Films on Friday, March 9th. I will try to be there if at all possible. However, my schedule is very much involved at this time.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spastz

Mr. G. D'Arey Edmondson

Director-General of British Information Services
requests the pleasure of your company
at a showing of
BRITISH FILMS
at the Department of Interior Auditorium
C Street between 18th & 19th, N. W.,
Friday, March 9th, 1956, at 8:30 p. m.

R. S. V. P.
BRITISH EMBASSY
HOBART 2-1340, EXT. 20

THIS INVITATION ADMITS TWO

Presentation
by the British Ambassador
of Certificates awarded to United States
Covernment Departments who participated in
the Ninth International Edinburgh Festival
August 21 = September 10, 1955

# FESTIVAL IN EDINBURGH

A colourful kaleidoscope of the many pleasures which the Edinburgh Festival has to offer its visitors.

### TENNESSEE VENTURE

Tells the story of the Bowater Paper Corporation's enormous Calhoun Mill enterprise in the United States, an Anglo-American operation whose human and technical aspects are presented.

intermission

## CALDER HALL

A record of the building of Calder Hall atomic power station, from its inception to the summer of 1955. The station is scheduled for completion in 1956, and the film covers about three-quarters of its construction.

### FARNBOROUGH FLYPAST

The annual display of the Society of British Aircraft Constructors at Farnborough.



903 NATIONAL PRESS BLDG. TEL. EXECUTIVE 8525

March 1st, 1956

With the compliments of

Charles H. Campbell

British Information Services
Washington 4, D. C.

There is one film at least of interest to you. Mope to see you there.

General Carl Spaatz, Newsweek, 1227 National Press Fldg., Washington, D.C. BENJAMIN F. CASTLE

1026-EYE-STREET, N.W. 1145 19th St., N.W.

WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

February 24, 1956

Dear Twoey:

I was sorry not to be in my office when you telephoned to tell me that Henri-Chappelle Cemetary will not be dedicated this year, and that General Patton is buried at Luxembourg. I very much appreciate your though fulness.

If Henri-Chappelle is to be dedicated in 1957 I believe my wife and I will go over there for the ceremony.

Cordially yours,

Benjamin F. Castle

General Twoey Spastz U. S. A. F., Retired 1654 Avon Place, N. W. Washington, D. C. TEXESTER Day letter to:

John Carruth 241 Claywell Drive San Antonio 9, Texas

Received your letter of February 20 after an absence from Washington. Apparently it is too late to reach the deadline with a letter. I am looking forward to the next issue of Assembly and hope you will have a complete roundup of all the class. Have been out of Washington most of the last year travelling about Europe and the United States but have seen very few classmates. Spent sometime with John Markoe and George Stratemeyer. Occasionally run into those in the vicinity of Washington when I am here for a class dinner. All of my family are well but widely scattered. Sincerely.

Toohey Spaatz

Charge to Newsweek

241 Claywell Drive San Antonio 9, Texas February 20, 1956

Dear Classmate.

We are having a "round-up" of 1914 for our letter in the next issue of "Assembly". The dead-line for sending in the class letter is March 10.

So, as soon as you receive this please send me some news of yourself and your family - what you are doing, trips you have made, classmates you have seen, etc.

Remember, this is for publication, so brevity is important, but include all the items our classmates will want to know.

I know you will cooperate.

Thanks.

John Carruth

# Some Highlights of Charles DeForest Chandler

Charles DeForest Chandler's interest in aviation began with balloons. The Signal Corps began experimenting with balloons in 1892. Their first balloon was a part of the first aeronautical unit. In 1905 the Aero Club of America was formed. Early free flight associations under the auspices of this organization were made at West Point and Captain Chandler who was one of two men designated to represent the War Department was a passenger in the balloon Centaur when it made a demonstration flight from Pittsfield, Massachusetts, to Bennington, Vermont. Soon after the initial association Chandler became a member of the Aero Club. As a private organization, it was very helpful to the United States Government in the early days of aviation. Chandler's report so stimulated the War Department's interest that it ordered its first free flight balloons in 1905.

The very next year a lieutenant from the Signal Corps won the first International Gordon Bennett Balloon race for the United States. That incident seems to have been the incident which lead to the organization of the Aeronautical Division in the Signal Corps, which was activated by OC Sig Office Memo No. 6, dated 1 August 1907, and which detailed Captain Charles Chandler as its first chief. His staff at that time consisted of two men, Corporal Edward Ward and Corporal First Class Joseph E. Barrett. One of its first projects was to design an aerial glider to be towed by an automobile. These two men were assisted by the Aero Club.

In 1907 the second International Balloon Race was held in St.

Louis and the entire Aeronautical Division of the Signal Corps (10 men)

was sent to St. Louis. The balloon America in which Chandler rode as
an aid won fourth place.

Meanwhile the War Department Board of Ordnance and Fortification had authorized the Signal Corps to spend \$25 thousand to add a dirigible but in December of that year Wilbur Wright appeared before the Board to argue for the Wright Brothers' invention of a flying machine. The Board was impressed and authorized the chief signal officer to draw up specifications. Captain Chandler as Chief of the Aeronautical Division actually drew the specifications. It was he who was responsible for the Army's first airplane specifications. But the Board did not authorize the money for the Wright machine and in an attempt to get the funds, Chandler and the Chief Signal Officer who was General Allen and another Signal Corps Lieutenant, Frederic Lahm, called on President Theodore Roosevelt and succeeded in getting his promise to use a special fund which had been allotted to him for use in the war with Spain and which he never used. Roosevelt agreed to give them this money for the Wright plane, but actually it wasn't necessary to use it because by the time that the money had to be spent a new appropriation had been granted.

During 1908-1909 while the trials of the Wright plane were being held at Ft. Meyer, Chandler was a member of a special 5-man aeronautical board which had to pass on the merits of the plane and would accept it.

In the Fall of 1909 the Army's first flying school was opened at College Park, Maryland, and Captain Chandler became the first commander of the new school. He had been relieved as chief of the Aeronautical Division the year before. Chandler was taught to fly soon after that by none other than "Hap" Agnold. Arnold had himself learned to fly at the Wright Company's flying school in Dayton, Ohio.

The first flying school at College Park could only fly during the summer because of weather conditions so they always went to Augusta, Georgia, where they continued flying during the winter.

In February of 1912 because of tense relations with Mexico the Omaha group was ordered to Galveston, Texas, for the first aviation field duty. It was organized as the first professional aero squadron and commanded by Captain Chandler. He served with a division of ground troops.

In 1911 this same Lt. Lahm had been sent to the Philippines to Ft. William McKinley to establish a new flying school. In 1913 Captain Chandler went out to Manila for a tour of foreign service. Some documents say that was the first tour of foreign duty for an officer.

In 1908 before the first airplane had been delivered, Chandler and Lahm made several free balloon flights to test air-ground communications. At Ft. Omaha in 1910 Chandler tested the first portable radio receiving set in an airplane.

In the Spring of 1912 Chandler undertook the first test use of armament in an airplane.

Chandler made the first night flight in an airplane by accident. In June of 1912 in College Park he flew to Annapolis to attend an Army-Navy baseball game. In the late afternoon when he was ready to take off, engine trouble developed and a complete set of ignition wires had to be installed from Navy spare parts. Chandler thought he could make the 18-minute flight back before dark but he encountered a strong head wind. There being no place to make an emergency landing, flying without a map and soon in total darkness, he took bearings from signal lights along the railroad which he followed into College Park. Mechanics of his ground crew threw oil on the field and set fire to it thereby improvising light so Chandler could make a safe landing.

Chandler served in World War II as an aviator in France.

SOURCE: Army Signal Corps Historical Division

4

Chandler qualified as a balloon pilot in 1907, an air-ship pilot in 1907, an airplane pilot in 1911 and a military advisor War Department 1912, and was an expert aviator, Aero Club of America 1912. The following is the document setting up the Aeronautical Division with Chandler in charge:

WAR DEPARTMENT

Office of the Chief Signal Officer

Washington

August 1, 1907

OFFICE MEMORANDUM

An Aeronautical Division of this office is hereby established to take effect this date.

This Division will have charge of all matters pertaining to military ballooning, air machines, and all kindred subjects. All data on hand will be carefully classified and plans perfected for future tests and experiments. The operations of this Division are strictly confidential, and no information will be given out to any party except through the Chief Signal Officer of the Army or his authorized representative.

Captain Charles deF. Chandler, Signal Corps, is detailed in charge of this Division, and Corporal Edward Ward and First-Class Private Joseph E. Barrett will report to Captain Chandler for duty in this Division under his immediate direction.

JAMES ALLEN
Brigadier General
Chief Signal Officer of the Army

The first and for some time the only civilian clerical employee assigned to the Aeronautical Division of the Signal Office was Mrs. Eleanor Relyea. She continued to serve with the aeronautics branch throughout its various expansions and varied reorganizations until her retirement from the Government Civil Service on June 1, 1935.

A Balloon Detachment in the Signal Corps was organized in May 1902 at Fort Myer, Virginia with Lieutenant A. T. Clifton in charge. In the summer of 1905, Chandler went to Europe on leave of absence. While in London, he was shown British balloon facilities, including the plant for the production of hydrogen. He made notes as to the equipment and manufacturer which proved useful two years later when equipment was ordered for the Signal Corps balloon station at Fort Cmaha.

In October 1906 on invitation from the Aero Club which had become interested in ballooning, Captain Chandler represented the War Department in a balloon demonstration in Pittsfield, Massachusetts. Chandler was a passenger in the balloon which made an uneventful descent in Vermont covering a distance of 40 miles at an altitude of 6800 feet. After this, Chandler became a member of the Aero Club.

Captain Chandler participated in the second Gordon Bennett Balloon Race in 1907.

The contract for the large varnished cotton balloon of 76,000 cubic feet, acquired and given an official trial from Washington, D. C. on June 4, 1907. Captain Chandler was government observer. After a 4-1/4 hour flight ending at Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, it was officially accepted.

The Aero Club Aeronautical Division was organized on August 1, 1907 (see above).

During the early spring of 1908, while the dirigible balloon and airplane for which contracts had been made were under construction, free balloon ascensions from the Washington gas works occupied part of the time of Captain Chandler and Lieutenant Lahm of the Aeronautical Division. On April 17, Lahm took White House Aide Lt. Thomas E. Selfridge for a flight. Selfridge was killed in the Wright plane just five months later. On April 22, Capt. Chandler was pilot carrying Theodore Roosevelt, Jr., son of the President, and Capt. Lee, Aide to the President, as passengers. They departed from Washington at 1:00 o'clock and landed at 5:15 p.m. near Delaware City, Delaware.

On May 13, Lahm picked up two Signal Corps officers for the purpose of an experiment. The outside of the balloon basket was covered by chicken wire and a 300 foot antenna wire was suspended below. At altitudes from 300 to 3000 feet, radio messages were received from ground stations from Washington Navy Yard and at Annapolis. Subsequent ascensions was done with photography.

In the spring of 1908, Chandler was ordered to Fort Omaha to take charge of the completion of buildings for the hydrogen generating plant. Lt. Lahm was assigned in charge of the Aeronautical Division.

By the summer of 1908, the Chief Signal Corps officer reported a total of three officers, Chandler, Lahm & Selfridge,

and 10 enlisted men regularly assigned to aeronautical duty.

In October 1911, Chandler piloted several flights of
Dirigible No. 1 at Fort Omaha.

Chandler was appointed on the Board for the purchase of the Wright airplane.

Chandler along with Lahm accompanied Gen. Allen in their call on President Roosevelt to request approval for the third airplane. Both Chandler and Lahm accompanied Gen. Allen for the purpose of answering any technical questions that President Roosevelt might have asked. The interview was brief and the President expressed confidence in the future of aeronautics and signed his approval.

In October 1909 during Government tests, Chandler who was a member of the Aeronautical Board was a passenger with Wilbur Wright for a flight of 6-1/2 minutes.

During 1910 and 1911, Chandler carried on at Fort Omaha with balloons and Dirigible No. 1.

Chandler, who had just spent a year at a Service School as a student at Fort Leavenworth, reported at College Park as Commanding Officer on June 20, 1911. In addition to serving as Commandant of the flying school at College Park, Chandler was assigned to take charge of the Aeronautical Division in the office of the Chief Signal Officer in Washington. Both obligations, miles apart, could be fulfilled only because it

was customary to fly with the low-powered airplanes of that era, early in the morning and late in the afternoon when the wind velocity usually was much less than during the middle of the day. The first new type airplane to arrive at College Park was the Wright Type B, flown in April by Lieutenant Foulois. The two trained pilots, Lieutenants Arnold and Milling recently arrived from the Wright School at Dayton, were assigned to instruct Captain Chandler and Lieutenant Kirtland. When Chandler qualified as aviation pilot, the Aero Club appointed him as their representative to observe and report qualifications of officer candidates.

In July 1911, the officer personnel of the College Park school consisted only of Captains Chandler and Beck, Lieutenants Kirtland, Arnold and Milling.

To demonstrate their military value, two airplanes were flown from College Park school to Fort Myer, Virginia,

August 7, 1911. As cross-country flights were so infrequent,
much publicity resulted. Large numbers of visitors collected
at both terminal points and many spectators watched from
the streets and parks of Washington. Capt. Beck, piloting a
signle-seater Curtiss machine, was the first to cross the
city. Upon advice by telephone of his safe arrival at Fort
Myer, Capt. Chandler and Lt. Arnold took off in the Type B
Wright airplane. Just before they reached Fort Myer, Capt.
Beck began the return flight so that the two Army planes

passed in the air - an item of unusual public interest. The city of Washington was crossed at an altitude of about 3000 feet by both airplanes in both directions to insure gliding to open spaces in the event of engine failure, all too common during the pioneering years of aviation. To test the glide of the Wright machine on the return flight to College Park, Arnold cut the engine at 3000 feet while over Hyattsville and made a successful "dead stick" landing.

In the summer of 1911, Lt. Arnold with Chandler as co-pilot, left Washington in a Burgess-Wright airplane, departed near Frederick, Md. and flew to Camp Ordway covering 42 miles without unusual incident. This was the first long cooss-country flight.

Lt. Arnold had his pupil, Chandler, flying alone before the cross-country flight to Frederick, but additional instruction had been arranged with the Wright Company both in piloting and in seeing first-hand, the manufacture of airplanes. Capt. Chandler was on temporary duty at Dayton, Ohio for two weeks during August and September. The forenoons were spent at the Wright Company factory observing construction and assembly methods, the far afternoons at the Simms Station Field for flights with Orville Wright. The Wright Company had 60 employees in the engine and airplane departments.

A maneuver in advanced piloting technique consisted of using the elevator for making turns instead of the vertical

rudder after the banking inclination had progressed beyond 45 degrees. Orville Wright taught Chandler this maneuver and impressed upon him by advice and demonstrations, the paramount importance of maintaining ample forward velocity in order to prevent stalling. Riding on the electric car line between Dayton and Simms Station and waiting for favorable weather at the field, afforded many opportunities for Orville Wright to explain to Chandler the causes of airplane accidents and the ways in which obscure difficulties had been overcome.

The latitude of College Park was not suitable for winter flying in the low-powered biplane type of 1911 model airplanes. In November, Chandler was sent to inspect sites in the Southern Satates.

The personnel and equipment of the aviation school departed from College Park by special train of nine cars in the afternoon of November 28, arriving in Augusta the following day. All four airplanes were taken from College Park, as well as the motor vehicles, wagons, horses and mules. With the special train were Capt Chandler, Lts. Arnold, Kirtland, Milling and the Medical Officer Kelley. In December, the mayor of Augusta welcomed the Army officers of the flying school with an old-fashioned southern barbecue.

In the month of May 1912, the Aero Club of America conducted an Aeronattic Exposition. The War Department sent

Capt. Chandler and Lts. Arnold, Milling, Kennedy and Geiger to New York during this Exposition. The Army pilots were guests of honor and lectures on military aeronautics in the afternoon and evening were conducted by Capt. Chandler.

Chandler and Lt. Milling as pilot conducted an experiment at College Park for the use of the famous Lewis gun which was air-cooled, weighed 25 pounds, 6 ounces, and fired the Army standard rifle ammunition. It was loaded with 50 cartridges and could be adjusted per rate of fire between 300 and 700 shots a minute. For the test at College Park, the rate was set at 500 shots a minute, sufficient to empty the drum in 6 seconds. There were no sights on this first sample gun. Chandler rested the muzzle of the gun on the cross-bar where the pilot and passenger placed their feet. The firing was to be done only a short distance from the hangars at a low altitude for safety reasons. The target was a strip of cheesecloth about 6 feet by 7 feet in size which would be passed over in one-tenth of a second. Milling flew over the target at a altitude of 250 feet. The target showed 5 direct hits and a hole a short distance in front of the cloth. The hits could not be seen from the airplane so after firing at the ground target, Milling continued over the fishponds where Chandler fired a burst of shots to observe the spacing of the bullets by the splashes in the water. This unscheduled firing game caused the inventor Lewis considerable concern

as he assumed that Chandler had accidentally pulled the trigger and might do sc again as the airplane circled over the observers in front of the hangars.

The next day, a better target was provided, a strip of cotton cloth 2 yards in width by 18 yards in length. The altitude was increased to 550 feet. Out of a total of 44 shots fired, 14 bullet holes were found in the cloth.

The first night flying at College Park was not preafranged. The afternoon of June 1, 1912 was the day of the annual baseball game between teams from the Military and Naval Academies to be played at Annapolis. The Navy pilots had invited the Army pilots to fly over to witness the game. For some reaons, the other officers could not go and Chandler felt that Army aviation representation was expected and he made the flight alone. With the assistance of a tail wind, the air-line distance to Annapolis was accomplished in 18 minutes and a landing made on the main parade ground. Prior to the return trip late in the afternoon, engine trouble was noted and after repairs the sun had set and twilight was fading, but Chandler thought that he could make College Park before total darkness. Tail wind at the start persisted only a few miles inland; then a head wind was encountered, which forced the machine up to 2000 feet and then quickly down almost to the ground. A safe landing was impossible. Without benefit of a map, Chandler continued

in the general direction of the home port until the signal lights of the B&O Railroad came in sign which he followed southward to College Park. The waiting mechanics heard the motor and saw the flashes from the engine exhaust in the dark. They immediately threw oil and gasoline out on the field and ignited it. This furnished an excellent means of determining the distance to the ground so that the machine was landed without damage.

Chandler, Arnold and Milling were sent to Chicago for the Gordon Bennett Avaiation Trophy meet so that they might increase their knowledge by seeing the latest foreign airplanes and by meeting the foremost European pilots. Chandler was Official Starter for the Gordon Bennett airplane speed competition. At this meet, a French pilot established a new world speed record of 105.1 miles an hour.

Capt. Chandler conducted the tests for the new Expert Aviator Certificate for Glenn L. Martin.

The first competition for the Mackay Trophy was held October 9, 1912. Chandler was one member of the Board of Judges. Arnold was declared the winner.

In June 1913, Chandler arrived at Manila for a tour of foreign service in the office of the Department Signal Officer.

In addition to his other duties, he was placed on flying status and continued in practice by frequent flights at the Fort William McKinley field until the rainy season.

February 17, 1956

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor, Mark Twain Journal Krikwood 22, Missouri

### Dear Clemens:

In reply to your letter of January 20 with the enclosed clipping, I am sure that I can add nothing to the discussion about space ships, flying saucers, etc. My own fixed idea is that the human mind can imagine anything and that all of the so-called sightings are either imagination or some simple thing imagined into something else.

Sincerely,

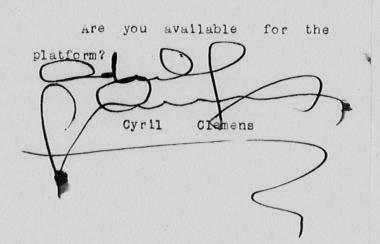
General Carl Spaatz

CYRIL CLEMENS, Editor
ARK TWAIN JOURNAL
KIRKWOOD 22, MISSOURI

20th January 1956

Dear General Spaatz

The enclosed cutting has been called to our attention. Would you say that the facts are correctly quoted? Any further light you could throw on the matterwould be much appreciated.



TRIL CLEMENS, Editor MARK TWAIN JOURNAL KIRKWL 2, MISSOURE

# Some in Air Force Said to Feel 'Saucers' Were Space Ships

Ex-Investigator Writes in Book That 'Abnormal Radiations' Accompanied Sightings of Objects in Sky.

By VERN HAUGLAND
WASHINGTON, Jan. 19 (AP)
—A new book on flying saucers says some atomic scientists have detected "ahonomal radiations" at the times and in the areas of the sighting of unidentified objects in the sky. It says there is no proof the phenomena are connected.

The author, former Air Force Capt. Ed.

Ruppelt also says in the book that:

1. A panel of scientists in January 1953 rejected an unofficial Air Force analysis, prepared by a staff headed by Maj. Dewey Fournet, that UFOs were interplanetary space ships. Ruppelt said the space ship conclusion was supported by some Air Force officers "at command levels just a notch below" Maj. Gen. John A. Samford, at that time Air Force director of intelligence.

2. There have been no reports measuring the speed or alititude of a UFO, no reliable photographs showing any details of a UFO, no "hardware," declined to make the Fournet report public.

\*\*PAPER FIRM MAKES REBATE\*\*

TORONTO, Jan. 19 (AP) — The Abitibi Puly and Paper Co. said yesterday it is refunding difference between its newsprint price increase announced later. The company first announced later a lowered it to \$4 a ton. Any customer who purchased paper at the \$5 increase price gets the rebate, a company official said.

areas or the signting of unidentified objects in the sky. It says there is no proof the phenomena are connected.

The author, former Air Force Capt. Edward J. Ruppelt, was for two years chief of the Air Force project for investigation of flying saucer reports.

He says that the data which he. gathered on the radiation reports was rejected by the Air Force as containing not enough conclusive evidence."

Now Research Engineer.
Ruppelt, now a research engineer for Northrop Aircraft, Los Angeles, says he coined the term UFO for flying saucers—unidentified flying objects.

"No one could explain the sudden bursts of radiation, but there was no proof that they were associated with UFO's," Ruppelt says in "The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects," Ruppelt also says in the book that:

1. A panel of scientists in January 1953 rejected an unof-

December 16, 1955

Mr. Charles Curry DeWitt, Arkansas

Dear Charles:

As usual, you made the annual shoot at DeWitt a wonderful occasion. I enjoyed thoroughly seeing you again and shooting with you and Skippy.

Mrs. Spaatz joins me in best wishes for a Merry Christmas and a Happy New Year to Mrs. Curry and yourself.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

Transportation people told me that the foint chiefs of Staff are responsible for directures about who can thouse or space available brain. If the opportunity affers will you suggest they include members of the faculty of the service academies. Very few are morehard buil! I want to a chance for termidous boost to morale. Purposer Ements is a chance for termidous boost to morale. Purposer Ements at Naval academy couldn't make try to attend a meeting.

July 7, 1955

Mr. Merian C. Cooper 1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California

Dear Coops

Ruth and I have just returned from two months of travelling in Europe. Your nice letter of May 27th awaited me upon my arrival home. I am very sorry that Dick did not make the first class at the Air Academy but I hope he continues his efforts and gets in next year.

We expect to be in Denver July 12th for the formal opening.

Ruth joins me in sending love to both of you.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spasts

MERIAN C. COOPER

1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California May 27, 1955

Den Jang:

Thank you more than I can say for everything you did to help Dick in his attempt to get into the Air Academy. He was in the running right up to the end, and it wasn't until a few days ago that we definitely heard that he wasn't going to make it. Dick was in the top ten percent, and the competition was almost unbelievably stiff. There were thousands of applicants, and out of that number only three hundred could be admitted.

Needless to say, Dick is terribly disappointed, and so are we. But we are also very proud of him because, even if he didn't get in this year, he did extremely well in all of his examinations.

Thanks again for your wonderful letter on Dick's behalf.

With best regards,

Cordially,

Merian C. Cooper

General Carl A. Spaatz 1654 Avon Place, N.W. Washington 7, D. C. Leo Cherne Executive Director



Here are the Research Institute's conclusions about what the next ten years may bring for American business.

We have been compelled to take issue with some of the more optimistic projections by public and private economists.

Yet we find the prospects heartening. And I personally believe you will find in this report a challenge to American energy and ingenuity.

Lo Chem



Membership file: 13

# Your Business In An Expanding Economy

Businessmen are hearing more and more about long-range projections of today's economic trends. Why are these attracting so much interest? Is the picture they present really accurate? Here's a chance to put your feet up on your desk and think along with the Institute about what the next 10 years may bring for your business and your family.

In all the projections of today's trends into the decade ahead, the keynote struck is expansion — rapidly growing business and a fast-rising standard of living. According to one of the most widely publicized projections, in 1965 the U.S. will have 15% more people . . . a jump in productivity of 35%-40% . . . an increase of 30% in per capita income . . . and a leap in total national output of 45%-50%. That would add up to another 10 years growth almost as great as we've had in the past 10 years.

These projections are impressively optimistic — yet how much is certain? The fact is that long-range growth is insured by our increasing population alone, to say nothing of stimulation by brand-new forces such as atomic energy and automation. Nevertheless there are at least two big question marks and these have the greatest importance for the average businessman: Will the economy really expand at the *rate* of the past 10 years, or will it slow up some? If expansion is certain, is it likely to come smoothly and steadily, or are we in for a bumpy ride on the way up the hill?

On these and other important questions, you will want to check your thinking against the Institute's analysis below. For instance, a key conclusion of the Institute's analysis is that even if the optimistic projections of average growth over the next 10 years turn out to be right, there will be periods of difficulty — downturns in economic activity — which every business must be prepared to ride out. But whether or not you agree with us on what the overall trends will be, we hope the second part of this Report will convince you that the real certainty in the next 10

years is that *change* will be rapid and profound. The challenge for every businessman will be to keep abreast of these changes as they affect his industry and his company.

#### The Economy of 1965

Long-range projections are appearing in growing numbers — some of them extending as far as 1970 and beyond. All see substantial growth ahead — but differ greatly on the size of the growth and what will be required to achieve it.

Most widely-quoted is the projection for '65 by the Staff of the Joint Congressional Committee on the Economic Report, and it was the basis for Eisenhower's prediction that 10 years from now ours will be a \$500 billion economy. It's among the most recent and most carefully developed of the projections—and represents a-consensus of what many leading economists and business analysts expect to happen almost automatically through a continuation of the free enterprise system in the next 10 years. On page 34, you will find a complete summary of the Congressional Staff's projected statistics for '65 compared with the actual figures for '53 which '55 will closely resemble.

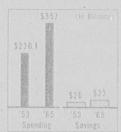
But, like the projections made by other groups, this one is based on many important, and in some cases, questionable, assumptions. It assumes that there will be no major depression in the next 10 years, but only moderate recessions. It excludes the possibility of a major war and also assumes that defense spending will stay at or above present levels.

YOUR BUSINESS IN AN EXPANDING ECONOMY

Granting that these assumptions will prove true, can the economy grow as fast as these projections say it will? The projections depend on a substantial increase in spending by consumers and business — and a readjustment of taxing and spending policies by federal, state and local governments. Here's the Institute's analysis of how closely these crucial assumptions are likely to come to being right . . .

# Will Consumers Spend More Freely?

The economists assume not only that consumer income will rise, but that people will spend more



and save less in the next 10 years than they do now. Thus, according to the projections, consumer spending will skyrocket more than 50% in the decade ahead, while annual savings will dip from the average 7%-8% of disposable income in recent years to 6% in '65. But this is the most challenging assumption the

economists have made and an analysis suggests these figures are over-optimistic.

The most favorable factor for higher spending is that population is likely to increase at a rapid pace. If the birth rates of the past 5 years continue, there will be a population of 189 million in '65 compared to 164-165 million at present — an addition of about 25 million in 10 years, or an average of 2½ million a year. This is the population increase assumed by the '65 forecasters and the Institute believes that this is a realistic assumption.

Also favoring higher spending will be the increase in leisure time and in the number of children in teenage brackets who are consumers but not producers.

However, other, less favorable factors must also be taken into account —

. . . The number of people between 20 and 44 will increase by only about 3 million in the next 10 years. Yet these are normally the heaviest spenders.

At the same time, by contrast the relative proportion of population between 45 and 64 (whose spending rate is lower) will increase. The total number in this age group will go up by about 5½ million.

. . . Rising incomes may well bring a rise in savings. Traditionally, consumers going into higher income

brackets take some time to adjust their spending to new and higher levels.

maticipates: Consumer spending will increase greatly in the next 10 years — but not rapidly enough to bring about the growth projected. In the final analysis, business will play a major role in how fast consumer spending rises. Industry faces a tremendous challenge in the next decade in developing new products and new selling techniques that will win more of the consumers' dollars. Furthermore, one consequence is that the competition for the consumers' money in the next 10 years will be far greater than in the last 10.

# Will Business Step Up Its Spending?

The economists assume business will boost its rate of spending on plant and equipment by about



\$2 billion each year. The projections show capital spending increasing from an average rate of about \$38 billion a year in '53 to \$60 billion a year in '65. But examination may show these figures, too, weighted on the optimistic side.

It is true that based on the record of the past 10 years,

the '65 target is reasonable. Aside from government spending, no other factor has been more important in the nation's postwar growth than the aggressive optimism with which business has approached capital spending. Minor recessions in both '48-'49 and '53-'54 were stemmed to a large extent by the refusal of industry to be stampeded into real retrenchment of investment spending. At the same time, long-range planning of capital spending by the larger corporations (which account for the bulk of capital spending) has become a new factor in the economy's stability.

Looking ahead at capital spending over the next ten years, however, whether projections will be realized turns on two key questions:

expansion plans should be carried out despite minor fluctuations in the economy? The Institute believes the answer is yes. Heavier competitive pressures insure that business spending for expansion, new products, modernization, replacement and cost reduc-

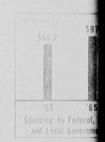
tion will be of ments of the normal section will dependently of stitute's answer still be in large spends on plan to buy as freely capital spending

pace.

lag in consume factors. First, a fact and the on extent. Certain tures heavier t years. Secondly in post-war year of business investapital goods in to go up sharp pace at which some industries.

Conticipates: Ta large corporation through on long buying plans eve Total capital spemay not hit the

What Role Will
The economisment will spend



their being exten of maximum eco

A 15-20% cut if and business (in the corporate tax

30

Copyright 1955, Research Institute of America, Inc.

RESEARCH INSTITUTI

their spending to

Il increase greatly pidly enough to In the final analin how fast cones a tremendous developing new es that will win 'urthermore, one or the consumers' or greater than in

#### ding?

s will boost its pment by about each year. The show capital reasing from an of about \$38 biln '53 to \$60 biln '65. But examishow these figreighted on the

hat based on the
e past 10 years,
e from governbeen more imth than the agusiness has apcessions in both
a large extent by
dled into real re. At the same
spending by the
for the bulk of
w factor in the

g over the next ons will be real-

confidence that it despite minor nstitute believes we pressures inision, new prodnd cost reduc-

York 17, N. Y.

tion will be one of the most significant developments of the next ten years.

... But will expansion plans be carried out independently of consumer spending? Here the Institute's answer is no — that consumer spending will still be in large part the key to how fast business spends on plant and equipment. If consumers fail to buy as freely as the economists have assumed, then capital spending by business will also take a slower pace.

Cobservation: To some extent, the effects of any lag in consumer spending will be offset by new factors. First, a new technological revolution is a fact and the only argument concerns its speed and extent. Certainly, it will compel business expenditures heavier than the average over the past 25 years. Secondly, the heavy rate of capital spending in post-war years should generate a growing level of business investment. With a larger overall stock of capital goods in use, replacement demand is likely to go up sharply, particularly in view of the fast pace at which machinery will become obsolete in some industries.

\*\*Taking all factors into account, the large corporations at least will probably follow through on long-range construction and equipment buying plans even during lulls in consumer buying. Total capital spending will expand even though it may not hit the target set up in the projections.

### What Role Will the Government Play?

The economists have assumed that the government will spend much more—but out of increased



revenue from an expanding economy and despite lower tax rates. Further, they assume the pattern of government spending will be radically altered, with state and local units showing the biggest increases. Yet while some changes along these lines will take place in the next 10 years, odds are against

their being extensive enough to bring about the kind of maximum economic growth projected.

A 15-20% cut in federal taxes on both individuals and business (in addition to the drop of 5 points in the corporate tax rates scheduled for 1956 in the In-

# Predictions vs. Projections

One of the primary aims of this Report is to assist you in weighing the recent flurry of economic projections to 1965. These tell you only what *could* happen, for in making them, the economists focused on the *maximum possible* growth of the economy in the next 10 years and the conditions necessary for that growth.

Against this background the Institute brings you its *predictions* — what Institute editors believe *will* happen between now and '65. Our focus is on the *probable* growth of the economy, and the developments that will shape its growth.

ternal Revenue Code of 1954) by '65, is what the economists are counting on. As a practical matter, however, both political parties face a conflict between what they would like to do about taxes and what they may be forced to do about spending. Both parties accept a philosophy which requires the government to use its fiscal and monetary authority to offset both decreases and sharp increases in the general level of business activity. And neither party may be able to meet the needs and pressures for extensive highway, school and housing projects, for example, without setting a floor under tax cuts.

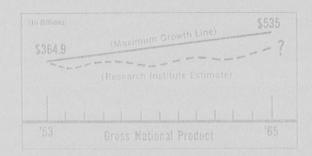
©anticipates: Odds are that there will be a cut in federal taxes on individuals in '56, an election year. However, as things stand now, this cut may not be substantial. On corporate income, the rate may be retained at 52% even beyond '56. If and when a reduction does come, chances are that the level will be held at 50% (28% normal, 22% surtax). Beyond these tax cuts, further reductions will come very slowly, if at all, unless there is a very basic change in relations with Russia.

The economists' assumption of sharp increases in state and local government spending will probably prove well-founded – but here the odds against any real tax relief are even greater. Pressures for expanded construction of schools and highways will require higher taxes in many areas even though much construction will, of course, be financed out of further debt (bond) financing. (The forecasters assume that state and local governments will be borrowing to meet deficits of \$2 billion a year by '65.)

YOUR BUSINESS IN AN EXPANDING ECONOMY

But state and local administrations will also have to meet very rapidly rising operating costs as well as construction outlays, and these will require higher taxes in many cases. For instance, the Bird report (a 10-year forecast of tax needs for New York State) recently completed studies that indicate state operating costs will increase by 20% in the next six years. Operating costs for New York City are expected to go up 60% and those of some upstate New York communities will go up by 40%. Now there's talk of higher N. Y. State taxes in '56.

# How Smoothly Will the Economy Expand?



The economists take into account the possibility of minor set-backs in the decade ahead, but they assume that these will be offset by expansion in "good" years. While the Institute does not believe the economy will grow as fast as the projections (see page 34) show, we are convinced that growth will be substantial and no major depression is in sight. Consumer spending will have an upward bias; business spending, too, has both new stability and new stimulation; and government is committed to act if a serious slide does start.

Despite these trends, however, the Institute believes we are likely to experience at least two minor recessions in the next ten years. The first is likely to come within the next two years, when the present optimism runs into some hard economic facts. Weakness in one or two key business areas will probably lead to a general tapering off with possibly some downslide.

While housing starts in '55 are virtually certain to match the 1.2 million starts of '54, and probably go higher (current estimate is 1.3 million units), they may fall as low as 1 million or less per year in '56 and '57. Consumer durables, particularly automo-

biles, may also figure in this "recessionary" trend. Production of both autos and TV sets is being pushed to potentially excessive levels in the latest round of heavy competition. In both housing and durables, some sales are being borrowed from the future—though no one knows just how much.

**♥ observation:** While few economists expect the current rate of home building to hold up, some are very optimistic about the longer run outlook. They see housing starts as *averaging* 1.2-1.3 million units annually to 1960 and 1.4 million from '60 to '65. These — and somewhat more conservative estimates — are both being made from the same basic trends:

- 1. The marriage rate will continue to decline for the next 5 years, reflecting the low birth rates of the '30's.
- 2. The average annual increase in households will be relatively stable at about 600,000. (The average for the past 10 years has been about 1 million plus.)
- 8. With both marriages and household formations down in the next 5-10 years, the rate of new home construction will depend heavily on the effects of higher incomes and movements of families to new locations city to suburb and farm to city.

manicipates: Taking the above trends into consideration—along with the housing boom of the past 7-8 years—the odds are that construction of new homes will do well to average more than 1 million units a year for at least the next 5 years.

How serious an impact will such a cut-back in housing construction have — with or without a simultaneous falling-off in production of consumer durables? The answer will turn on how Washington handles two anti-recession measures sure to be taken: federal tax cuts and increased support of school and highway construction. Tax cuts for individuals next year will play the earliest role. Beyond '56, heavier expenditures on highways, schools, hospitals, etc., could be a major support of the economy, helping to prevent any serious consequences of recession.

# Will Unemployment Be a Problem?

The economists assume a continuation of practically full employment with the economy absorbing an average of one million additional workers annually between now and '65. But with a mild depression or a slow-up in expansion a distinct possi-

bility in the question whe

Sobservation years, emplo 500,000 annuaturn in '56 c crease by at as a result of

manticipates: that a down under greath recession spe in the next so great extent work week a

Yet while shortage, ma fact you can radical chang ten years. I altered unde Brand-new coften be requiparing for the particularly

# A 35-Hour

The ccon worked per compared to that the tren continue – th ment. But be companies in may well be

In some it logical chan substantial recertainty in the both the timitake will prounions decide job security may take an holidays link weekends, or

Sobservation:

32

his "recessionary" trend.

I TV sets is being pushed
ls in the latest round of
a housing and durables,
wed from the future—
w much.

onomists expect the curg to hold up, some are onger run outlook. They ging 1.2-1.3 million units million from '60 to '65. e conservative estimates a the same basic trends: vill continue to decline ting the low birth rates

increase in households bout 600,000. (The averas been about 1 million

nd household formations, the rate of new home eavily on the effects of ents of families to new ad farm to city.

we trends into consideraig boom of the past 7-8 astruction of new homes e than 1 million units a years.

will such a cut-back in with or without a simulaction of consumer durm on how Washington easures sure to be takened support of school and cuts for individuals next ole. Beyond '56, heavier schools, hospitals, etc., of the economy, helping quences of recession.

### Problem?

a continuation of prach the economy absorbion additional workers '65. But with a mild depansion a distinct possibility in the next two or three years, there is a real question whether this will be possible.

**Pobservation:** In the past four or five prosperous years, employment has grown an average of about 500,000 annually. Thus even barring a business downturn in '56 or '57, unemployment will probably increase by at least one million in the next three years as a result of unabsorbed additions to the work force.

maticipates: To avoid the still greater unemployment that a downturn might bring, Washington will be under greatly increased pressure to undertake antirecession spending. But the growth of unemployment in the next several years will also be determined to a great extent by what happens to wage levels, the work week and to employment guarantees.

Yet while there will obviously be no overall labor shortage, many skills will be in scarce supply. In fact you can be sure there will be a number of radical changes in the labor market over the coming ten years. The very nature of many jobs will be altered under the impact of technological changes. Brand-new combinations of skills and education will often be required. Many companies are already preparing for these changes with new training programs — particularly for supervisory and key employees.

#### A 35-Hour Work Week by '65?

The economists assume that average hours worked per week will be about 35 hours in '65 compared to about 40 in '53. The Institute believes that the trend to an even shorter work week will continue—thus reducing the problem of unemployment. But because the cost could be prohibitive for companies in many industries, the overall reduction may well be less than the projections indicate.

In some industries at least, where rapid technological changes are sharply boosting productivity, substantial reductions in the work week are a virtual certainty in the next ten years. However, even here both the timing of the reductions and the form they take will probably depend on the extent to which unions decide to press for leisure rather than wages, job security or fringes. Shorter average work weeks may take any of several forms including more paid holidays linked with weekends to provide 3-day weekends, or longer (4-5 week) annual vacations.

Tobservation: In any case, the net effect will be to create more leisure time which in the next decade.

just as in the last, will have profound effects on American living and buying habits. Greater spending on services, such as travel and recreation, and on products that tie in with leisure time will be an inevitable result.

# Can Inflation Be Avoided?

The economists' projections for '65 are based on the assumption that prices will remain stable. But



it's the Institute's prediction that prices will rise at least 10%-15% in the next 10 years. Political as well as economic trends signal further inflation ahead—

... "Pay-as-you-go" government financing is not in sight. Regardless of the outcome of the '56 and '60 elections, chances are that federal

deficit financing will continue. New approaches currently being used or under discussion — such as lease-purchase of government buildings and the provision of road construction funds through bonds of an independent authority — may change the nature but not the fact of deficit financing.

... "Pump priming" to keep unemployment down is almost a sure bet. A key economic fact today is the realization by both political parties that unemployment on any substantial scale has become politically unacceptable. Thus in the decade ahead, the downswings of the economy are likely to be relatively few, quite short-lived and moderate — because of government action, either direct or indirect, but always in an inflationary direction.

party will, over the long run, have sufficient courage to clamp down hard on a boom that may threaten to get out of hand. Here, the *absence* of government action will add to the inflationary pressures.

... Union successes in obtaining higher wages will push up prices. Theoretically, gains in productivity will make wage boosts possible without increased prices. In many industries, mainly those where capital investment is greatest, this will prove true. But it will not be true of all industries.

Mobservation: At least one leading economist believes that the coming heavy increase in the number of

YOUR	BUSINESS	IN AN E	EXPANDING	ECONOMY.

	<b>=</b>	lueprint (In b	of th	Blueprint of the 1965 Economy (In billions of 1953 dollars)			
Gross National Product	1953 (Actual) 364.9	1965 (Projected) 535.0	Increase %	Less nongross national product	1953 (Actual)	1965 (Projected)	Increase %
What Consumers Will Have				payments	17.4	26.0	49
to Spend				What Government Will Spend	85.2	97.0	14
Total Disposable Income	250.1	380.0	52	For (major) national security	52.0	40.0	-53
What Consumers Will Spend	230.1	357.0	55	For civilian public construction	10.1	17.0	89
For durable goods	29.7	50.0	89	For schools	1.7	. 4.0	135
For nondurables	118.9	185.0	55	For highways	3.2	0.9	88
For services	81.4	122.0	50	For other public construction	5.5	7.0	32
What Consumers Will Save	20.0	23.0	15	For all other purposes	23.1	40.0	73
What Business Will Have to Spend	35.1	0.09	17	What Government Will Borrow	9.9	2.0	-70
From undistributed profits	8.9	12.0	35	Population (in millions)	159.6	190.0	19
From depreciation allowances	27.2	48.0	97	Number of people in labor force	67.0	79.0	18
What Parisons Will Com.	) i	5	201	Size of Armed Forces	33.	3.0	-14
For plant and equipment	38.0	0.10	# 0H				
For residential nonfarm construction	0.00	16.0	34	Size of Civilian Labor Force	63.5	76.0	50
For change in inventories	10	3.0	100	Employed in agriculture	1.9	5.5	-1.1-
For net foreign investment	-1.9	2.0	205	Employed in industry Employed by government	5.9	60.0	21 12
What Business Will Borrow	14.4	21.0	46	Unemployed	1.6	3.0	87
What Federal, State and Local Gov?				Average hours worked			
Will Have to Spend	78.5	95.0	21	In agriculture	2,465	2,240	6-
From personal tax and nontax payments	36.0	.43.0	19	In industry and government	2,040	1,855	6-
From business tax and nontax				(per week)	39.5	35.7	
liabilities	51.1	.62.0	22	Output per man-hour			
From contributions for social				In agriculture	\$1.314	\$1.865	42
insurance	8.8	16.0	85	In industry	\$3.100	\$4.190	35
O Account of the Colored in	1,1						

Source: Joint Committee on the Economic Report, "Potential Growth of the United States During the Next Decade". Assumes reduction in Federal tax rates. If present rates continued, total revenues would be about 15-20% higher.

people in the or are relatively fixe brake on inflation that because of government will stability. But wh from now, the ma the next 5-10 yea high as possible, recession will be immediately ahea

New forces, suc will not only help in the next 10 year lems to the indiv portance to the startlingly new ap changing trends—and industrial mameans of product application of mat petition steadily not these trends early even greater than

While the gene already fairly clea and uncertain. We the discussion belowith what could believe you will use your knowled sonal situation to tions for your fan

# The Changing I

Growth patterns sharply in the year would expect, mo industries.

But while these rates of growth, m industries will still they are among the Willustration: Project dicate production of

RESEARCH INSTITUTE

people in the over-60 age bracket—where wages are relatively fixed via pensions, etc.—will act as a brake on inflationary spending policies. He argues that because of their greater voting power, the government will be forced to emphasize monetary stability. But while this might be true 10-20 years from now, the major pressures on the government in the next 5-10 years will be to keep employment as high as possible. The economy's vulnerability to recession will be particularly great in the 5 years immediately ahead. It won't be until the early 60's

that the post-war baby crop will start to come of age, creating large new demand for housing and durables.

**Santicipates:** Although overall productivity will easily increase by 2½% per year (average increase in the last 10 years is estimated at about 4%) this won't be the average for every industry. Many key industries that figure prominently in the cost of living are unlikely to maintain a high rate. Costs and prices in those that lag behind will go higher. Prices of food, clothing and housing in particular will rise − and they take up the largest part of the consumer's pay.

# Dramatic Changes Ahead

New forces, such as atomic energy and automation, will not only help shape the growth of the economy in the next 10 years, but will hand many new problems to the individual company. Yet of equal importance to the average businessman will be the startlingly new appearance given to old problems by changing trends—changing trends in both consumer and industrial markets, for example . . . in ways and means of product distribution . . . in the use and application of materials. With the pressures of competition steadily multiplying, the urgency of spotting these trends early and adapting to them fast will be even greater than in recent years.

United States During the Next Decade"

the

of

Growth

"Potential

Report,

Economic

the

no

in Federal tax rates.

\* Assumes reduction

From contributions

would be about 15-20% higher

While the general shape of many of the trends is already fairly clear, the details are much more vague and uncertain. What the Institute hopes to do in the discussion below is to stimulate your imagination with what could be expected for the future. We believe you will then be in a better position to use your knowledge of your own business and personal situation to translate speculations into expectations for your family and company.

#### The Changing Industrial Markets

Growth patterns for different industries will vary sharply in the years ahead. Expansion will be, as you would expect, most rapid in the newly established industries.

But while these industries will show the fastest rates of growth, many of the more slowly expanding industries will still show greater total growth because they are among the largest.

Willustration: Projections made by McGraw-Hill indicate production of instruments, electrical machinery

and transportation equipment (other than autos and trucks) will expand at the fastest pace. Among the nondurable industrial products, chemicals will take the lead, followed by coal and oil products, rubber products, textile mill products and paper products, in that order. Apparel, foods and beverages, leather products, printing and publishing and tobacco industries will grow at a slower pace that will be closely in line with the population increase.

Scaution: Growth rates for product lines within an industry will vary sharply, too. This, for example, is currently the case within the chemical industry. Highest growth rates have appeared in the most recently developed products such as streptomycin, plastic pipe and polyethylene. Other products that have had a longer life-span have grown at slower rates and will continue to do so.

manticipates: In selling to industry, you will find customer needs changing even more rapidly than in recent years. In buying from industry, you will be able to take advantage of many innovations in machinery, metals and production techniques. Industry experts point out that the major trend in the heavy industries, for instance, will be toward more integrated and more fully automatic production methods . . . Metal end-products will be molded or extruded in continuous processes linked to primary metal production, with little direct labor involved . . . High-speed stamping and shearing operations will be linked with steel rolling mills to process metals at high speeds . . . There will be more and more use of plastics and fluid metals that can be molded or poured in continuous operation . . . Where cutting operations are still necessary, they will be done by batteries of inter-connected tools.

YOUR BUSINESS IN AN EXPANDING ECONOMY

#### Where Will Industry Grow Fastest?

The Institute believes that the direction of many of the recent shifts of industry will continue, and may even accelerate. As a result, the industrial map of the U. S. will change more drastically between '55 and '65 than in any previous period. While some of the shifts to come can only be guessed at, here are the recent trends that will gather even greater momentum in the next ten years.

... Building of new plants will follow the population trends, and this means the growth of industry will favor the South, West and Midwest. Large national corporations are building many of their new plants close to these fast-growing areas. Industrial expansion in the Midwest is due to get an additional boost from development of the St. Lawrence Seaway, scheduled for completion in 3-4 years.

. . . Shifting of manufacturing operations to more favorable locations will continue. Among many larger corporations the current trend is toward consolidating operations into fewer, more strategically-placed and efficient plants. But even for companies with only one plant, there will be good reasons to consider shifting to other locations. Competition among state governments and state industrial development corporations to attract out-of-state companies is sharp today—and can be expected to increase substantially in the decade ahead.

Illustration: In Georgia, the number of private industrial development corporations has increased from 6 to 59 in the last three years. Not only have companies in the textile, paper and pulp industries been attracted to the South, but others such as manufacturers of nails, electric meters, distribution transformers, glass fishing rods, boilers and electric clocks.

... Dispersal of industry for defense purposes will be encouraged, resulting in a steady shift of industry from key metropolitan areas to surrounding suburban areas. This movement has been relatively slow in recent years, but seems to be gathering momentum in some areas. However, while shifts of industry to the suburbs are in line with dispersal objectives, most of them are being made for other reasons: to get away from traffic congestion, to locate near transportation arteries: to gain better working atmosphere for employees, and larger land area for efficient layouts of one-story plants and warehouses.

newer forces — such as the location of atomic energy power plants, effects of an expanded and modernized highway system, the exhaustion of traditional ore deposits and the need of industry to draw on more distant supply sources. These developments will be slow and the effects of some of them are difficult to anticipate. But in some cases, indications of the potential impact are already evident. For instance, the New York Thruway, New England's Route 128 and express highways in other parts of the country have already resulted in the location of many new plants along these important new transportation arteries.

## The Trend Toward New Materials

Many of the old mainstays will be replaced, while others will be up against stiff new competition in the next ten years.

Plastics will replace many metals and building materials. For instance, plastic trucks and trailers are virtually certain to invade the trucking field starting in about 2-3 years, if not sooner. Plastics will also find wider applications in passenger car bodies, automotive parts, business machine housings, boats and other products.

Industrial applications of plastics such as nylon will extend more into gears, bearings, bushings, wire jacketing and cable coating, valves, instrument housings and coil forms.

Man-made fibers will make greater inroads into markets for natural fibers. Wool and cotton will probably drop even further in per capita consumption, despite what's being done to give them some new, desirable characteristics. But population increases should extend their total market. However, competition between the man-made fibers will be even more intense, with newer fibers crowding items such as Orlon and Vicara which have grown most in popularity in recent years. Also look for introduction of non-woven synthetic fabrics. For instance, one of the large paper companies is experimenting with the conversion of liquefied wood fibers into solid stock by a continuous process, thus by-passing the spinning and weaving stages.

Materials only recently established marketwise face tough competition. For instance, the synthetic products of the petrochemical industry have enjoyed

amazing su
ceiving cor
duced – for
the fermen
the first pi
a "building
superior to

pobservatic
ments for
be the bro
hesives. M
companies,
into the ma

Establish are most I labor to p aluminum finding inc production with const of the eco as cement, sharply in Mobservath of lumber of paper a facture of tinue to cut

# The

The potential the increase of the increase of

#### Who Wil

A brief growth du and old v a detailed . . . Por by 14.5 m

36

RESEARCH INSTITUTE

the location of atomic energy an expanded and modernized exhaustion of traditional ore of industry to draw on more. These developments will be f some of them are difficult some cases, indications of the already evident. For intruway, New England's Route ways in other parts of the resulted in the location of these important new trans-

#### New Materials

nstays will be replaced, while inst stiff new competition in

many metals and building ce, plastic trucks and trailers to invade the trucking field years, if not sooner. Plastics pplications in passenger car s, business machine housings, ets.

as of plastics such as nylon b gears, bearings, bushings, le coating, valves, instrument s.

I make greater inroads into ibers. Wool and cotton will rther in per capita consumping done to give them some teristics. But population intheir total market. However, he man-made fibers will be newer fibers crowding items ara which have grown most tyears. Also look for introynthetic fabrics. For instance, companies is experimenting iquefied wood fibers into solid process, thus by-passing the stages.

ntly established marketwise n. For instance, the synthetic nemical industry have enjoyed amazing success in recent years. Now they are receiving competition from industrial chemicals produced — for the first time in large quantities — through the fermentation of agricultural products. One of the first products of "chemurgy" is "itaconic acid", a "building-block" chemical, which is said to be superior to its counterparts in petrochemicals.

**Sobservation:** One of the really important developments for both manufacturers and homeowners will be the broadening development of easy-to-use adhesives. Made by chemical, rubber and meat-packing companies, these products are already fast cutting into the markets for bolts, screws, rivets, staples.

Established materials that will hold sure gains are most likely to be those that require little hand labor to process and fabricate. Among the metals, aluminum will probably make the biggest gains, finding increased applications in construction, auto production, irrigation pipe and other industries. Also, with construction continuing as a major segment of the economy in the next 10 years, materials such as cement, gypsum, glass and plywood will expand sharply in use.

**Sobservation:** The long-term downtrend in the use of lumber will probably continue as the competition of paper and paperboard continues. In the manufacture of footwear, plastics and fabrics will continue to cut into the use of leather.

# The Changing Consumer Markets

The population spurt of the last 10 years, plus the increase that can be counted on during the next 10, insure that huge new consumer markets lie ahead. But in many critically important respects, these markets will be sharply different from today's. That business will face a major challenge of adjustment — of product lines and product designs, as well as advertising and merchandising — becomes clear when you consider the following questions.

#### Who Will Make Up the Markets?

A brief run-down of the projected population growth during the next 10 years shows how the *young* and *old* will dominate the consumer markets. (For a detailed picture, see the chart on page 39.)

. . . Population from 0-17 years 'old will increase by 14.5 million, but population from 17-64 will in-

crease by just 12 million. Those 65 and over will increase by 4 million.

. . . In the most favorable age group for both employment and for spending (18-34) the increase will be only about 3 million.

. . . Gain among older people in the working population (35-64) will be greater, about 8.5 million.

**Mobservation:** Obviously these are substantial changes in the age composition of the population within a relatively short period of time—and they are sure to be accompanied by major changes in buying habits, and changes in market potentials for both existing products and new products.

#### Where Will the Markets Grow Fastest?

Growth of the population will continue to be greatest in the South and West—as shown by the most recent projections of the Census Bureau. (See page 38.) Here are the highlights of these projections, which assume that the trend of migration of recent years will continue.

. . . Population of California will top New York by '65, making it the largest state and consumer market in the nation. While New York State will be gaining a little over 2 million people in the next 10 years, California will gain well over 5 million.

. . . Texas will move up to a higher ranking among the states.

. . . Regionally, the largest relative gains will be made by the South Atlantic states, the West Coast and the East North Central states (Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin). The largest gain will be made by the West Coast, due to the large increases in California.

Tobservation: Obviously these large differences in growth patterns will have greatest importance for companies selling and advertising nationally. Reallocation of sales and advertising efforts will be necessary. But smaller firms with local and regional distribution should not lose sight of the fact that practically all markets will expand sharply.

### Will the Trend to the Suburbs Continue?

Migration from the big cities to the suburbs in recent years has surpassed all expectations. It has been a major prop for residential construction — which has jumped ahead every time the peak seemed surely in sight. It has created a new mode of living

1

YOUR	BU	ISI	NE		I	N	A	N	E	< F	AI	, ND	II	JG.	E	C	0	NO	ON	VI)															
	Increase	%	21.2	21.3	13.7	11.2	12.8	46.0		t	19.4	6.2	-1.5		t,	4.1	20.8	-4.9	24.8			12.8	14.9	19.9	24.5	34.0	53.5	-31.0	49.0			30.9	36.5	45.8	
	1965	(Projected)	1,020,000	1.983.000	4,771,000	2,443,000	4,046,000	4,895,000		000 2000	3.745.000	3,362,000	2,150,000		1 000 000	1,820,000	3,484,000	2,140,000	10,355,000			693,000	693,000	367,000	1,760,000	1,016,000	1,429,000	961,000	307,000			3,244,000	2,187,000	17,781,000	
965	1953	(Estimate)	841,000	1,937,000	4,193,000	2,195,000	3,585,000	3,353,000		000 200 6	3.329.000	3,114,000	2,183,000		1 000 000	1,909,000	2,884,000	2,251,000	8,298,000			614,000	603,000	306,000	1,413,000	758,000	930,000	734,000	206,000			2,478,000	1,602,000	12,190,000	
Projections of Population by States for 1965			District of Columbia	West Virginia	North Carolina	South Carolina	Georgia	Florida	East South Central:	Vontuolar	Tennessee	Alabama	Mississippi	West South Central.	A-Trongood	Arkansas	Louisiana	Oklahoma	Texas		Mountam:	Montana	Idaho	Wyoming	Colorado	New Mexico	Arizona	Utah	Nevada		Pacific:	Washington	Oregon	Calitornia	
Populatio	Increase	%	19.1		8.6	10.4	6.9	13.9		21.6		14.9	21.3	8.6			21.9	21.0	16.0		14.8			12.5	0.9	9.5	-1.2	7.3	6.7	12.7			29.0	29.9	
ections of	1965	(Projected)	188,593,000		992,000	582,000	403,000	5,583,000	918,000	2,631,000		17,511,000	6,247,000	11,707,000		000,000	10,204,000	2,006,000	10,452,000	8,825,000	4,041,000			3,435,000	2,762,000	4,487,000	614,000	705,000	1,437,000	2,262,000			462,000	0,505,000	
Proj	1953	(Estimate)	158,306,000		914,000	527,000	377,000	4,900,000	817,000	2,162,000		15,233,000	5,141,000	10,656,000		0000000	8,369,000	4,136,000	9,003,000	6,852,000	3,518,000			3,053,000	2,605,000	4,096,000	621,000	657,000	1,347,000	2,006,000			358,000	2,341,000	of the Census.
			United States	New England:	Maine	New Hampshire	Vermont	Massachusetts	Rhode Island	Connecticut	Middle Atlantic:	New York	New Jersey	Pennsylvania	East North Central:		Onio	Indiana	Illinois	Michigan	Wisconsin		West North Central:	Minnesota	Iowa	Missouri	North Dakota	South Dakota	Nebraska	Kansas		South Atlantic:	Delaware	Maryland	Source: U. S. Bureau of

PR

Age Cl

Und

OURCE: U.

that has sus goods, and question is, next 10 yea

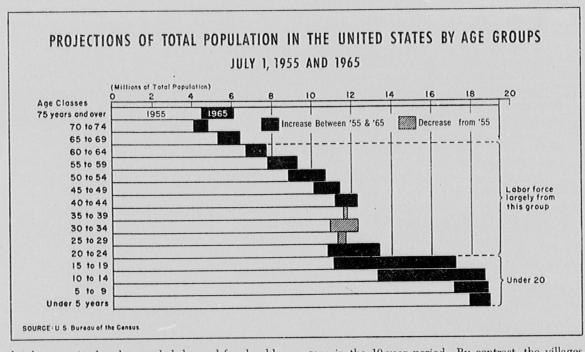
manticipates hind the su support in the Institut suburbs will now shown trend towar away from

away from

Sobservation
the suburbs
and retailing
the populat
shopping conduction

men should consumer r—even thou be as great while New 1950 and 1

400	many !		400	160	77	100	H	14	N. 7	573		Se 17	75.7	120	Y 25
3-2	340	1			164		hod o			1	100		4.651		100
- L. L.	200		Shine	200	1. 1.	1	A. A.	- 4	12.39	34		A	A		1



that has sustained and expanded demand for durable goods, and particularly autos. Now the important question is, how far will this trend continue in the next 10 years?

31.0

961,000

734,000

7.3

657,000 1,347,000 2,006,000 36.5

Washington

462,000

358,000 2,541,000

South Atlantic:

Delaware Maryland the Census

of

Bureau

S

D.

Conticipates: Actually, the population pressures behind the suburban trend, which have been its major support in the last 10 years, will taper off. However, the Institute believes that further expansion of the suburbs will be stimulated by an entirely new force, now showing up in only a few areas. This is the trend toward development of new industrial centers away from the congested cities.

©observation: The '55-'65 concentration of growth in the suburbs will be bolstered by the fact that industry, and retailing in particular, has not yet caught up with the population shift of the last decade. Supermarkets, shopping centers, and department store branches are due for continued expansion.

©caution: Despite the trend to the suburbs, businessmen should not overlook the fact that the growth of consumer markets in metropolitan areas will be hefty—even though the increase percentage-wise will not be as great as that for the suburbs. For instance, while New York City is growing only 7.1% between 1950 and 1960, its population will gain 550,000 per-

sons in the 10-year period. By contrast, the villages throughout all New York State will increase by 21.2% but the total increase will be something less than 300,000. For many sellers the large metropolitan areas will still be the most profitable markets to shoot for.

#### What Will Happen to Spending Patterns?

Heaviest impact on spending patterns will probably come from the consumer's steadily increasing "discretionary" buying power—the money he has available after taking care of the necessities. In addition, he will have an increasing amount of leisure time. With this in mind, sellers face these considerations—

. . . Products designed to serve leisure time activities will have a head start in the scramble for additional sales dollars. Sporting goods and apparel, outdoor furniture, swimming pools, photographic equipment, outdoor grills—these are but a small sampling of products that will find the fastest growing markets in the decade ahead.

. . . The sales impact of new and improved products of other kinds will have to be great, if the consumer is going to be induced to spend a large share of his increasing income on them.

#### YOUR BUSINESS IN AN EXPANDING ECONOMY

... Spending for nondurable goods and for services will each increase at about the same pace and in proportion to the population increase. This means that sellers of food and clothing (as a group) can count on expanding sales averaging about 3% a year.

. . . Spending for durable goods may increase at an even faster rate. In fact it will have to, in order for the forecasts for '65 to be realized. As you can see in the figures on page 34, spending on durable goods is expected to increase by 68%, while spending on nondurable goods and services expands by 50-55%.

Conticipates: Manufacturers of durable goods will face probably the biggest challenge. Consumers have spent heavily on appliances and autos in the past 10 years. Markets for many products such as radios, washers, refrigerators, and even black-and-white TV are near saturation and future demands will be primarily for replacement.

To expand sales of durables, manufacturers will have to lean heavily (1) on new types of products (2) and on improvements, both functionally and in appearance, in older products to induce consumers to replace them. Generally, manufacturers of a wide variety of home goods — not only appliances, but furniture, rugs and housewares — face an uphill fight to expand sales in the next 5-10 years.

However, the consumer drive for higher standards of living will persist. Wider acceptance of such ideas as the 2-car family, and concentration by manufacturers on new styles and design, may well set off further rounds of sales successes for durables.

#### New Distribution Methods?

Current headlines show that once again the costs of distribution are coming under critical fire. Odds are heavy that the current trend toward low cost, high turnover methods will continue and that the next 10 years will bring even greater improvements and expansion of mass selling techniques.

Canticipates: Here are just some of the dramatic changes ahead:

Supermarkets will dominate in the expansion of retail trade and move much further into non-food lines. In '54 supermarkets accounted for about 52% of the total sales volume done by grocery and combination stores. Indications are that in just 5 more years, their share of the business will increase to 75%.

The strength of the trend toward non-food lines in supermarkets can best be seen by these comparisons between 1950 and 1954.

1

	% of stor	res carrying
	'50	'54
Housewares	45%	83%
Toys	14%	60%
Hardware	23%	49%
Stationery	33%	71%
Toiletries	89%	96.5%

Night openings are likely to be common for all types of retail stores. As one of the most speculative experts in the retail field sees it, "Retailing will be increasingly an evening operation. Many outlying centers are already doing from 40 to 65% of their volume after 4:30 p.m."

Emphasis on telephone and mail order selling will be one of the major developments. The point of sale for many products will shift to the consumer's home. Big city department stores are already pushing telephone sales hard. And the use of mail-in coupons in magazine and newspaper advertising is fast increasing.

"Discount" selling will grow. Recent trends in discount selling indicate that the next 5-10 years will see it establish itself as a permanent part of the distribution system. More and more major manufacturers—as well as individual retailers—will be offering consumers both low-price, no-service merchandise and the same merchandise at higher prices with service.

Despite present doubts, much wider use will be made of self-service selling methods. Every retail store will be under increasing competitive pressure to reduce costs — and self-selection is a major weapon. New shifts to check-out, self-service methods are even now taking place in drug stores, hardware stores, variety stores, bakery shops, etc. In department stores, you will see perhaps even a majority of department converted to self-selection.

New technological developments will bring some radical changes in distribution methods. Radically improved refrigeration and preservation methods, for example, will rapidly expand the use of vending machines. Furthermore, improvements in the machines themselves will result in their being put to a variety of new uses.

Physical costs of duced. Automation wholesale and retail tain phases of retail these lines probably 60's. Chief of these chines that by "read and total all items seconds.

#### Atomic En

Future Institute S bers will make a thor and future impact o — particularly the opfor smaller firms. I however, here are coming.

#### Atomic Energy

The atomic reacted constructed under of perimental and governmental and go

However, private major equipment m their independent private the real spurpetitive A-power. For York intends to have ation in Peekskill, A ernment financial hillinois, also footing producing in 1960. Utwo other private utidistrict have also ar together, these five pkilowatts of nuclear put to commercial utilinity.

The fact is that the increasing month by erate more as a rest conference. The doll in this field to busing

A huge domestic Manufacturers, elecinstitutions and other will spend approxim

40

RESEARCH INSTITUTE

toward non-food lines in een by these comparisons

% of stores carrying
'50 '54
45% 83%
14% 60%
23% 49%
33% 71%
89% 96.5%

ly to be common for all s one of the most specueld sees it, "Retailing will operation. Many outlying from 40 to 65% of their

and mail order selling developments. The point vill shift to the consumer's stores are already pushing the use of mail-in coupons er advertising is fast in-

grow. Recent trends in hat the next 5-10 years a permanent part of the and more major manuvidual retailers — will be pw-price, no-service merchandise at higher prices

much wider use will be g methods. Every retail sing competitive pressure lection is a major weapon. self-service methods are ug stores, hardware stores, ps, etc. In department s even a majority of delection.

pments will bring some tion methods. Radically preservation methods, for d the use of vending mavements in the machines ir being put to a variety Physical costs of distribution will be sharply reduced. Automation techniques will predominate in wholesale and retail warehousing, and even in certain phases of retailing. However, major steps along these lines probably won't be taken until the early 60's. Chief of these will be electronic checkout machines that by "reading" price markings will record and total all items on the counter in a matter of seconds.

#### Atomic Energy and Automation

Future Institute Staff Reports for Executive Members will make a thorough analysis of both the present and future impact of atomic energy and automation — particularly the opportunities and problems created for smaller firms. Looking over the next 10 years, however, here are the broad outlines of what's coming.

#### Atomic Energy

The atomic reactors for power plants now being constructed under contracts with the AEC are experimental and government-subsidized.

However, private utility groups—together with major equipment manufacturers—are now getting their independent projects underway. This will provide the real spur to progress in developing competitive A-power. For instance, Con Edison of New York intends to have a nuclear power plant in operation in Peekskill, New York by 1959, without government financial help. Commonwealth Edison of Illinois, also footing its own bill, will have a plant producing in 1960. Under the new atomic energy law, two other private utility groups and one public power district have also announced plans to build. Taken together, these five plants will add up to about 700,000 kilowatts of nuclear-electric capacity which will be put to commercial use.

The fact is that the pace of atomic development is increasing month by month and will probably accelerate more as a result of the Geneva atomic energy conference. The dollar-and-cents importance of efforts in this field to business generally is fast snow-balling.

A huge domestic market is already opening up. Manufacturers, electric-power companies, research institutions and other non-government organizations will spend approximately \$300,000,000 of their own

money in the next 4 years on atomic-energy research. (This is about 6 times the amount this group spent up to last year.) By 1963, the manufacture of components for reactor plants may be a \$700,000,000-a-year business or more. By 1965, more than \$7.5 billion will have been invested by government and industry together in reactor construction in the U.S.

A new export market is around the corner. A very often overlooked angle until recently in atomic energy development is that it will create large export markets for nuclear power plants and for research reactors. Recently, President Eisenhower indicated U. S. willingness to help smaller countries finance research reactors. More important for U. S. equipment and component makers will be exports of complete nuclear power plants to power-poor, fuel-poor smaller countries. Britain is already shooting for these markets and is ahead of the U. S. at this point. Russia, too, has entered the race.

Atomic power will be a major factor in plant location. Starting in the early 60's, A-power plants should prove a boon to high-cost power areas, where industrial development has as a result been hampered. New England, and particularly the fuel-poor areas of the South and West, will become more attractive as locations for new plants. At the same time, producers of aluminum, magnesium, chlorine, caustic soda, graphite, etc., should find it easier to expand, since they depend on low-cost, large volume power. However, the development of very low cost power, as needed in aluminum production, may not come within the next ten years.

Impact on the chemical and drug industry will be particularly heavy. "Cold sterilization" of drugs at lower cost has already been accomplished and the Food and Drug Administration has recently approved a number of cold-sterilized items for commercial sale. Tracer techniques are being used to learn more about vitamins and drugs. Radioactive products are already proving of great value for inedical research and for general diagnosis. (Their use in therapy other than for cancer has been disappointing thus far.)

Fission products will probably become a source for high temperature heat to compete with electrothermal techniques for process industries. Even more important, "triggering" of chemical reactions by radiation techniques will be possible.

Atomic power for transportation is not far off. You probably won't be driving an atom powered car YOUR BUSINESS IN AN EXPANDING ROOMS

for many a year to come - but atomic propulsion for commercial ships and possibly planes may be closer than many expect. Originally, estimates placed these developments at least 10 years away. Now, it appears certain that the first nuclear-propelled merchant ship will be a reality within 5 years. While this may be mainly a "show-case", chances are that others will follow quickly if it proves an economic success.

A-power for planes faces tougher technical probletts and the military will make first use of it. However, even for this use of A-power, the original estimate of "at least ten years off" may be overly conservative. It depends on how fast the basic research – which is underway now – leads to solution of the technical problems.

#### "Automation"

Many businessmen are objecting to this term, arguing it's an attempt to overdramatize something that has been going on for years. But they are only partly right. New types of controls—electronic, hydraulic and electro-mechanical—are making new types of mechanization possible in the office, warehouse, factory and retail store.

Description: In technical terms the real advance is the refinement of "feedback" control that enables machines to make self-adrustments. For instance, a production machine can thus keep product quality uniform despite changes in raw material, tool sharpness and other operating conditions.

Overambitious publicity - often misleading - has belped create confusion about what "automation" means and what it will bring. Future Institute Staff Reports will bring you the complete details that are necessary for a clear understanding of this complex and frequently controversial development. But looking at the next 10 years, here is a capsule picture of what's ahead;

Fully automatic factories are not around the corner—but "islands of automation" are. In some fields, of course, full automation will never be practical. But as equipment makers and buyers learn more about the applications of "feedback" controls, automatic handling and transfer devices, etc., partial automation, will prove to be practical and "islands of automation" will be commonplace in a wide variety of industries. For most companies, this will eventually mean the elimination of manual inspection and

handling of materials between machines - something which is already taking place on a partial basis in many plants and offices.

The most radical changes will, of course, show up in new plants where facilities can be planned to make full use of controls and automatic machinery.

Potentially, electronic computers will have the greatest impact during the next 10 years in many companies. They will enable a company to process its payroll with a fraction of the time and labor now required. More important, up-to-the-minute inventory figures will be available at all times and problems of sales analysis will be licked with computers. Executives will be provided with management control figures – and promptly – that can't be obtained at any cost with conventional equipment.

But there's a question about how fast this will come – particularly for the average concern. Quite a few of the big companies are now installing large general-purpose computers. However, these include experimental installations and some have already been labeled "failures" so far as immediately usable benefits are concerned.

Observation: Back of the problem is the fact that computers were developed originally to handle scientific and engineering problems. Development of efficient commercial applications has come along much slower and has involved entirely different problems. Generally, commercial applications (at least for small and medium-size companies) require scaled-down variations of the machines that are now becoming available to the large corporations. Such machines are being developed and should be available within the next few years. From that point on new developments will come rapidly.

Tillestrotios: Several manufacturers plan to offer department stores a new electronic sales accounting system. It will solve problems of keeping track of sales and inventories. Complete records of each sale will be transmitted direct from the cash register to an electronic computer via a ticker tape arrangement on the register.

Similarly, records of incoming goods will go directly by tape from adding and accounting machines to the computer. The computer will keep an up-to-date inventory account.

The computer will compare inventory with sales at any given time — and be able to feed the results into

a teletype-li be prepared

problems wat least seven Most of the stage. How the way to the wider use in

illustration ment being

for many a year to come — but atomic propulsion for commercial ships and possibly planes may be closer than many expect. Originally, estimates placed these developments at least 10 years away. Now, it appears certain that the first nuclear-propelled merchant ship will be a reality within 5 years. While this may be mainly a "show-case", chances are that others will follow quickly if it proves an economic success.

A-power for planes faces tougher technical problems and the military will make first use of it. However, even for this use of A-power, the original estimate of "at least ten years off" may be overly conservative. It depends on how fast the basic research—which is underway now—leads to solution of the technical problems.

#### "Automation"

Many businessmen are objecting to this term, arguing it's an attempt to overdramatize something that has been going on for years. But they are only partly right. New types of controls—electronic, hydraulic and electro-mechanical—are making new types of mechanization possible in the office, warehouse, factory and retail store.

**Tobservation:** In technical terms the real advance is the refinement of "feedback" control that enables machines to make *self-adjustments*. For instance, a production machine can thus keep product quality uniform despite changes in raw material, tool sharpness and other operating conditions.

Overambitious publicity—often misleading—has helped create confusion about what "automation" means and what it will bring. Future Institute Staff Reports will bring you the complete details that are necessary for a clear understanding of this complex and frequently controversial development. But looking at the next 10 years, here is a capsule picture of what's ahead:

Fully automatic factories are not around the corner—but "islands of automation" are. In some fields, of course, full automation will never be practical. But as equipment makers and buyers learn more about the applications of "feedback" controls, automatic handling and transfer devices, etc., partial automation will prove to be practical and "islands of automation" will be commonplace in a wide variety of industries. For most companies, this will eventually mean the elimination of manual inspection and

handling of materials between machines — something which is already taking place on a partial basis in many plants and offices.

The most radical changes will, of course, show up in *new* plants where facilities can be planned to make full use of controls and automatic machinery.

Potentially, electronic computers will have the greatest impact during the next 10 years in many companies. They will enable a company to process its payroll with a fraction of the time and labor now required. More important, up-to-the-minute inventory figures will be available at all times and problems of sales analysis will be licked with computers. Executives will be provided with management control figures—and promptly—that can't be obtained at any cost with conventional equipment.

But there's a question about how fast this will come – particularly for the average concern. Quite a few of the big companies are now installing large general-purpose computers. However, these include experimental installations and some have already been labeled "failures" so far as immediately usable benefits are concerned.

Cobservation: Back of the problem is the fact that computers were developed originally to handle scientific and engineering problems. Development of efficient commercial applications has come along much slower and has involved entirely different problems. Generally, commercial applications (at least for small and medium-size companies) require scaled-down variations of the machines that are now becoming available to the large corporations. Such machines are being developed and should be available within the next few years. From that point on new developments will come rapidly.

partment stores a new electronic sales accounting system. It will solve problems of keeping track of sales and inventories. Complete records of each sale will be transmitted direct from the cash register to an electronic computer via a ticker tape arrangement on the register.

Similarly, records of incoming goods will go directly by tape from adding and accounting machines to the computer. The computer will keep an up-to-date inventory account.

The computer will compare inventory with sales at any given time – and be able to feed the results into

a teletypebe prepare

problems vat least see Most of the stage. However, the way to wider use

illustration ment being

RESEARCH INSTITUTE

achines — something a a partial basis in

of course, show up be planned to make nachinery.

ters will have the 10 years in many company to process ime and labor now the-minute invental times and proced with computers. nanagement control it be obtained at ment.

how fast this will ge concern. Quite low installing large ever, these include ome have already immediately usable

m is the fact that ally to handle sci. Development of has come along irely different probations (at least for es) require scaled-that are now becorporations. Such d should be availarom that point on dly.

s plan to offer desales accounting keeping track of cords of each sale ac cash register to tape arrangement

goods will go dicounting machines vill keep an up-to-

ntory with sales at ed the results into a teletype-like printer. On this machine reports will be prepared for all departments.  $\,$ 

Sobservation: Application of controls to warehousing problems will also be dramatic, but this too may be at least several years off for the average company. Most of the applications are still in the development stage. However, some current developments point the way to the type of installation that will come into wider use in the next ten years.

Willustration: It's technically possible, using equipment being perfected, to have orders transmitted

from the invoice-preparation machine direct to the warehouse stacks. Electronic controls would then release the proper amounts and types of goods, identified by order number, into a conveyor system. The various orders would be assembled at packing stations, where they would automatically check themselves against a packing-list copy of the invoice. Only the actual packing would still be done manually. Elements of such a completely automatic warehouse are already in experimental use by several companies, but no one has put them all together in a single routine installation.

#### Sources of Long-Range Forecasts

If you want to compare the various long-term business forecasts or obtain detailed figures that indicate prospects for growth of your industry, here is a list of the projections made in recent years:

JOINT COMMITTEE ON THE ECONOMIC REPORT: "Potential Economic Growth of the U.S. during the Next Decade", October 1954.

THE TWENTIETH CENTURY FUND: "America's Needs and Resources, A New Survey", 1955.

PALEY REPORT: "Resources for Freedom." A report to the President by the President's Materials Policy Commission. June, 1952.

COLM, GERHARD & YOUNG, MARILYN: "The American Economy in 1960." December, 1952.

DEPARTMENT OF ECONOMICS – McGRAW-HILL PUBLISHING COMPANY: "The American Economy, Prospects of Growth". 1954.

STANFORD RESEARCH INSTITUTE: "America's Demand for Wood, 1929-1975". Report to Weyerhaeuser Lumber Co., 1954.

HIRSCH, JULIUS: "Long-Term Forecast of Memorials and Related Business Activity." A report to Rock of Ages Corp., June, 1952.

July 5, 1955

General Benjamin W. Chidlaw Thompson Products Cleveland, Ohio

Dear Benny:

I am very sorry to hear that you decided to retire. However, I am very glad to learn that you have joined up with Fred Crawford's outfit.

I hope that your work brings you to Washington and that you will give me a ring so that we can get together.

Please give my very best to Fred.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

March 25, 1955

Mr. Winston L. Churchill 100-B E. Hillcrest Blvd. Inglewood, California

Dear Sir:

In reply to your letter of March 13, I am very sorry that I can give you no anecdotes about Joseph L. Cato. Naturally, I remember the LWF. I regret that I am unable to help you.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

100-B E. Hillcrest Blvd. Inglewood, Calif.

March 13, 1955

General Carl Spaatz 1522-34 St. N.W. Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir,

I hope I am not being presumptuous in asking a moment of your time in the reading and answering of this letter.

A list at my elbow reveals that you are an "Early Bird" and I am writing a biography on a co-member of the Early Birds organization with whom you may have been briefly acquainted.

I am wondering if you recall one Joseph L. Cato, inventor. If so, can you recall further any of his early accomplishments...the LWF "Owl", for instance? I have all the facts obtainable on his accomplishments and am specifically interested at this point in my pursuit...in anecdotes.

Frankly, I will be surprised if you remember Mr. Cato. He is one of the most reluctant people I have ever met to talk about himself or his accomplishments. Subsequently, his many great achievements in the field have been almost completely overlooked in our many books on the history of American aviation.

Thanks very much for whatever information you may have regarding Mr. Cato and for your time. Enclosed is my self-addressed envelope for your convenience.

Respectfully yours,

Hinston L. Churchile.
Winston L. Churchill

(Former Public Info. Spec., USAF)

March 25, 1955

Mr. Milton Coniff Tor Ridge South Mountain Road New City Rockland County, N.Y.

Dear Milt:

I have arranged with General Spaatz for the three of us to meet for luncheon at the Press Club at 1 p.m. on Wednesday, March 30th. We will then drive out to Bolling Field to do the interview. In the meantime, we can talk over its subject matter in detail.

I am looking forward to seeing you Wednesday. You are a nice guy to help us out so generously in our program.

Sincerely,

Alfred Friendly Assistant Managing Editor

AF: Jw

March 10, 1955

General Merian Cooper 1360 Monaco Drive Pacific Palisades, California

Dear Coop:

Enclosed please find a copy of a letter I am sending today to General Harmon.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

Enclosure

March 10, 1955

General E. P. Curtis Eastman Kodak Company 343 State Street Rochester 4, New York

Dear Ted:

In going over your itinerary for the European trip, I am sure that we will have a chance to get together for the visit to Sidi Bou-Said during the latter part of May. I will get in touch with Kodak Pathe as soon as I get over there, which should be sometime early in May.

I hope you will get to Washington before you take off in April.

Ruth joins me in sending love to Agnes and yourself.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

## EASTMAN KODAK COMPANY

GENERAL OFFICES
343 STATE STREET

ROCHESTER 4, N.Y.

TELEPHONE LOCUST 6000

March 3, 1955

General Carl Spaatz 1654 Avon Place N. W., Washington, D. C.

Dear Tooey:

Here is my European itinerary as of the present moment although the latter part of it may be subject to some change.

We are flying over on the 12th of April and will be in Paris until the 17th. From the 18th to 21st I will be in Spain and from the 22nd to the 28th in Italy. I will be at our factory in Stuttgart from approximately the 28th to the 3rd of May and in Paris from May 3rd until about the 12th. About that date I am planning to drive up to Brussels, the Hague and Copenhagen and may go over to Norway and Sweden for a few days. In any case, I will be back in London not later than May 28th and am sailing from there on the 4th of June.

If we can do our tour to Sidi Bou-Said it would probably be best for me during the latter part of my stay in Paris during May. In Paris we will be staying at the Plaza Athenee on the Avenue Montaigne but the surest way to reach me would be at Kodak Pathe, 39 Avenue Montaigne, Paris Vlll. In any case, let me know as soon as you can when you are going to be over there and do try to be in Paris while we are there as, among other things, we shall have to pay an official visit to M. Francis at the Coq Hardi.

Sincerely yours,

EPCurtis:C

Ted

February 3, 1955

Gen. J. Lawton Collins Room 2E 924 Pentagon Washington 25, D. C.

Dear Joe,

I am sending this letter with Colonel Robert W. Knight, United States Air Force Reserve.

I have known him for many years. He is leaving for Saigon to supervise air activities in Vietnam, Cambodia and Laos.

He is operating under the direction of the U. S. Overseas Mission for F. O. A. I believe his mission is also under the auspices of the Civil Aeronautics Authority and the State Department.

Recently Knight has been very effective on duty with the Air Force Inspection Division. He has an excellent background of svistion extending over many years.

I thought you might appreciate this note for your information in the many problems, particularly those concerning aviation, with which you may be confronted.

Sincerely,

Gen. Carl Speats

Paris January 25 th 1955

General Carl S P A A T Z NEWSWEEK 1229 National Press Building Washington 4 D.C.

Dear General,

Thank you so much for your kind letter. I am so grateful for the information you gave Monsieur de Lagarde.

In a month I'll be in New York too glad to see your marvellous country for the first time .I shall certainly come and pay you a visit in Washington.

Dear General, thank you again for your help and friendship.

My kindest regards to charming Mrs. Spaatz and you.

With my heartiest greetings

Jachuelee Gulados

21 Avenue des Peupliers
Villa M ntmorency
Paris 18-e

January 3, 1955

Mr. Cyril Clemens The Mark Twain Journal Kirkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Cyril Clemens:

With best wishes for a Happy New Year, I am

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

# MARK W TWAIN JOURNAL



1952 RECIPIENT OF MARK TWAIN GOLD MEDAL

"Beginning in early boyhood I have read virtually everything of Mark Twain's that has been published, and I have always been a great admirer of both the man and his works."

-Dwight D. Eisenhower to Cyril Clemens 29th September 1942

Summer, 1955

Price One Dollar

# THE MARK TWAIN JOURNAL

Formerly the Mark Twain Quarterly. Published since 1936 Kirkwood 22, Missouri

VOL. X

SUMMER, 1955

No.

Cyril Clemens, Editor-in-Chief

Best wishes for continuous achievement in perpetuating Mark Twain's memory.

—General Omar N. Bradley.

Subscription Rates: \$3.00 per year throughout the world. Advertising rates upon request.

#### CONTENTS

How Mark Twain Comments on Society Through Use of Folklore, Robert E. Bell	1
Mark Twain, Reader and Critic of Travel Literature, George H. Herrick	9
Charles Henry Smith, the Creator of Bill Arp, James E. Ginther	11
The Miscegenation Theme in Pudd'nhead Wilson, Thomas W. Ford	13
Mark Twain, Cable and the Philistine, Abe C. Ravitz and Norris Yates	14
Samuel Gompers: Labor Pioneer, Crusader, and Statesman, Joseph C. Carter	15
Beautiful Marianne Moore, Verse, Grace Baer Hollowell	25
Mountain Man, Verse, Elsie H. Lacy	25
Dalphe and Apollo, Verse, Adele Mehl Burnett	26
Gorgeous Masque, Verse, Elizabeth Reeves Humphreys	26
To My Dog After Income Tax, Verse, Corinne Sherman	26
Fair Warning, Verse, Ben Greenwald	26
Dandelion, Verse, Charles E. Frazier	26
How I Wrote My First Book, Rafael Sabatini	27
Uncle Josh and the Traveling Salesman, Wiley Thornton	28

# How Mark Twain Comments on Society Through Use of Folklore

Robert E. Bell

In Walter Blair's "Introduction" to Native American Humor, he says that the term "American humor" means "humor which is American in that it has an emphatic 'native quality'—a quality imparted by its subject matter and its technique." Following, he quotes an English critic who was hailing the beginning of American humor, said:

"Humor is national when it is impregnated with the convictions, customs, and associations of a nation. . . . National American humor must be all this transferred into shapes which produce laughter. . . . "<sup>2</sup>

It would be a tremendous undertaking to trace the development of native American humor, examining it to determine to what degree it is valid in light of the foregoing statement. It would require a patient excavation into the strata of early literary attempts where oral traditions of folklore were first seized upon as material for humorous treatment. More difficult still would be the attempt to define the influences of early folkways on this writing, seeking to discover dominant patterns linking one region to another or one decade to another. This difficulty arises for many reasons, the principal one being the inexhaustible quantity of folklore and legendry which muse be examined.

Fortunately, certain literary artists, with careful selectivity, have managed to preserve disappearing folk histories by adding the color to them that lifts them from the gray pages of folklore anthologies and from the impermanence of fireside conversations. Often with a keen ear for dialect, a literary artist inserts verbatim accounts in his work. Or, more important sociologically and historically, he uses the flavor of folk material, interpreting the psychology, the personality, of a region in terms of its vast case history.

Thus, the modern student of American

folklore and humor owes a debt of gratitude to Mark Twain, for he did both. The difficulty in tracing the influence of folklore patterns and techniques on the work of Mark Twain is not as great as with other writers. First, he possessed an active interest in folklore, as is seen in his use of folk legends as themes of stories or as whole passages in his longer works. Second, he knew the Mississippi Valley and the American frontier at first-hand, and it was in this part of the country where most of what we know as American folklore was in the making even while he was writing.

The emphasis here, however, goes beyond the obvious usage of folklore in his work into an attempt to discover the more subtle influences of certain dominant folklore trends in his interpretation of characters. This influence manifests itself in two ways, one being a deliberate patterning of a trend and the other a total effect with its roots in a folk technique, both arriving at length at an interpretation of society. The latter direction is more interesting, for it gives a deeper insight into the nature of his humor and imagination. It shows his ability to take his knowledge of human nature and color it with just the right proportion of incongruity to make it humorous or, on the other hand, enough irony to make it bitter and unhappy.

First, though, it is necessary to decide just what are the dominant patterns in the study of American folklore. The term folklore can appropriately be applied to those customs and traditions that filter from generation to generation so as to become a part of the psychology of a group of people or those legends that lend an eradicable flavor to the history of a region. From this vast body of material one must select the most representative and most illustrative items, keeping in mind their relation to the region and their interrelation. Then it is necessary

to follow an outline or arrangement to discover paterns or trends. This last seems the most important, for trends in the customs and manners of a group of people tell most about them. If the accounts of these trends are developed haphazardly, they lose direction and become static reports interesting only to the limited number to whom they pertain.

Therefore, for purposes of this study, I have set up what I consider the three central patterns of Mississippi Valley folklore. They are rather arbitrary groupings, possibly overlapping and perhaps inappropriately labeled, but they provide a satisfactory starting point. They can be outlined as follows: 1. the folk-hero pattern, 2. the tall tale pattern, and 3. the supernatural pattern.

#### I.

#### The Folk-Hero Pattern

Perhaps the most important pattern in American folklore is the folk-hero pattern, which illustrates the attempt of Americans to supply themselves with a mythology. This pattern may be divided roughly into two parts: heroes real and imaginary and tall talk, or backwoods boasting. The significance of certain real heroes of American history and their influence on the imaginative development of the country need hardly be dwelt on. These heroes, regardless of their original moral standing, began by inspiring awe and admiration among their associates. By word of mouth and by a few obsolete contemporary accounts, their deeds took on a greater and greater proportion of the fantastic. The western badman, the Mississippi keelboatman, and the lumberjack did, in fact, become the bases for outstanding parent myths, which had scores and scores of backwoods progeny, lesser deities in the form of village or county heroes. Jean LaFitte, the pirate of Barataria Peninsula, Colonel Plug, boatwrecker on the Mississippi,4 and Jesse James, the Missouri outlaw, are evidences of this process of myth breeding from actual

Mark Twain was undoubtedly impressed by these stories, as is evidenced by his long account of the ruthless Murel in Life on the Mississippi. In Roughing It, he devotes nearly three chapters to a record of an outlaw called Slade. Twain seemed to favor this cool, cruel type of desperado, a gentleman on the surface, who would smile elegantly and becomingly as he shot someone through the head. He half-admired, half-condenned their reticent strength, their cunning, and their worldliness.

It doesn't seem altogether unlikely that Mark Twain drew upon this folk-hero type for his riverboat pilots. At least there is reasonable ship-to-shore connection, for he makes his riverboat pilots swagger around, always conscious of their semi-legendary social position. He makes them gay, glittering, surrounded by a peculiar type of grandeur and worldliness. He actually creates a sort of legendary atmosphere in which to manipulate them. In his *Notebook* he admits their divinity when he says: "The romance of boating is gone now. In Hannibal the steamboatman is no longer a god. . . . "5 In the old days on the Mississippi delta, if one person found another behaving above his means, ordering things he could not afford, he told him: "Stop actin' like you think you a pilot."6 In Life on the Mississippi, Twain tells how this splendid existence penetrated even to the boiler room, when he gives the account of the fireman on the middle door of the Aleck Scott at the Negro ball in New Orleans. Also, in the same work, Twain tells of the grand return of the steamboat "striker" among his boyhood companions, how with his money and hair oil he could "cut out" every boy in the village, since no girl could withstand his charms.

Actually these pilots were ordinary men who had become expert in what at that time was a somewhat unusual occupation. Twain, with his native gift for firm and vigorous narrative and an inborn eloquence, presented them in his writings in all the glory of fictitious figures. It is not to be denied, however, that he presented them faithfully. He wrote

about them a his combinate crete descrip he succeeded reality and r always easy strength.

In the acclegendary he ary historiar terial for A could see the Crockett and parts they p how they con those who he imaginative h tales of thei important hiddreams of the them.

His riverbo part of the birth to a my ture. The tal and this time backwoodsma approach to past. Conceale ging framewo are the subtle life that tend the fly-specket comedians.

Mark Twai tive, brawling undertone, ever posedly real p as he was fase outlaw types Natchez Trac he provided a nantly mascul brute strength Against this members of the for an alien a rivalries by incoming was undoubtedly impressed as is evidenced by his long uthless Murel in Life on the longhing It, he devotes nearly to a record of an outlaw ain seemed to favor this cool, sperado, a gentleman on the luld smile elegantly and beshot someone through the lmired, half-condemned their h, their cunning, and their

em altogether unlikely that ew upon this folk-hero type pilots. At least there is a to-shore connection, for he ooat pilots swagger around, of their semi-legendary He makes them gay, glitterby a peculiar type of graniness. He actually creates a ry atmosphere in which to . In his Notebook he admits hen he says: "The romance gone now. In Hannibal the s no longer a god. . . . . . Th the Mississippi delta, if one another behaving above his things he could not afford, top actin' like you think you fe on the Mississippi, Twain plendid existence penetrated ler room, when he gives the fireman on the middle door ott at the Negro ball in New in the same work, Twain and return of the steamboat g his boyhood companions, oney and hair oil he could boy in the village, since no stand his charms.

ese pilots were ordinary men e expert in what at that time t unusual occupation. Twain, gift for firm and vigorous in inborn eloquence, presented tings in all the glory of fictit is not to be denied, however, ted them faithfully. He wrote about them as he saw them, though, and with his combination of highly accurate and concrete description with magnified overflow, he succeeded in cutting the tow lines of reality and rising into the fanciful, which is always easy to associate with provess or strength.

In the accounts of the backwoods semilegendary heroes, Mark Twain with a literary historian's perception recognized material for America's own crude epic. He could see the value of such figures as Davy Crockett and Mike Fink, the significant parts they played in frontier development, how they contributed to the background of those who heralded a new era in America's imaginative history. He realized that the tall tales of their remarkable prowess offered important hints about the thoughts and the dreams of the American folk who created them.

His riverboat pilots and captains were a part of the American frontier which gave birth to a mythology and a humorous literature. The tales and anecdotes of this locale and this time preserved the fantasics of the backwoodsman which is the country's nearest approach to the dignity of the legendary past. Concealed in an earthy, brawling, bragging framework of tall old stories and jests are the subtle-witted undertones of frontier life that tend to raise it above the level of the fly-specked pages of the so-called literary comedians.

Mark Twain's works employ these primitive, brawling heroes in a wide margin of undertone, even when he is writing of supposedly real persons in real situations. Just as he was fascinated by the quasi-legendary outlaw types and bawdy primitives of the Natchez Trace and Arkansas river towns, he provided a vast background of a dominantly masculine society with emphasis on brute strength and a rude code of justice. Against this background moved the lusty members of the society which had contempt for an alien and effete civilization, settling rivalries by individual combat. His accounts, while written with an apparent relish for

gruesome detail, always managed to contain a humorous undertone, which often sceped into direct expression. In *Roughing It*, he employed this technique best, when he wrote of Virginia City, where virility and social prestige were gauged by the number of murders one had to his credit.

In a sense Mark Twain seemed to share the sentiments of the saloon-keeper who said: "Mr. Popper is a man who makes himself at home with you at once. Why, he had hardly been in here five minutes before he drew out his six-shooter and began shooting holes through the pictures, the lamp, and other little notions about the place, just as familiarly as though he and I had been boys together. Nothing cold and distant about him! He's a charming fellow—charming."

Twain somehow extracted the total essences of these frontier hydrahead legends and combined them in the creation of America's nearest epic, Huckleberry Finn. Huck Finn is not a folk-hero exactly, a marauding outlaw or a half-horse half-alligator Mike Fink, but he is a boy in whose world heroes are at home. This is the important thing about him, for his belief is hard to shake. Experiences take on a whimsical aspect for him and are set down in epic fashion with little or no comment. Always there is a wistful admiration for the boasting flatboatmen and even the strong, unhappy Sherburnes and Grangerfords. There is a knight errant's protectiveness in his dealings with the Wilks girls. And when Tom Sawyer reenters the story, Huck willingly embarks with him on the complicated scheme to free Jim in true Sir Walter Scott fashion. In fact, when Tom comes back into the story, Huck stands willingly aside, acknowledging Tom's closer speaking acquaintance with heroes and knowledge of the best authorities.

The heroes of Tom and Huck, the knights and the pirates, are important and good, but only in concept. For the heroes they emulate are the heroes Twain attacks in A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court. In fact, when Tom strays too far over the line into the real hero world, causing his games to involve the dignity of real persons,

he becomes an imposter to the nostalgic world of make-believe. He becomes, with different motives, of course, a sort of Murel who frees slaves after they have gained their freedom. By taking advantage of the ignorance of his companions, he begins to reveal the element of decay that characterizes the frontier hero, that makes Davy Crockett the heroic version of the poor white. He begins to take the hero idea too seriously, departing from the comic imagination that both created and destroyed the frontier hero.

In A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, Twain describes the folk-hero in operation, oppressor of the lower classes, up holder of ignorance and superstitution. The same Sir Sagramor that Tom might possibly imagine himself to be receives the greatest indignity Tom's creator can conceive by being hurled from his horse by a lasso. Again, the Knights of the Round Table pedal to the Boss's rescue on bicycles. There arises from all this the unfailing humor of deliberate anachronism, but Twain's purpose was beyond simple fun. He believed, as his Notebook states, that when beliefs and institutions are shown to be ridiculous they perish.11 When the Boss arrives on the scene, he finds that the heroes are taken seriously, and he tries to shake this code by having the Grail seekers advertise stove polish and prophylactic tooth brushes. Te arrives a few centuries too early, however, and can't compete with a group of people who are unwilling to part with a system of beliefs that enslaves

The Boss's overthrow of chivalry is an indirect judgment on some of the members of the hierarchy of frontier heroes and their particular methods of enslavement, their ignorances and superstitions. Their prototypes can be found in the river towns and aboard the steamboats in his river novels—slave-holders, slave-runners, gamblers, and mob leaders. They are the ones who take up the game where Tom Sawyer leaves off.

II.
The Tall-Tale Pattern
Of the tall tales Dorothy Dondore says:

"Product of the frontier they are unmistakably, fruit of the story-telling seed first planted in the lazy campfire vigils, sprouted in the marvels told to visitors by loungers at the posts, matured in the tale-swapping evenings at the 'doggery,' on court days, or during the listless drifting down the river. Exaggerated in their general tendencies, racy in their characterization, redolent of 'he soil in their speech, they smack indubitably of the teeming forests and mould-piled bottoms, the boisterous life and bare cabins, the free and easy manners and rude habits of the pioneers of civilization. Sometimes the humor lies in facetious elaboration of the gawkiness and boastfulness of the rustics, sometimes in slapstick burlesque."12

The tall tale differs in frontier folklore from the stories about grotesque and comic heroes in that it is deliberate and calculated to create a direct response in a brief time. It may involve the folk-hero, but usually confines itself to an anecdote about the hero. As said before, the folk-hero legends grew up by a slow aggregative process, taking different coloring in all sections touched by the hero. The tall tale was naturally subject to these same variations, but where the strength of the folk legend lay in its quantity, its cataloguing of prodigious achievements, the strength of the tall tale lay in its brevity, its sudden awareness of exaggeration, and its shock of incredulity. Also, the material of the tall tale was usually the life immediately at hand. Thus the tall tale was perhaps closer to the pulse-beat of the frontier than the hero-legends, which failed to involve their perpetuators further than wishful identification.

The tall tale, on the other hand, could involve its teller in one of its variations; it could receive additional coloring, in fact, from its teller—color which would be swept along, substituting for a phrase, statement, or a whole description. Consequently, many of these tales underwent an almost literary polish without ever being written down. In fact, when they were written down, they lost

immediately the born from spo became just of and-run busine

The elements
these tall tales
the teller, his
The tall tale do
at the same tim
truth and untr
times imported
the listeners. Or
or exaggerated
credible and mo
account was be
prise could be
The actual te

as varied as the manner, the slumently irrelevant silent reflective. The trick of stone, which gas of talking to hon the listener.

In this trick of face Mark Tw American devel type of story thand has remain says in A Tree

"Fabulous must have a relief from some compen midst of bign land of plent tale also fitte and boosting vantages of a ing the your great verities pose of the ri of the comic

These manne were devices wh and a straight, is a rural Amer

frontier they are the story-telling the lazy campfire marvels told to at the posts, mapping evenings at rt days, or during wn the river. Exeneral tendencies, erization, redolent beech, they smack eming forests and the boisterous life ree and easy manof the pioneers of the humor lies in of the gawkiness the rustics, someelesque."12

in frontier folklore grotesque and comic erate and calculated onse in a brief time. k-hero, but usually edote about the hero. -hero legends grew tive process, taking sections touched by as naturally subject ons, but where the end lay in its quanprodigious achievehe tall tale lay in its reness of exaggerancredulity. Also, the was usually the life hus the tall tale was ilse-beat of the fronnds, which failed to rs further than wish-

e other hand, could e of its variations; nal coloring, in fact, hich would be swept a phrase, statement, Consequently, many t an almost literary ng written down. In itten down, they lost immediately their clusory polish, the polish born from spontaneity of expression, and became just other items in the serious hitand-run business of literature.

The elements which combined to make up these tall tales revealed a great deal about the teller, his associates, his surroundings. The tall tale dealt frankly with marvels but at the same time balanced delicately between truth and untruth. The miracle was sometimes imported to surroundings familiar to the listeners. Or an actual event was boosted, or exaggerated, becoming in this case more credible and more applauded. An eye-witness account was best of all, for the sudden surprise could be withheld till the last minute.

The actual techniques of the tall tale are as varied as the tales themselves. The serious manner, the slurring of the point, the apparently irrelevant remarks, and especially the silent reflective pause were central devices. The trick of slow timing andthe confident tone, which gave the teller the appearance of talking to himself, combined to sneak up on the listener.

In this trick of the slow fuse and the poker face Mark Twain saw a characteristically American development, or, to be exact, a type of story that was "created in America and has remained at home." B. A. Botkin says in A Treasury of American Folklore:

"Fabulous invention and exaggeration must have afforded the pioneers some relief from monotony and loneliness, some compensation for littleness in the midst of bigness and for privation in a land of plenty. On the frontier, the tall tale also fitted into the need of booming and boosting, or exaggerating the advantages of a place; the code of teaching the young and inexperienced the great verities of generous untruths; the pose of the ringtailed roarers; the myth of the comic demigod." <sup>13</sup>

These mannerisms of frontier tall tales were devices which depended on a dry style and a straight, dead-pan face. The dead pan is a rural American trait bred by a peculiar

combination of backwoods optimism and stoicism. It is a trait designed to make even the most fantastic yarns drop several notches toward credulity. So with the scene of the tale close at hand and the circumstances fairly believable, the dead-pan technique is sure fire. For example, a hunter is telling about being chased by a Sioux war party of fifty. The bullets and arrows tore into the dirt all around him. At length when they were almost upon him, he rode into the mouth of a deep canyon. He believed that he was safe, but soon he discovered that he had ridden into a dead-end canyon with perpendicular walls. The only way out was the way he had entered, but the Indians had discovered him and had him hopelessly trapped. The hunter here leans back in his chair, closes his eyes, and starts stroking his whiskers. Apparently he has finished the story, so one of the listeners asks: "What happened then?" The hunter, with his eyes still drowsily closed, taking a fresh chew of tobacco, whispers: "They killed me, b'God." 14

All of Mark Twain's characters are tellers of tall tales at one time or another and for one reason or another. Huckleberry Finn was a master of the tall tale, using it pragmatically but finding in it, too, a sort of artistic pleasure. With his gift for piling outrageous fiction atop questionable fact, he would have been qualified to take a place on the bench with the adult liars of the Sazerac Club of Austin, Nevada, or the Burlington, Wisconsin, Liars Club. But, as Lionel Trilling says, Huck Finn's lies would have been out of place in any adult world where ultimate lies are told. Once, Huck experiments with an unhappy adult lie and succeeds in cutting across the forbidden lines that protect human dignity and personal affection. Mark Twain was in sympathy with his characters whenever they confined themselves to the tall tales that protected then. and their moral development. Huck's tall tales never seem too far from the slightly comical world of make-believe, even when he lies for serious reasons. His effortless creation, under pressure, of fictitious families and circumstances is funny enough to snap

the reader's attention away from the serious business of the story for an instant. His dead-pan intimacy with these dreamed-up events makes the events into tall tales without the last shock of surprise.

The duke and the king are, on the other hand, representatives of an adult world that lies to itself eternally. Their tall tales are empty of any pretense to make-believe. They represent an alien and materialistic society, ready to sell anything or anybody. Human dignity doesn't exist for them. Their schemes are funny at times, but this humor must be associated with the sick, morbid humor that laughs at freaks and insanity. They are clowns with unwashed bodies and unhealthy minds. The king's testimony at the camp meeting in Parkville is one of the purest examples of the tall tale in Mark Twain, but the author's judgment seems to shift here. He has already revealed the king and duke as frauds, and his disgust seems to go beyond them to the people who allow them-selves to be defrauded. The whole section which deals with the duke and king seems to be an arraignment of an ignorant and impetuous society which allows itself to listen to tall tales in pathetic belief.

Likewise, in the Connecticut Yankee he rages against a society which throws itself on the mercy of charlatans like Merlin, basing its whole structure on the tall stories of the chivalry which keeps it enchained. In his Notebook he wrote:

"There are shams and shams; there are frauds and frauds, but the transparentest of all is the sceptered one. We see monarchs meet and go through solemn ceremonies, farces, with straight countenances; but it is not possible to imagine them meeting in private and not laughing in each other's faces." <sup>15</sup>

Again, he sees the Church as a propagator of enslaving tall tales, and his satire grows more bitter. Throughout the *Connecticut Yankee* he upbraids the Church for converting a nation of men to a nation of worms. The Yankee says in one place:

" . . . then the Church came to the front, with an ax to grind; and she was wise, subtle, and knew more than one way to skin a cat-or a nation; she invented 'divine right of things,' and propped it all around, brick by brick, with the Beatitudes - wrenching them from their good purpose to make them fortify an evil one; she preached (to the commoner) humility, obedience to superiors, the beauty of self-sacrifice; she preached (to the commoner) meekness under insult; preached (still to the commoner, always to the commoner) patience, meekness of spirit, non-resistance under oppression; and she introduced heritable ranks and aristocracies, and taught all the Christian populations of the earth to bow down to them and worship them."16

This bitterness reaches a climax in the end of the book with the Church's interdict. The Church's paralyzing influence over the Yankee's superimposed nineteenth century civilization culminates in one of the blackest and most apocalyptical scenes in fiction—the battle of the sand-belt.

So, as in the case of the folk-hero, Mark Twain's attitude was divided about the tall tale. He appreciated the spirit that created and propagated the tall tale and the folk hero, but he understood the danger of allowing these particular forms of folklore to become governing factors of institutions rather than simple genetic factors.

# III. The Supernatural Pattern

Supernaturalism is in many ways a monfied form of the tall tale, depending on the grotesque and fanciful to keep its machinery in motion. It differs, however, in that it involves more than exaggeration and trick narration; it involves fear. Consequently, its influence over the imagination is twofold, and there is a resultant ambivalence in regard to the supernatural.

There is little in the natural world incapable of being converted into superstitious lore. There is animal lore, a too many othe beyond the har bandry there is known which is aspect of death

The slavery upkeep of thes improvement of witcheraft in the busy in building spirit world, an edge of forewartheir beliefs to Mark Twain's perstitions and from his associated girls who took of the colored boy

Thus Huck I walking encycle spells, and incevil consequence charms; they doodle-bug to low, dark sound

"... and of a cricket could locate, ticking of a c the bed's hea meant that s bered. Then rose on the n by a fainter distance....

When Huck he goes through counter-charms

> "... Prett ing up my sh and it lit in could budge didn't need ar was an awful me some bad most shook t

he Church came to the to grind; and she was knew more than one -or a nation; she inright of things,' and round, brick by brick, ides - wrenching them purpose to make them one; she preached (to humility, obedience to auty of self-sacrifice: the commoner) meek-: preached (still to the ys to the comments of spirit, non-resistto the commoner) ression; and she introanks and aristocracies, e Christian populations bow down to them and

reaches a climax in the ith the Church's interdict. alyzing influence over the posed nineteenth century ates in one of the blackest ptical scenes in fiction — and-belt.

se of the folk-hero, Mark vas divided about the tall ed the spirit that created he tall tale\_and the folk stood the danger of allowlar forms of folklore to factors of institutions e genetic factors.

#### III. rnatural Pattern

i is in many ways a moundall tale, depending on the iful to keep its machinery rs, however, in that it inexaggeration and trick plyes fear. Consequently, he imagination is twofold, tant ambivalence in regard

in the natural world inpriverted into superstitious lore. There is the language of the flowers, animal lore, anatomical superstitions, and too many other varieties to mention. But beyond the harmless beliefs of herb and husbandry there is the fearful world of the unknown which is always associated with some aspect of death.

The slavery class was responsible for the upkeep of these beliefs and especially for improvement on them, adding European witcheraft in the bargain. They were always busy in building up defenses against the spirit world, and from their universal knowledge of forewarnings and omens, they passed their beliefs to the children of their owners. Mark Twain's remarkable catalogue of superstitions and witchlore came, of course, from his association with Negroes, the Negro girls who took care of him in his infancy and the colored boys with whom he played.

Thus Huck Finn and Tom Sawyer became walking encyclopedias of charms, portents, spells, and incantations. They understand evil consequences of improperly worked charms; they can remove warts, induce a doodle-bug to prophesy, and interpret the low, dark sounds of the night:

"... and now the tiresome chirping of a cricket that no human ingenuity could locate, began. Next the ghastly ticking of a death-watch on the wall at the bed's head made Tom shudder — it meant that somebody's days were numbered. Then the howl of a far-off dog rose on the night air, and was answered by a fainter howl from a remoter distance...." 17

When Huck accidentally kills a spider, he goes through a series of the most powerful counter-charms he knows:

"... Pretty soon a spider went crawling up my shoulder and I flipped it off and it lit in the candle; and before I could budge it was all shriveled up. I didn't need anybody to tell me that that was an awful bad sign and would fetch me some bad luck, so I was scared and most shook the clothes off of me. I got

up and turned around in my tracks three times and crossed my breast every time; and then I tied up a little lock of my hair with a thread to keep witches away. But I hadn't no confidence. You do that when you've lost a horseshoe that you've found, instead of nailing it up over the door, but I hadn't ever heard anybody say it was any way to keep off bad luck when you'd killed a spider." 18

Mark Twain renders these accounts, these observations, carefully, almost tenderly, for there is an obvious nostalgia in this aspect of the boys world he knew. Huck and Tom are in a sense visionaries still familiar with the elfin symbols of life, still midget-near the life pelt of the earth. Superstition, even when it is coupled with fear, is really a sort of weapon with which they must come to terms with maturity and approach a world of adults, where good luck and bad luck are always within knife-swapping distance.

Nor does he condemn Jim for his superstitious fears and ghostly apprehensions. He reserves judgment of a race that has its only refuge from oppression in an elaborate superstitious code where abundance of evil presupposes abundance of good.

He becomes indignant when he sees a class of people destroy itself by superstitious beliefs. There is a cold disdain in his report of poor white religion, or, as somebody referred to it, "backwoods hysteria and boozy repentance." In *Huckleberry Finn* there is an almost satisfied tone in his description of the king's defrauding the congregation at the camp meeting." <sup>19</sup>

In A Connecticut Yankee, the hero witnesses all varieties of superstitious experience. He sees witchburnings, demon-purgings of castles, and all manner of inconceivable religious hoaxes. Over all, there is a desperate pity for the ignorant and spellbound peasants, but no pity is reserved for the ones who, having taken advantage of enlightenment, use superstitious fears and beliefs to enslave the population. The Boss has one such magician ridden out of town

#### MARK TWAIN JOURNAL

on a rail; he fights enchantment with higher enchantment at the court of Morgan Le Fay. Sold as a slave, he witnesses unspeakable excesses of ignorance and mob violence.

In the beginning of the book, the picture is bright, and the ignorance of the people is often a source of humor. Little by little, by episodic development, the story of ignorance reaches darkest depression and climaxes in the fearful twilight of chivalry scene. The Church has won, for, in the absence of the Boss, it has in a fraction of the time it took to build civilization destroyed it. The short conversation between Clarence and the Boss about the interdict tells a story older than the Inquisition and newer than the poor white camp meetings.

"'When those knights come . . . our schools, our colleges, our vast workshops . . . will empty themselves and go over to the enemy. Did you think you had educated the superstition out of those people?'

'I certainly did think it.'

Well, then, you may unthink it. They stood every strain easily — until the Interdict. Since then, they merely put on a bold outside—at heart they are quaking. Make up your mind to it—when the armies come, the mask will fall.' "20"

One asks, after all these comments have been passed what Twain's idea of solution was. There are several, but three are directly voiced in his works. In his Notebook he writes:

"By the absence of an irreverent press, Europe for a thousand years has existed merely for the advantage of half a dozen seventh-rate families called Monarchs, and some hundreds of riffraff sarcastically called Nobles. Our papers have one peculiarity — it is American — their irreverence. May they never lose and never modify it. They are irreverent toward pretty much everything, but where they laugh one good king to death, they laugh a thousand

cruel and infamous shams and superstitions into the grave, and the account is squared. Irreverence is the champion of liberty and its only sure defense."<sup>21</sup>

This statement carries with it the author's underlying faith in his Tom Sawyers and Huckleberry Finns—their unconscious irreverence and their power to provoke laughter. One must laugh at their faith in horseshoes, spunk water, and hair balls; yet one doesn't laugh at the witchburnings in A Connecticut Yankee and The Mysterious Stranger. One is the problem, the other, the solution.

Again, Twain tries to show the value of knowledge as a solution. In *A Connecticut Yankee*, in the message to The Honorable The Commander of the Insurgent Chivalry of England the Boss writes:

"... We know your strength—fiveand-twenty thousand knights. Therefore you have no chance—none whatever. Reflect: we are well equipped, well fortified, we number 54. Fifty-four what? Men? No, minds—the capablest in the world; a force against which mere animal might may no more hope to prevail than may the idle waves of the sea hope to prevail against the granite barriers of England..."<sup>22</sup>

He shows the fulfillment of this threat, the destruction of the massed chivalry of England, but he likewise shows the precarious position of knowledge—a handful of minds behind a few strands of barbed wire. He shows that knowledge can be no sudden thing, else superstition in the form of a Merlin disguised as a hag will slip into the ranks of enlightenment and cast a spell that will take thirteen centuries to undo.

Last, he presents individual moral integrity based on the highest good and highest knowledge of which a person is capable.

"Training — training is everything; training is all there is to a person. We speak of nature; it is folly; there is no such thing as nature; what we call by

(Continued on page 24)

That Mark Twa of travel literatur scured by his fame books and as a nove and read widely in ture. Concerning h said in his later ye

I like history curious facts science.1

Actually travel acterested him through the early days when the Hannibal Journits articles on Hamany. It is possible was influenced by and Lardner Gibb Valley of the Amabook of the 1850s the impetus for him on the Paul Jones.

Even a casual r Abroad, Life on the ing the Equator wi interest in other t works contain ma from miscellaneous it is likely that hi extensive than indic grettably, many of ently included mer commentaries on se valuable insight int

In the latter half he quoted many pi umes on the Holy he said:

Nearly every be and its lake desting beautiful. No—n forward as that. sion intentionally

shams and superstie, and the account is e is the champion of sure defense."<sup>21</sup>

ies with it the author's his Tom Sawyers and their unconscious irower to provoke laughat their faith in horsend hair balls; yet one itchburnings in A ConThe Mysterious Stranblem, the other, the

s to show the value of ion. In A Connecticut age to The Honorable the Insurgent Chivalry writes:

your strength—fiveid knights. Therefore ce—none whatever, lequipped, well forti-4. Fifty-four what? the capablest in the inst which mere animore hope to prevail vaves of the sea hope the granite barriers

illment of this threat, he massed chivalry of kewise shows the prenowledge—a handful of trands of barbed wire. ledge can be no sudden ion in the form of a hag will slip into the it and cast a spell that turies to undo.

individual moral integshest good and highest person is capable.

ining is everything; e is to a person. We is folly; there is no re: what we call by on page 24)

# Mark Twain Reader and Critic of Travel Literature

George H. Herrick

That Mark Twain was a reader and critic of travel literature has been partially obscured by his fame as an author of travel books and as a novelist. Nevertheless, he read and read widely in the realm of travel literature. Concerning his reading, Mark Twain said in his later years:

I like history, biography, travels, curious facts and happenings, and science.<sup>1</sup>

Actually travel accounts seem to have interested him throughout his lifetime. During the early days when he was a type-setter for the Hannibal Journal, Twain doubtless read its articles on Hawaii, England, and Germany. It is possible, too, that his entire life was influenced by Lieut. William Herndon's and Lardner Gibbons' Exploration of the Valley of the Amazon. This popular travel book of the 1850s may well have provided the impetus for his memorable embarkation on the Paul Jones.<sup>2</sup>

Even a casual reading of The Innocents Abroad, Life on the Mississippi, and Following the Equator will disclose Mark Twain's interest in other travel books. These three works contain many quotations gathered from miscellaneous travel publications, and it is likely that his reading was still more extensive than indicated in his writing.<sup>3</sup> Regrettably, many of his quotations are apparently included merely to fill up space. His commentaries on several, however, provide a valuable insight into his criteria for judging the literature of travel.

In the latter half of *The Innocents Abroad* he quoted many passages from travel volumes on the Holy Land. Concerning these he said:

Nearly every book concerning Galilee and its lake describes the scenery as beautiful. No—not always as straightforward as that. Sometimes the *impression* intentionally conveyed is that it is

beautiful, at the same time that the author is careful not to say that it is, in plain Saxon. But a careful analysis of these descriptions will show that the materials of which they are formed are not individually beautiful and cannot be formed into combinations that are heautiful.

It was Mark Twain's contention that some, biased by their reverence for the Holy Land, wrote inaccurately; that others, fearing unpopularity if they did otherwise, painted it in magical terms; and that still others simply wished to deceive. To Mark Twain the truth should suffice and there should be no attempt to gild those elements which have no beauty.

One of these descriptive books of the Holy Land evidently shocked Twain's literary sensitivities to the core with the following lines:

. . . Flowers bloom in this terrestrial paradise, once beautiful and verdant with waving trees; singing birds enchant the ear; the turtle-dove soothes with its soft note; the crested lark sends up its song toward heaven, and the grave and stately stork inspires the mind with thought and leads it on to meditation and repose. Life here was once idyllic, charming, here were no rich, no poor, no high, no low. It was a world of ease, simplicity, and beauty; now it is a scene of desolation and misery.

We can almost hear Mark Twain declare:

This is not an ingenious picture. It is the worst I ever saw. It describes in elaborate detail what it terms a "terrestrial paradise" and closes with the startling information that this paradise is "a scene of desolation and misery."<sup>5</sup>

Within the pages of Life on the Mississippi are quotations from descriptions of the river by Charles Augustus Murray, Alexander Mackay, Capt. Basil Hall, Mrs. Trollope, and Capt. Marryat. Concerning these de-

Each tourist took notes and went home and published a bookwhich was usually calm, truthful, reasonable, kind; but which seemed just the reverse to our tender-footed progenitors. . . . The emotions produced in those foreign breasts by these aspects were not all formed on one pattern, of course; they had to be various, along at first, because the earlier tourists were obliged to originate their own emotions, whereas in older countries one can always borrow emotions from one's predecessors. And, mind you, emotions are among the toughest things in the world to manufacture out of whole cloth; it is easier to manufacture seven facts than one emotion.6

0

These travel accounts are not, however, flawless in Twain's opinion. Capt. Marryat in A Diary of America made the unfortunate mistake of listing the catfish as one of "the coarsest and most uneatable fish." To this Mark Twain, with the characteristic love of a midwesterner for catfish, replied that Capt. Marryat's description of the river was "marred in the matter of statistics by inaccuracies; for the catfish is a plenty good enough fish for anybody . . . " Capt. Marryat also stated that the panther is "almost impervious to man." Twain evidently forgot or omitted the word almost and flatly maintained that "there are no panthers that are impervious to man'." At any rate, one who reads Capt. Marryat's account of the Mississippi will likely agree with Mark Twain when he said:

It is pretty crude literature for a man accustomed to handling a pen; still as a panorama of the emotions sent weltering through this noted visitor's breast by the aspect and traditions of the "great common sewer" it has a value.<sup>7</sup>

Other descriptions that Mark Twain evidently thought had value were those taken from a railroad advertising booklet and in-

serted into the mouth of the old gentleman describing the river between La Crosse and St. Paul.<sup>8</sup> Strangely enough, his language is almost as florid as that which Twain ridiculed in the special correspondent of the *Times-Democrat* who, writing of a trip made by a relief boat during a flood, said:

On Saturday, early in the morning, the beauty of the place graced our cabin, and proud of her fair freight the gallant little boat glided up the bayou.

About this Mark Twain commented:

Twenty-two words to say the ladies came aboard and the boat shoved out up the creek, is a clean waste of ten good words, and is also destructive of compactness of statement.<sup>9</sup>

Later, in Following the Equator, Twain, who often did not overstrain for economy in words, praised the Rev. Mr. Parker's compact and lucid Guide to Benares." Mark Twain was also struck by the "vivid and moving picture of the veneration for Benares held by the Hindu as presented by the Rev. Mr. Parker. Following the Equator abounds with passages quoted from travel works, but a book that especially appealed to him was Sketches of Australian Life by Mrs. Campbell Praed. After including excerpts from her book, Twain said:

You notice that Mrs. Praed knows her art. She can place a thing before you so that you can see it. $^{12}$ 

Three of the other writers quoted by Mark Twain are Satya Chandra Mukerji, Sir William Wilson Hunter, and Bayard Taylor. All have written accounts of the Taj Mahal which Twain believed well written and correct. Yet about the Taj Mahal he wrote:

... I had read a great deal too much about it. I saw it in the daytime, I saw it in the moonlight, I saw it near at hand, I saw it from a distance; and I knew all the time that of its kind it was the wonder of the world, with no com-

(Continued on page 22)

## Charles I

If your great-gr your living room to notice fewer advance living than you mig understand our dread of war. One hundred ly the same way, be national rather than It so happened that realized. To ease our man might suggest the Turn over the sheets paper to the humoric he would be amazed, ists have become a Rogers was the last national popularity.

A hundred years carried a regular coby such names as Ar V. Nasby, Josh Bi Simon Suggs, or Majwere all fictitious their writings are no nored.

During and imme War between the St popular humorist in a Georgian, Charles I for almost forty yes tween 1861 and 19 than 2,000 separate time his work appearnewspapers. Social he said if we can unlaughed at we can people themselves. If made Bill Arp's week cipated throughout can better understand and ourselves.

Our humor has be as our way of living paper humorists wer as frantically comic a Hope or any of our

-10-

# Charles Henry Smith, the Creator of Bill Arp

James E. Ginther

the old gentleman een La Crosse and gh, his language is which Twain ridirespondent of the ting of a trip made flood, said:

in the morning, ace graced our r fair freight the ed up the bayou.

commented:

to say the ladies pat shoved out up aste of ten good structive of com-

he Equator, Twain, rain for economy in Mr. Parker's complete Benares." Mark by the "vivid and heration for Benares esented by the Rev. The Equator abounds in travel works, but ppealed to him was Life by Mrs. Campding excerpts from

Irs. Praed knows ce a thing before see it.<sup>12</sup>

ters quoted by Mark ra Mukerji, Sir Wilnd Bayard Taylor. ts of the Taj Mahal ell written and corj Mahal he wrote:

at deal too much he daytime, I saw I saw it near at distance; and I of its kind it was rld, with no com-

page 22)

If your great-grandfather walked into your living room today, he would probably notice fewer advances in our manner of living than you might imagine. He would understand our dread of war and the rumors of war. One hundred years ago he felt exactly the same way, but his dread was of a national rather than a world-wide conflict. It so happened that his worst fears were realized. To ease our anxiety the old gentleman might suggest the same remedy be used. Turn over the sheets of our morning newspaper to the humorist's column. But there he would be amazed. The newspaper humorists have become extinct. Probably Will Rogers was the last of the group to achieve national popularity.

A hundred years ago every newspaper carried a regular column of humor signed by such names as Artemus Ward, Petroleum V. Nasby, Josh Billings, Sut Lovingood, Simon Suggs, or Major Joseph Jones. They were all fictitious names, of course, and their writings are now pretty generally ignored.

During and immediately following the War between the States, by far the most popular humorist in the Confederacy was a Georgian, Charles Henry Smith, who wrote for almost forty years as "Bill Arp." Between 1861 and 1903 he published more than 2,000 separate columns and at one time his work appeared in over 700 weekly newspapers. Social historians have recently said if we can understand what people laughed at we can better understand the people themselves. If we can find out what made Bill Arp's weekly column eagerly anticipated throughout the South, perhaps we can better understand both our forefathers and ourselves.

Our humor has become as high-powered as our way of living. None of these newspaper humorists were, or ever tried to be, as frantically comic as Milton Berle or Bob Hope or any of our other top comedians today. Theirs was a relaxed, folksy, cracker barrel humor, usually a comment upon the affairs of the day which could provoke a chuckle from the reader with a twist or a trick sentence. All of these humorists posed as uneducated, simple country boys and they wrote in what Walter Blair has called "the great misspelling bee." Bill Arp was no exception. He fitted into the pattern and couldn't spell a thing.

To a South about to undergo years of Reconstruction as vigorous as the war years themselves, Bill Arp wrote in September 1865 . . . "the way I see it, a big feller and a little feller, so-called, got into a fite, and they fout and fout and fout a long time, and all around eveyboddy a hollerin hans off, but keep a helpin the big feller, till finally the little feller caved in and hollered enuf. He made a bully fite, I tell you selah. Well, what did the big feller do? Tak him by the han and help him up, and bresh the dirt offen his close? Nary time! No sir! But he kicked him atter he was down, and throwed mud on him, and drug him about, and rubbed sand in his eyes, and now he's gwine about a huntin up his little property. Wants to Konfiskate it. Blame my jacket, if it aint't enuf to make your hed swim."

Charles Henry Smith through Bill Arp was one of those fortunate authors who had a public waiting him. Southerners became Arp fans for the simple reason that Bill Arp could say with a smile what most of his neighbors were thinking with a scowl. Smith wielded more influence with his pen than any other newspaperman in the South. In 1884 it was declared, "There is no section of the broad Sunny South that Bill Arp is not a household word." He retained this tremendous sectional popularity until his death in 1903.

Most of the Arp columns were written as letters addressed to "feller citizens," or "honest peepul." During the Civil War civilian cries about taxes prompted Bill Arp

#### MARK TWAIN JOURNAL

to observe, "For all this here anno domini 1863 is powerful hard on the root of all evil. Ther's the city tax, and the county tax, and the State tax, and Confederate tax, and charity tax, and tax in kind, and tax unkind, and shoe tax, and speculator's tax in general; and they scourge a man hard and they scourge him frequent." Bill Arp never apologized for using a pun.

During the occupation, Bill Arp remarked rather peevishly, "Well, if the war is over, what's the use of filling up our towns and cities with soldiers any longer? Where's that reconstruction the papers say is goin on so rapidly? Where's that liberty and freedom? The fact is General Sherman and his caterpillars made such a clean sweep of everything, I don't see much to reconstruct. They took so many liberties around here that there's nary liberty left."

Historians have discovered in Bill Arp's columns a gold mine of reflections of the popular contemporary thinking in the South. He complained about the draftdodgers, the taxes, and the numerous secret sessions of the Confederate Congress, which he called "the closest communion ever established in a well-watered country." He was particularly indignant about the excesses of the Reconstruction - "There wasn't nothin to do but go off and let us alone." One of his most popular columns was satirizing the local Reconstruction Committees for calling citizens to appear for their loyalty check. Here is a condensed version of his own mythical appearance before such a group.

"Mr. Arp, are the peepul of your sekshun suffishently umbled and repentent to cum back into the Union on sich terms as we may think proper to impose?"

"Not much they ain't," says I. "They say the deal wasn't fair, and you marked the cards, and stole the trumps . . . Our peepul ain't notisin you, only out of kurosity."

"Mr. Arp, are not the feelins of your

peepul very bitter towards the North?"

"Our peepul hav a very high regard for onerable men, brave men, and ther's a heap of 'em North, sur . . . But as for this here radikal party, we look upon em like they was hyeners a skratchin up the ded fer a livin."

"If it was in their power to do so, would your peepul renew the fite?

"Not unless they could fite the radikals all alone. Even then there wouldn't be no fite for we couldn't ketch you."

"Mr. Arp, sposin we hav a war with England or France, what would the rebels do?"

"They'd foller Genrul Lee and Genrul Johnson and Bragg and old Bory. We'd pick up McLellan and Buell and take em along with us. They are gentlemen if they did fite on the otherside."

The various columns of Bill Arp's were collected and reprinted in seven books which became best-sellers of their time in the South. The last one went out of print only about twenty years ago. In 1903 his obituary in the New York Daily Tribune called him the "Mark Twain of the South." The minister at his funeral more extravagantly proclaimed, "Bill Arp was known around the world." Who was Charles Henry Smith, the creator of Bill Arp?

As yet no full-length biography of Smith has been written. But from various sources it can be learned that Charles Henry Smith was born on June 15, 1826, in Lawrenceville, Georgia, the first of a family of ten children. Later he claimed that his childhood had not been unusual, although he did remember one day in school when "Mr. Norton whipped me on my boil, and bursted it, and broke my mother's heart, but it was good for the boil." For a few years he attended Franklin College (now the University of Georgia) but left it to marry Mary Octavia Hutchins, a bewitching, black-eyed daughter

(Continued on page 23)

## The Misc

In Pudd'nhead siders a theme wh nineteen century subject of misceg public accepted t calmly, and Pud criticism as a "s planation of the a pite its forbidden lies in Twain's sk ject.

An examination will show how Tw The fact that mi first brought to tl description of Re the good-natured and Jasper. Twai like a Negro, but fifteen parts whit one parts white, and by fiction of I This statement seedescription that realizing its sign chapter is the one the infants in the clined to believe t made of white col to make this shift does not even co Twain's discussing child is. But we as was. Roxana deci his identity, and s nigger!"—bawn a two are about to asks Roxy if she who his father w one of the greate follows:

> "Does I mine don't! You ain' shame' o' yo' fa wuz the highest town—ole Virgi

tter towards the North?"

hav a very high regard for brave men, and ther's a heap sur . . . But as for this here we look upon em like they was tchin up the ded fer a livin."

n their power to do so, would enew the fite?

they could fite the radikals all nen there wouldn't be no fite t ketch you."

sposin we hav a war with rance, what would the rebels

ler Genrul Lee and Genrul ragg and old Bory. We'd pick and Buell and take em along are gentlemen if they did fite

columns of Bill Arp's were eprinted in seven books which lers of their time in the South, vent out of print only about ago. In 1903 his obituary in Daily Tribune called him the of the South." The minister more extravagantly proclaimas known around the world." les Henry Smith, the creator

all-length biography of Smith en. But from various sources ed that Charles Henry Smith me 15, 1826, in Lawrenceville, irst of a family of ten chile claimed that his childhood unusual, although he did rey in school when "Mr. Norton my boil, and bursted it, and her's heart, but it was good For a few years he attended ge (now the University of ft it to marry Mary Octavia vitching, black-eyed daughter

inued on page 23)

# The Miscegentation Theme in Pudd'nhead Wilson

Thomas W. Ford

In Pudd'nhead Wilson Mark Twain considers a theme which was totally avoided in nineteen century American literature, the subject of miscegenation. Yet the reading public accepted this tabooed element quite calmly, and Pudd'nhead Wilson drew no criticism as a "shocking" story. The explanation of the acceptance of the book, despite its forbidden theme of miscegenation, lies in Twain's skillful handling of the subject.

An examination of Pudd'nhead Wilson will show how Twain deals with this theme. The fact that miscegenation is involved is first brought to the reader's attention in the description of Roxana as Wilson observes the good-natured conversation between Roxy and Jasper. Twain tells us that Roxy talks like a Negro, but she was not black. She is fifteen parts white, and her child is thirtyone parts white, "and he, too, was a slave, and by fiction of law and custom a Negro." 1 This statement seems so much a part of the description that one passes over it, barely realizing its significance. The following chapter is the one in which Roxy changes the infants in their cradles, and one is inclined to believe that Roxy's child has been made of white color simply to allow Twain to make this shift of infants plausible. One does not even consider the possibility of Twain's discussing who the father of Roxy's child is. But we are to learn who the father was. Roxana decided to reveal to "Tom" his identity, and she tells him that "You's a nigger!"-bawn a nigger en a slave!" The two are about to part, and "Tom" timidly asks Roxy if she would mind telling him who his father was. Roxy's reply, perhaps one of the greatest passages in the book, follows:

"Does I mine tellin' you? No, dat I don't! You ain't got no 'casion to be shame' o' yo' father, I kin tell you. He wuz the highest quality in dis whole town—ole Virginny stock. Fust fam-

blies, he wuz. Jas as good stock as de Driscolls en de Howards, de bes' dey ever seed." She put on a little prouder air, if possible, and added impressively: "Does you 'member Cunnel Cecil Burleigh Essex, dat died de same year yo' young Marse Tom Discoll's pappy died, en all de Masons en Odd Fellows en Churches turned out en give him de bigges' funeral dis town ever seed? Dat's de man."<sup>2</sup>

Roxy remembered the days of her now departed glory, and she became queenly and dignified:

"Dey ain't another nigger in dis town dat's as high-bawn as you is. Now den, go 'long. En jes you hold yo' head up as high as you want to—you has de right, en dat I kin swah."<sup>3</sup>

It is only at this point that we recall the two previous casual remarks concerning Cecil Essex, the F.F.V. "of formidable caliber." In this passage Twain has expertly revealed the whimsically naive pride of this slave. He has delivered a tremendous satire on the F.F.V.'s and their "code" of honor. To be gentlemen without stain or blemish was their utmost principle, gentlemen "according to the nicest requirements of the Virginia rule." We can imagine the horror of this F.F.V. if he could have heard Roxy, the lowly negro slave, even mentioning his honored name in connection with her own.

Thus we can see that the theme is such an integral part of the story, and is presented in such a straight-forward, matter of fact manner that the reader scarcely realizes that Twain is dealing with such a "ticklish" subject. This is doubtless one of the reasons why the book drew no raising of eyebrows or condemnation at the time of its appearance, and a tribute to Twain's artistic ability is in order.

We know that Twain stood on the side of the Negro, but not once does he directly

(Continued on opposite page)

-13-

# Mark Twain, Cable, and the Philistine

Abe C. Ravitz and Norris Yates

The personality clash between Mark Twain and George Washington Cable evinced during their reading tour of 1884-1885 has been thoroughly explored by present day scholars.1 Recently, a "bloated, partially perverted" newspaper account of a "row" has been brought to light,2 but one particularly lurid tale of this tour has remained hidden until now in a "little magazone" that ceased publication in 1915. Indeed, Elbert Hubbard, businessman, dabbler in letters, author of "A Message to Garcia," and editor of the Philistine printed in the April, 1901, issue of this magazine a remarkable (though possibly spurious) account of an eruption between the "twins of genius" while they were on the road.

The tale published by Hubbard evidently emanated from Major James B. Pond, who, as manager of the "twins," accompanied them during parts of the tour. This same impresario took charge of a lecture tour for Elbert Hubbard in March, 1900; Pond traveled with Hubbard and later expressed nothing but highest praise for the man. It appears, then, that the good "Major" passed on to his friend, who was ever eager for gossip on the *literati*, the story that follows:

And this brings us up to Mark Twain and George W. Cable, who traveled together for three weeks and never once spoke to each other, excepting on the stage. It all began by Mark telling a few Warm Ones to Major Pond in Cable's presence. Cable, fearing he would be smirched, or wanting to prove his purity, flew. At other times Mark would swear ultramarine streaks over nothing while George was studying his International Sunday School Lesson Leaves.

Finally George decided he would win Mark over to the Lord's side. To that end he made an appointment with him where they were to meet at a certain time to talk over a matter "of great and serious import." Mark thought it was some business deal and made no objection. When they met, Cable began the trouble by locking the door, dropping on his knees and praying aloud that Mark would cease his unhallowed ribaldry, quit tobacco, abstain from smoking and give his heart to Jesus. Mark lit his pipe while the prayer was in progress and finally said, "Hell!"

Then Cable got up and rastled with Mark as to the sin of smoking, especially smoking in bed; the folly of turning in at three o'clock in the morning and eating breakfast at noon; the vice of profane swearing, and the heinous sin of telling tales that bring the blush of shame to the check of innocence. Mark was urged to fall on his knees right there and make an appeal to the Throne of Grace for pardon. He was urged to resolve then and there to live a clean, wholesome, Christian life; to have family prayers, say grace at meals, and go to church on Sunday.

"Burn your tobacco pipes, throw the Budge Bottle out of the window, and promise me now you will never use another swear word—do it now, Mark, in the name of your sainted mother, do it now." And the little man, with his arms around Mark's neck, tried to force him to his knees.

(Continued on page 23)

(Continued from preceding page)

either condemn or condone miscegenation. It is this fact, the fact that Twain used artistic restraint in keeping his own comments on the subject out of the book, that is also partially responsible for the acceptance of *Pudd'nhead Wilson* in an age when the subject of miscegenation was tabooed.

 $1 \, Mark$  Twain, Pudd'nhead Wilson, Author's National Edition, p. 23.  $2 \, Ibid$  , p. 88.  $3 \, Ibid$  .

Sami

"It has been the American la life, from my hour, and I ca satisfaction its ty-loving, patri have done my we the world will re after I am gone service to his fe tent."

These words, at the age of 7 the Boston Cha his true claim few others spo Labor's cause.

Partially as birth in 1850, Labor conducte members. Likew versary of the Department has a Gompers com of Philadelphia' tions, the Sam now stands as a as do the new S cational School Gompers High S

As these ever members of the chologists, sociodents of labor What manner masses was this patron saint or a spirit" in the generation after history of orgatime practically

The answers sonality, the pelectual and social

## Philistine

t it was some business deal objection. When they met, brouble by locking the door, s knees and praying aloud d cease his unhallowed ribalco, abstain from smoking art to Jesus. Mark lit his prayer was in progress and ell!"

got up and rastled with sin of smoking, especially the folly of turning in at a the morning and eating oon; the vice of profane he heinous sin of telling tales blush of shame to the cheek ark was urged to fall on his re and make an appeal to Grace for pardon. He was then and there to live a te, Christian life; to have say grace at meals, and go mday.

tobacco pipes, throw the t of the window, and promise II never use another swear ow, Mark, in the name of other, do it now." And the h his arms around Mark's orce him to his knees.

nued on page 23)

from preceding page)

or condone miscegenation. It fact that Twain used artistic ping his own comments on of the book, that is also parlle for the acceptance of son in an age when the subation was tabooed.

udd'nhead Wilson, Author's Na-3.

# Samuel Gompers: Labor Pioneer, Crusader, and Statesman

Joseph C. Carter

"It has been my pleasure to work with the American labor movement nearly all my life, from my young boyhood up to this hour, and I can recall with the greatest satisfaction its consistent, progressive, liberty-loving, patriotic course. When I shall have done my work, whatever it may be, if the world will remember me for five minutes after I am gone and say, 'He tried to be of service to his fellows in life' I shall be content."

These words, spoken by Samuel Gompers at the age of 70, before a 1920 meeting of the Boston Chamber of Commerce, sum up his true claim to greatness as perhaps do few others spoken or written by him in Labor's cause.

Partially as a centennial memorial to his birth in 1850, the American Federation of Labor conducted a drive for a million new members. Likewise honoring the 100th anniversary of the AFL leader, the Postoffice Department has been processing mail with a Gompers commemorative stamp. Also one of Philadelphia's newest educational institutions, the Samuel Gompers Public School, now stands as a memorial to his great name, as do the new Samuel Gompers General Vocational School in Baltimore and the Samuel Gompers High School in New York City.

As these events have occurred younger members of the trade unions, writers, psychologists, sociologists, historians, and students of labor history have been asking: What manner of leader of the laboring masses was this man? Why does he—like a patron saint or legendary hero—still "start a spirit" in the hearts of trade unionists a generation after his death? Why was the history of organized labor during his lifetime practically his life-story?

The answers lie partly in his unique personality, the peculiar combination of intellectual and social influences during his early

days, and the compassionate and forthright selflessness with which he waged his personal crusade for the workingman during more than half a century. Like some other great historical figures, Gompers as a physical person was a paradox. He was a powerfully-built man, though his 5 ft. 4 in. of height was largely in his body, not his legs. When he was seated his long-armed torso seemed to be that of a much taller individual. One observer, in fact, declared Gompers' "chronic restlessness had a touch of anthropoid strength."

His huge face and head had the character of a weather-marked rock—rugged and furrowed, yet sensitive and warmly aglow when he was in the midst of labor friends. His jaws were strong, his skin coarse, his hair unruly, and his chin deeply dimpled. His rimless, pince-nez glasses seemed to make his snapping eyes flash, so much did they glitter from constant polishing.

When he opened his wide-slit mouth he spoke with a voice communicating any emotion he felt. In fact, someone once spoke of his "congenitally histrionic face and temper." His voice was powerful and of fine musical timbre. Early in his life taunters referred to him as "Stuttering Sam" until his speech control became more precise and confident from practice at labor forums and Federation conventions. During his mature years he twanged many a rhetorical arrow at AFL antagonists—particularly the Socialists and Communists—with deadly effect.

Gompers, as president of the AFL, was friendly, gregarious, keen, tactful, patient, and a master of public relations techniques—especially when it came to handling men of his unions. Yet he could also become hotly enraged if the labor debate demanded that reaction. He had a Lincolnesque honesty in money matters—so much that he died a poor man, bequeathing to his widow (the second

Mrs. Gompers) but slim financial resources.

0

What effect did the Jewish faith of his family tree have on his attitudes and labor philosophy? It apparently made little difference with his human relationships one way or the other. At least once it even furnished him with a chance for well-directed fun and chuckles when he hinted he wanted to "get away from these Irish roughnecks and get back to my own people for a change." He was an "alien-Jew, labor-agitator," some of his leftist enemies snarled. And so he never could fully shake off the complex of being a minority immigrant—a feeling that must have aggravated his occasional personal malignments on labor issues.

For the Hebrew creed, however, Gompers had the same private aversion he bore toward religions in general. But what his beliefs may have lacked in mysticism they surely made up in intense practicality of function. He loved people like his somewhat younger contemporary, Will Rogers, and always was surrounded by them.

This redoubtable champion of the laboring man and woman let nothing escape his ken. Intensely democratic, he once declared: "No human being is unimportant." More than most living persons, he was so socially-minded that he seemed to be personally enriched by his own altruistic sufferings in the cause of trade unionism. Chiefly because he was thus giving of himself to others, in a very Christlike way. "I am helping my fellow men," he would have said.

Circumstances—both in his native England and here in America—made him what he was. He was an immigrant of whom it has been said: "He became more American than the Americans." His intellectual, moral and economic "inheritances" one might say, typify the varied origins and nature of American labor.

When he appeared at national conventions to give his presidential addresses, or when he spoke at other gatherings his voice was intense, dramatic, sincere and at times tinged with emotion. Ready humor was one of his personal hallmarks. Friends and labor associates often remarked that nervously and physically Sam Gompers seemed tireless. His vitality and zest for work and play were incredibly enormous right up to his final years. Even in his relaxed moments he usually found time to discuss or make a play on the gameboard of Labor Strategy!

Scholars trying to appraise the man for the Hall of Fame might label him with such adjectives as: ardent, astute, aggressive, uncompromising, inflexible, sympathetic, understanding, cunning, intemperate, intuitional, shrewd, self-righteous, and loyal. Yet such words are mere abstractions when one is dissecting the nature and historical reputation of a man who was 100 per cent devoted to one cause—Organized Labor—to the absolute exclusion of other political and business opportunities.

What were the mainsprings of his power? "My work was my life," Gompers wrote in his autobiography. Just as another great American, Stephen Girard, once declared: "My deeds must be my life. When I am dead my actions must speak for me." Imbued with flaming idealism from the days of his youth in New York cigar factories, he was always short on untried "intellectual" theory and long on practical action. This pragmatic attitude can be traced partly to his economically rugged and hungry days as a boy in London and New York, and partly to his close association with young men such as Adolph Strasser and Ferdinand Laurrel who steeped him in class consciousness and militant unionism. Of course, he was a born

Always he battled for collective agreements, and he was aggressive and uncompromising for the strongest possible level and power of all AFL unions. Yet he once admonished his members: "It is our duty to live our lives as workers in the society in which we live, and not to work for the downfall or the destruction, or the overthrow of that society, but for its fuller development

and e

His the Fe struct sistent That their I dollar, from death.

Gon Sam, was p execut cisions and ar his re organ, time, t licatio maker In 191 Press then t

Despions
Gompe
labor
cering
can lal
it: "So
ship t
the CI
Gompe
—the
friends

Problem Market M

umor was one of his ends and labor assothat nervously and seemed tireless. His work and play were ght up to his final elaxed moments he scuss or make a play abor Strategy!

ppraise the man for t label him with such stute, aggressive, une, sympathetic, unintemperate, intuiteous, and loyal. Yet betractions when one and historical repuas 100 per cent deloganized Labor—to f other political and

prings of his power? Gompers wrote in as another great ard, once declared: ife. When I am dead or me." Imbued with e days of his youth ories, he was always lectual" theory and m. This pragmatic artly to his economiy days as a boy in and partly to his oung men such as Ferdinand Laurrel s consciousness and urse, he was a born

or collective agreessive and uncomprot possible level and ns. Yet he once ad-"It is our duty to is in the society in work for the downor the overthrow of s fuller development and evolution."

His leadership (he held the presidency of the Federation 41 years) was positive, constructive, and marked by a fervent and consistent directness almost fanatical in its goal. That was to benefit fellow wage-earners in their battles against the capitalists for an ever larger chunk of the national incomedollar. From that aim he never once swerved, from his poverty-bitten boyhood until his death.

Gompers—his friends used to call him Sam, and after 1918, "The Old Man"—was primarily a man of action. Like most executives, he made many if not most decisions orally. Yet he also wrote many books and articles, besides convention speeches and his regular editorials in the AFL official organ, The American Federationist. For a time, too, he edited The Picket, official publication of his beloved Local 144, Cigarmakers International Union, of New York. In 1911 he founded the International Labor Press of America to coordinate and strengthen the journalism of Labor.

Despite the other proponents and champions of the workingman here and abroad, Gompers still is the Grand Old Man of the labor movement. His memory and his pioneering deeds are revered as no other American labor leader has been. As one realist put it: "So far is labor repudiating his leadership that the present political methods of the CIO and the AFL are founded on Samuel Gompers' principles laid down 44 years ago—the non-partisan one of 'rewarding our friends and defeating our enemies'."

Probably no other American caused by his writings, his public speeches, and his actions such lasting influence on the movement of organized labor in a free society. In many ways, despite recent changes on the labor scene, and despite his personal passing 31 years ago, Gompers—like the dead Julius Caesar — is mighty yet; his spirit walks abroad. True, his hold on the labor struggle did weaken in the last few years of

his life—especially after World War 1. But was not this partially due to his advancing age and infirmities, and more especially to the upsurge of other types of radical ideology and the incipient secessionist elements within the Federation itself? In those later years Gompers' consistent guiding conservatism and high regard for free enterprise were put to their sternest tests, and have been from that time to the present harrassed by the independent unions and the CIO factions which, until the recent merger plans, opposed the AFL.

Federation archives in its Washington headquarters are filled with well-nigh all the extant Gompersana. A study of themespecially of his "Seventy Years of Life and Labor" (no mere memoirs, but a scholars' sourcebook for the full tale of the blossoming and growth of trade unionism) will prove a richly rewarding experience to one who would better understand the grassroots of American labor history. Whether, like another recent American national leader, he had an carly premonition of greatness and immortality, is uncertain. But it is reported that he carefully preserved every scrap of material pertaining to the development of the Federation which was his very existence. Thus he and his competent secretaries built through the years official files that have eventually become so gigantic as to amaze and delight research scholars and students of labor relations.

True, some of his writings—even those milled out to be delivered by his own powerful oratory—are, by present standards, notoriously weak in readability. Many of his sentences are formal and stiff, not terse, clear, smooth, and humanized. Perhaps, when flavored by the Gompers personality and voice, they nevertheless became alive and moved the thoughts and actions of other men. Throughout his life he had great respect for learning, yet never after his early cigar-making days, applied himself much to books. There is little evidence in his writings (as there is, by contrast, in those of

John L. Lewis) that he ever read widely. He did remark, though, that he always strived for good usage in his writing and speaking—no doubt to compensate for his bitterly-regreted loss of educational opportunity in his boyhood. Here he had a stylest indard he tried to emulate: Charles Dana's New York Sun editorials.

0

In public speeches, on the other hand, he rose to colorful heights of elegance and forceful forensics. Even then, sometimes his remarks rolled forth "like the words of a bishop intoning the obvious with solemn cadences." As a result, may it not be that many of his more unlettered cohorts were perhaps mystified, yet still keenly impressed? He maintained an important, large, intimate and often confidential correspondence with labor friends at home and abroad.

His great love of smashing, aggressive, fighting life was enhanced and perhaps stimulated and inspired by music and drama. Both moved him and thrilled his emotionally-sensitive nature. For example, Enrico Caruso was a personal friend of Gompers. He knew the great tenor well and heard nearly all his singing roles. Perhaps the labor crusader's dramatic instinct and his intuition were psychologically linked to his intense love for music and the opera. What he called "intuition," was doubtless nothing but testing theories to see if they worked.

This intense and grim exponent of human rights and needs prided himself—at times boastfully—on his physical endurance. Said he on one occasion: "I never got tired and gave any thought to my body, for it never demanded my attention. The Gomperses are built of oak." One Gompers scholar hazarded this guess: "The secret of his strength was in the paradoxically selfless egocentricity with which he harmonized his person and his crusade." While he thrived on "fighting" in the thick of some of labor's hottest early battles, actually be abhorred physical viblence, and all his life opposed its use in strikes and other contests with capitalism. He invested and spent his life working for

men and women who were hungry, who worked long hours, whose pay was low, or who were socially poor. The words "Gompers" and "Organized Labor" in his time became practically synonymous. He dominated his program not by the autocratic seizure of power but by the popularly-supported authority of his presidency and the pen of his American Federationist editorship. "Every real advance in human freedom," he once wrote, "is a tremendous event in history."

Gompers was born Jan. 27, 1850 in a tenement in East Side London. His parents, Solomon and Sarah (Root) Gompers traced their ancestry to a family which had migrated through Portugal and Holland to England. The group was a branch of the Austrian Gompertz (sometimes spelled Gomperz) which had given to the Old Hapsburg Empire many scholars, soldiers, merchants, and statesmen. Young Samuel was one of eight children.

This son of a poor cigarmaker attended a denominational school between his sixth and tenth years. His childhood playtime was spent in the streets of the ghetto-like sector of London, the softening influence of suburban living denied him — just as it was throughout his intense and crowded life in the teeming cities. Too poor to let him continue school, his father placed him in a factory to learn shoemaking, a move Samuel always regarded as a deep injustice. Later he was apprenticed to the cigarmaking trade.

The lad's earliest recollections were of laboring people and their social and economic problems. Once his sympathies for the unfortunate and oppressed were touched by the sight of a hungry, rioting crowd of unemployed workmen. During the U.S. Civil War, his parents became sympathetic with the North's anti-slavery cause and decided to go

to go
"To the West, to the West, to the land
of the free

Where a man is a man if he's willing to toil,

And the humblest may gather the fruits of the soil."

East S Gompers I chance fo was 1863, bis Emand in the me year or s assassinat is reporte for days.

At 17 Julian, a in his cig bore him to maturi panionabl orthodox) a home, many Sco around he winner wa strikes a conscious from dire and the cheler wh years late

The city youth not start of I for know evening cieven more years was co-worker schools opiece-worl bined lab benches, I (before t mold) we chists, an fled Euro

Togeth journals a idealism a e hungry, who worked was low, or who were rds "Gompers" and is time became pracdominated his proatic seizure of power pported authority of pen of his American p. "Every real adom," he once wrote, in history."

Jan. 27, 1850 in a London. His parents, oot) Gompers traced mily which had migal and Holland to vas a branch of the metimes spelled Gomto the Old Hapsburg soldiers, merchants, Samuel was one of

cigarmaker attended between his sixth ildhood playtime was he ghetto-like sector g influence of suburjust as it was and crowded life in poor to let him conplaced him in a facing, a move Samuel leep injustice. Later e cigarmaking trade. ecollections were of eir social and econsympathies for the sed were touched by v, rioting crowd of During the U.S. Civil ne sympathetic with cause and decided

West, to the land

in if he's willing to

y gather the fruits

East Side New York became the new Gompers home, with its greater freedom and chance for economic betterment. The year was 1863, shortly after Lincoln had issued his Emancipation Proclamation. The boy at 13 joined the Cigarmakers Union and worked in the metropolitan shops and factories. A year or so later he saw the body of the assassinated Lincoln in City Hall and, it is reported, the sensitive youngster "cried for days."

At 17 he married 16-year-old Sophia Julian, a Brooklyn girl who stripped tobacco in his cigar factory. "Mamma Gompers" bore him eight children, five of whom lived to maturity. She provided for him a companionable and loyal Jewish (but not strictly orthodox) family life for 54 years. She made a home, too, for his labor cause and the many Scotch-Irish satellites whose orbits lay around her husband. Several times the breadwinner was unemployed by layoffs and labor strikes and only the aid of other familyconscious kin saved his wife and offspring from dire hunger. Mrs. Gompers died in 1920 and the next year he married Grace Neuscheler who survived him when he died three years later.

The cigar-works provided for the eager youth not only a paying job, but also the start of his trade union career. His thirst for knowledge was partially quenched by evening classes at Cooper Union. However, even more significant during those formative years was his mentally-stimulating group of co-workers. The factories were, for him, schools of socio-economic research. The piece-work "laboratory" successfully combined labor and oratory! At the tobacco benches, rolling cigars between their hands, (before the labor - saving, man - displacing mold) were Socialists, revolutionaries, anarchists, and other utopian radicals who had fled European repression.

Together they read aloud from books and journals and talked of revolution and labor, idealism and the class struggle. They were keen chaps, alert to public affairs of the world. Intellectual leader of the group was Ferdinand Laurrell, to whom Gompers later dedicated his autobiography. With the help of Laurrell (a Swedish-Socialist exile) he studied Karl Marx's "Communist Manifesto" and "Das Kapital," besides works of Engels, Lassalle, and others. From 1873 to 1878 bis intimate associates also included the Marxian Socialists: F. A. Sarge, J. P. McDonnell, David Kronburg, Peter J. McGuire (who founded Labor Day 61 years ago) and a German revolutionary, David Hirsch.

In his life story Gompers wrote: "The brilliant color of their thoughts came as a hope-filled alluring light on the gray misery of the New York industrial sky. Their talk stirred me deeply."

His membbership in the Socialist club, The Ten Philosophers, he admitted, "resulted in the present American labor movement... We did not create the trade union. That is a product of forces and conditions. But we did create the techniques... that guided it to constructive policies and achievements."

Now, why did Gompers not join and practice the Marxian program? He credited the influence of Laurrell "who kept holding me back from any movement that had been associated with radicalism." And once he roundly denounced the Socialists, saving: "Economically you are unsound; socially you are wrong; industrially you are an impossibility."

Thus, though he had analyzed Marx's international socialism, he sternly rejected it as a worker-enslaving evil. His later antagonism as conservative head of the AFL was consistent with this aloofness though some of his critics declare he never quite lost the traces of those leftist associations of his younger years. Still, he early caught the spirit of America as a way of life and a philosophical tradition, and devoutly loved his adopted land.

Gompers at 14 was the first regular mem-

ber of Local 144 of the Cigarmakers International Union. During the 1872-79 depression he took a leading part in reorganizing the group which became a model for all the others. The unit struck against the tenement house sweating system but the strike was a failure because of no funds, discipline or unity.

With the help of Adolph Strasser, he strengthened its setup and fund and it became the nucleus of hardened, militant U.S. unionism. In the Panic of 1893 this union stood firm and secure. In 1901 the CMIU was called the most successful union in the U.S., due largely to Gompers' stern, progressive efforts. He headed Local 144 for six years.

That he had no life apart from the AFL could truly be said of him. Except for 1895 (when he was defeated by Socialist John Mc-Bride of the UMW) he served as its president from 1886 to his death in 1924. Had he lived, he would have seen the AFL list close to 10,000,000 members in 1955challenged by 6,000,000 claimed by the secessionist CIO and 2,000,000 by other unions. Pained would he probably be, however, to know that organized labor is now a potent political power, both directly and indirectly. In his long, devoted leadership, Gompers knit together a powerful and heterogeneous body of nearly 4,000,000 men and women of nearly every race, color, language, religion, trade, condition, prejudice, and party affiliation.

The Philadelphia - born (1869) Noble Order of Knights of Labor was headed by Master Workman Terence Powderly. What he was to the NOKL, Samuel Gompers later became to the AFL. The Knights (just as the later CIO) combined skilled and unskilled workers in their union—a practice abhorred by Gompers who was not unhappy to see that group fold up in the early nineties under the hammer blows of AFL's growing power. Financial panic, strikes and other crises marked the years from 1873 to 1900. The era was noted, too, for the rise of steel

magnates and captains of industry such as Andrew Carnegie, Henry Frick, and Charles Schwab. It also was the period of amalgamation in industry and finance, and of organization of workers in big basic industries.

Direct forbear of the "craft-union" AFL was the Federation of Trades and Labor Unions born with the help of Samuel Gompers in 1881 in Pittsburgh. Individual union members in those days comprised cigarmakers, printers, iron and steel workers, granite artisans, carpenters, and other skilled craftsmen. Then came 1886, the year of the violent and bloody Haymarket Affair which was revolting to Gompers' sensitivities. The Columbus convention that year reorganized the FOT&LU as the AFL and gave its President an annual stipend of \$1,000 for full-time work. At that time the Federation had little money in its treasury, and only a shabby, improvised office. Now the big union's "struggle between capitalist and laborer which grows in intensity from year to year" is coordinated from an imposing building in Washington with millions in income.

During his near-monopoly of the AFL "kingship" he fanatically and successfully rode full-tilt against KLs, Syndicalists, Socialists, "intellectuals," "radicals," Industrial Workers of the World, Communists (Bolsheviks), and the "Labor Party" faction. He adjured partisan politics for himself and the Federation, promoting instead his "pure and simple union" concepts of shorter hours, higher wages, and more jobs, under better conditions. Collective bargaining was to be primary; political influence only indirect and at the ballot box. Labor's problems, he stressed, can be solved by evolution, not revolution.

Gompers announced that the AFL setup would tolerate no "dual unions"; that his power was "moral"; that each constituent union was to be self-governing. On a broader world scale, Gompers used his influence to prevent strikes during World War 1. He was an inexorable foe of pacifism and vigor-

ously pushed effort. Later establishing the zation, and all for legislation partment of of starting In himself from the American Lateredited to his

Today, Lal and rewards t of course, and own labors, wealth at his ago, though, carry new law dustrial state making wages erty; sanitary tories, mills, labor; safegua liability for i law; eight-hor 10-hour law anti-sweat-sho tration boards abolition of in

In 1911 Jo spotted by Go nary ability special field AFL and give ing jobs. The his boss in 1 but was wallop Craft unionis remained dom that time rev long had been finally erupted Lewis. The in and unionized basic industrie steel. In 20 y following of a union members

of industry such as Frick, and Charles period of amalgafinance, and of orbig basic industries. "craft-union" AFL Trades and Labor of Samuel Gomph. Individual union comprised cigarand steel workers, enters, and other came 1886, the year Haymarket Affair Gompers' sensitivinvention that year U as the AFL and annual stipend of k. At that time the mey in its treasury, rovised office. Now e between capitalist s in intensity from inated from an imington with millions

lopoly of the AFL lly and successfully Ls, Syndicalists, So"radicals," IndusWorld, Communists
"Labor Party" facsan politics for him, promoting instead union" concepts of ages, and me e jobs,
Collective bargain; political influence ballot box. Labor's in be solved by evolu-

that the AFL setup 1 unions"; that his at each constituent erning. On a broader sed his influence to World War 1. He pacifism and vigorously pushed Labor's huge share of the war effort. Later he played a stellar role in establishing the International Labor Organization, and also could take the major credit for legislation which created the U.S. Department of Labor. He conceived the idea of starting International May Day, but cut himself from the plan and actively promoted American Labor Day instead—a holiday credited to his early associate, McGuire.

Today, Labor has rights, opportunities, and rewards that are accepted as a matter of course, and every worker may, from his own labors, acquire and use capitalistic wealth at his own discretion. Half a century ago, though, the statute books began to carry new laws due to the efforts of this industrial statesman. They included: lien laws making wages the first lien against property; sanitary inspection of workshops, factories, mills, and mines; age limit on child labor; safeguarding of machinery; employer liability for injuries; uniform car-coupling law; eight-hour day in government work; 10-hour law for street railway employes; anti-sweat-shop laws; conciliation and arbitration boards; Saturday half-holiday; and abolition of involuntary servitude in Hawaii.

In 1911 John L. Lewis of the UMW was spotted by Gompers as a man of extraordinary ability and future. He was named special field and legislative agent for the AFL and given some of its toughest organizing jobs. The ambitious Lewis ran against his boss in 1921 for Federation president, but was walloped by a greater than 2-1 vote. Craft unionism of Gompers' day actually remained dominant until about 1935. By that time revolt of the industrial factions long had been something underground and finally erupted under the leadership of Lewis. The independent unionists seceded, and unionized the unskilled workers of such basic industries as mining, automotive, and steel. In 20 years the CIO has amassed a following of about 6,000,000 card-carrying union members.

The Great Dragon died at 74 in circumstances more dramatic, perhaps, than any of his other public appearances. After the colorful 1924 Federation convention in El Paso, he had gone on to Mexico City to preside over the Pan American Federation parley and to be a guest at the inauguration of Plutarco Calles, Mexico's first Labor president. Through all three events he was exhausted and seriously ill, but still a gallantly fighting old man. He had expressed a wish to die on U.S. soil and a special train rushed him from the high altitudes of the Mexican capital back toward New York.

The dean of American labor leaders (Rabbi Stephen Wise said of him: "He was a frontiersman, a pioneer; he built not for himself but for others. Greatly he wrought, wondrously he fought for human freedom.") died Dec. 13, 1924, in San Antonio, Tex. After the funeral in New York, a military escort accompanied his body to Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, Tarrytown, N.Y., where he now lies near John Archbold, Andrew Carnegie, Carl Schurz, and William and John Rockefeller.

His swan song of freedom, voluntarism, and embattled unionism had been sung at the Texas convention-actually read for the ailing man by William Green, head of the AFL. It included the prophetic words: "Events of recent months have made me keenly aware that the time is not far distant when I must lay down my trust for others to carry forward." For the old warrior the final American and Mexican gatherings were emotional occasions brimming with lovetributes from his loyal followers. In a sense, even today, his spirit still haunts AFL forums and some of his mannerisms are imitated by more than one leader now declaiming his lines on the labor stage.

When the Gompers Epoch ended he had served a militant career unparalleled in his nation's history, and probably in the world. His influence on American Labor, it cutruly be said, has been nothing short of

prodigious. Fortune magazine, in February 1951, reported: "Almost two out of every three American union members-10 million out of a total of 15 million-are organized on the AFL basis and in unions that derive in unbroken descent from Samuel Gompers.'

0

A 14-year-old cigar-rolling immigrant, he had come to our shores and had risen Horatio Alger-like to the heights of confidante of five U.S. presidents, colorful and forceful leader of millions of the toiling masses, and the creative spark which fired many a social or economic idea into explosive national action in fields where human problems were concerned.

In a respect, the basic democratic philosophy of his nearly 60 years' devotion to Labor's cause was expressed in his dying words: "God bless our American institutions. May they grow better and better." Here, too, he accented the paternal nature of his moderate and conservative AFL guidance. But his dying had perhaps also revealed an inherent weakness-his inability to harmonize some of his 19th-century-born theories and program of action with more liberal political changes and industrial modifications already bursting forth on the American scene.

Yet, withal, Americans always will remember Samuel Gompers as a dedicated leader of great personal devotion and integrity — Labor's great pioneer, crusader and statesman. As a man of far-sighted ideas and intense action he did so much to make organized labor respectable, powerful and socially and economically beneficial to its members and, indirectly, to all its other

#### MARK TWAIN, READER AND CRITIC (Continued from page 10)

petitor now and no possible future competitor; and yet it was not my Taj. My Taj had been built by excitable literary people; it was solidly lodged in my head and I could not blast it out. By a questionable numerical device he then

reached the unquestionable conclusion that a description can be correctly written and still convey to the reader an exaggerated concept because of the differing word associations in the minds of reader and writer. 13

Still another interesting criticism of a travel book is found in Mark Twain's commentary on William Dean Howells' Venetian Life. Twain, always an admirer of Howells, quoted a lengthy passage describing Venice during a snowfall and added:

The spirit of Venice is there; of a city where Age and Decay, fagged with the distributing damage and repulsiveness among the other cities of the planet in accordance with the policy and business of their profession, come for rest and play between the seasons, and treat themselves to the luxury and relaxation of sinking the shop and inventing and squandering charms all about, instead of abolishing such as they find, as is their habit when not on vacation. 13

The foregoing remarks about travel literature can be sifted and from them emerges a statement of Mark Twain's critical standards for that literature. First, a travel book should be accurate and truthful. Failures in this led to his condemning the Palestine travel books. Possession of accuracy and truth resulted in Mark Twain's praise of the Mississippi River descriptions. Second, a travel account should be clear and compact. Mrs. Praed was lauded for her clarity and the Rev. Mr. Parker for this quality and brevity. The correspondent's account in the Times-Democrat drew Twain's disfavor for its glossy verbiage. Third, a work on travel should be endowed with literary artistry. His commentaries on the descriptions of the Mississippi, the views of the Taj Mahal, and the picture of Venice illustrate this. Although the problem presented by the differences in word associations of reader and author will always be present, Mark Twain believed that the writer who produces a travel book that is accurate, concise, and artistic has succeeded. Few will disagree with Twain in this respect.

1. Edward Wagenknecht, Mark Twain, The Man and

p. 34. Cyril Cle Mass., T DeLance end, Ind p. 211. Mark Tv York, Ha Ibid., pp Mark Tv Bantam Ibid., pp Fergusor Twain, I Mark Tv York, H Ibid., p. Ibid., vo

TW

But -the said, "Geo —you kee

Then stration ing to the in Major the runt Ball to st

Cable and rage. insulted h said and Mark's 1 not again gized.

Major were seve men parte sands of to apologi smiled gr catcher in, for all

Yet Ma macy, ma together, Mark Tw the same

stionable conclusion that be correctly written and reader an exaggerated the differing word assods of reader and writer. 13 iteresting criticism of a nd in Mark Twain's comn Dean Howells' Venetian an admirer of Howells, passage describing Venice nd added:

Venice is there; of a nd Decay, fagged with damage and repulsiveother cities of the planet ith the policy and busiofession, come for rest the seasons, and treat luxury and relaxation hop and inventing and rms all about, instead ch as they find, as is not on vacation. 13

marks about travel literaand from them emerges a Twain's critical standture. First, a travel book and truthful. Failures in mning the Palestine travel of accuracy and truth reain's praise of the Missisptions. Second, a travel clear and compact. Mrs. for her clarity and the r this quality and brevity. 's account in the Times-'wain's disfavor for its Third, a work on travel with literary artistry. on the descriptions of the s of the Taj Mahal, and **c**e illustrate this. Although ted by the differences in of reader and author will Mark Twain believed that duces a travel book that e, and artistic has sucsagree with Twain in this

t, Mark Twain, The Man and

His Work, New Haven, Yale University Press, 1935,

y. 34.
 Cyril Clemens, Young Sam Clemens, Newton, Mass., The Graphic Press, 1942, pp. 60, 61.
 DeLancey Ferguson, Mark Twain: Man and Legend, Indianapolis, New York, Bobbs-Merrill, 1943, p. 211.

3. Delancey Ferguson, Mark Twam, Mar and end, end, Indianapolis, New York, Bobbs-Merrill, 1943, p. 211.

4. Mark Twain, The Innocents Abroad, vol. II, New York, Harpers, 1911, pp. 242, 243.

5. Ibid., pp. 241, 242.

6. Mark Twain, Life on the Mississippi, New York, Bantam Bocks, 1945, p. 194.

7. Ibid., pp. 195-197.

8. Ferguson, op. cit., p. 211.

9. Twain, Life on the Mississippi, pp. 309, 310.

10. Mark Twain, Following the Equator, vol. II, New York, Harper's 1899, p. 158.

11. Ibid., p. 162.

12. Ibid., p. 162.

13. Ibid., vol. I, p. 193.

14. Mark Twain, "William Dean Howells", What Is Man? and Other Essays, Stormfield Edition, New York, Harper's, 1929, p. 228.

#### TWAIN, CABLE AND THE PHILISTINE

(Continued from page 14)

But the big man, still smoking, finally said, "George Cable, inventor of the Creole you keep your religion and be damned, and I'll keep mine."

Then Mark indulged him in a demonstration of ill-concealed weariness, and going to the door, he unlocked it and called in Major Pond and requested him to take the runt out and buy him a Scotch High-Ball to steady his nerves.

Cable was furious with disappointment and rage. He declared Mark had grossly insulted him. He protested that all he had said and done was done in love, and for Mark's benefit, and he declared he would not again speak to Mark until he apolo-

Major Pond was sorely troubled. There were seventeen dates ahead, and if these men parted now it meant the loss of thousands of dollars. The Major begged Mark to apologize and heal the breach, but Mark smiled grimly and said the little Creole catcher could go to the devil he believed in, for all of him.

Yet Major Pond, by his masterly diplomacy, managed to hold the combination together, and every night for three weeks Mark Twain and George Cable read from the same platform, and made sly remarks about each other before the audience, and the audience thought it only kindly banter.

But never did they speak when they met, altho they traveled together five thousand miles, ate at the same table and stopped at the same hotels. Whenever Cable would enter a room where Mark and the Major were, the entrance of Cable was the cue for Mark to indulge him in a knock-wood demon-

Mark says he holds no enmity toward George, but he has ever refused to apologize, and thinks that George should apologize to him for trying to take away his religion, which consists in Every Man Minding His Own Business. On the other hand, Cable has given Mark up as Lost—irretrievably Lost. And there the matter rests.6

Much in the tale is quite obviously the result of Pond's or Hubbard's inventive genius;7 nevertheless, this possibly apocryphal story, in the light of the known disagreements and grievances that came be-tween the "twins," cannot be wholly dismissed as completely incredible.

missed as completely incredible.

1. Fred Lorch, Cable and His Reading Tour with Mark Twain." AL XXIII (January 1952), 471-486; Guy A. Cardwell, Twins of Genius (Michigan State, 1953); Dixon Wecter (ed.), The Love Letters of Mark Twain (New York, 1949), pp 218-240.

2. Cardwell. "Mark Twain's 'Row' with George Cable." MLQ XIII (December 1952), 363-371.

3. Maior J. B. Pond, Eccentrictites of Genius (New York, 1900), p. 231; Cardwell, Twins . . ., p. 9.

4. Pond, p. 370.

5. Ibid., 368-371. Pond refers to Hubbard as a "remarkable personality."

6. Elbert Hubbard, "Heart to Heart Talks with Phillistines by the Pastor of His Flock," Phillistine XII (April 1901), 146-149.

7. Cable, far from deliberately avoiding Twain and his "sinful ways." kept Twain company in the smoking compartment because he admired the way Twain smoked and cursed. Furthermore, when Twain requested his colleague to refrain from reading the Bible aloud, "Cable retired courteously." He did not attempt to convert his companion. Albert Biselow Paine, Mark Twain (New York and London, 1912), II, p. 784, Also, it has been shown that both men expressed friendship for each other shortly after the conclusion of the tour when the "perverted" stories began to circulate. (Cardwell Twins . . .).

### CHARLES HENRY SMITH

(Continued from page 12)

of Judge Nathan Hutchins in Lawrenceville. In due time he became a lawyer and while be was on a law case in Virginia early in

1861, he enlisted in the Confederate Army, rising to the rank of major. Later he admitted he "started writing rebellious letters while in the army in Virginia." In 1863 President Davis appointed him Judge Advocate of a military court in Rome, Georgia.

Once separated from the army, Smith served as a Georgia state senator, the editor of a newspaper in Rome, mayor of Rome, and a lawyer with a considerable private practice. He became a good friend of Henry W. Grady when young Grady came to Rome as a newspaper editor. Later when Grady moved on to the editorship of the Atlanta Constitution he introduced Bill Arp to a wider reading public through that news-

The story is told how one day in 1861 in Virginia, Major Smith was reading aloud to his friends a dialect reply to Lincoln's order dispersing Southern troops. A raw backwoodsman stood nearby listening intently to the entire letter. When the reading was finished, the mountaineer stepped forward and suggested Smith sign his-Bill Arp's name to the letter because "them's my sentiments eggzactly, squire." And thus was born the literary "Bill Arp."

As Smith grew older he mellowed from a sometimes brilliant satirist into a genial folksy philosopher who "hardly missed a week in dispensing good cheer, good advice, and good philosophy to the Southern peo-

Ample testimony of the admiration and affection in which Charles Henry Smith was held by his contemporaries was given in Columbia, South Carolina, where Smith was invited to lecture during a session of the legislature. That group adjourned to give him the use of their hall. He was escorted to the rostrum by the Governor, ex-Governor, the Judges of the Supreme Court, the Speaker of the House, and the President of the Senate. The local newspaper declared, "No such ovation was ever before

given to a public lecturer in the South."

In an attempt to evaluate Smith's influence in the South, The Atlanta Constitution a few days after his death described his writings as a "delightful mixture of unaffected wit, droll humor, sharp satire, common sense philosophy, reminiscent gossip, and realistic description."

Many people have tried to tag Bill Arp with one sentence. Probably the most nearly successful, and the one Smith himself would have preferred, made no mention of his writings. At his funeral, the Reverend Sam Jones said simply, "No man of all my knowledge had more friends than he, and none had fewer enemies."

#### HOW TWAIN COMMENTS

(Continued from page 8)

that misleading name is merely heredity and training. We have no thoughts of our own, no opinions of our own; they are transmitted to us, trained into us. ... And as for me, all that I think about in this plodding sad pilgrimage, this pathetic drift between the eternities, is to look out and humbly live a pure and blameless life, and save that one microscopic atom in me that is truly  $me cdots cdots^{23}$ 

Perhaps it is presumptuous to suggest a basis for these pessimistic social comments in the falkfore of the period, but, at the same time, it is necessary not to underestimate the influence of the imagination in shaping institutions and governing ideas. In a sense the history and literature, philosophy, and folklore, which we separate for purposes of study, are closely identified. Thus the tall tale, the hero, and the supernatural are fundamental concepts that carry on a firm working relationship with religions, social institutions, and histories, giving birth to them and, at the same time, growing out of them. Wherever fictions are bred and wherever belief is suspended, someone is likely to accept them for fact, even if momentarily. After a while, it is too late to do anything -24about the into histo

- 1. Walter
- 2. Loc. cit. 3. For exa County 274-282. 4. E. W. (p. 45-47.
- Mark T
- Harnett

- Mark To Ibid., p. Bernard
- 10. Shields pp. 44-4 11. Mark T
- 12. Dorothy Middle 13. B. A. E p. 208.
- 14. Charles City, Do 191-194.
- 15. Mark To 16. Mark To thur's C
- 17. Mark T 18. Mark T
- 19. Ibid., ch 20. Mark T thur's C
- 21. Mark Ty 22. Mark Ty thur's C
- 23. Ibid., p.

Botin, B. O York, Cro Blair, Walter ican Book

Brashear, M Hill, The Chaps. I, Clark, Thom The Bobb Clemens, Sa York, Har

Clemens, Sa Twain. Ne 1178 pp. Clemens, Sa and Broth

and Broth
Clough, Ben
New York,
Cowie, Alex,
New York
599-652.
DeVoto, Ben
Little, Bro
Dondore, De
Middle An
Press, 1932
McIlwaine, 1
man, Okl
1939, pp.
Meine, Fran
York, Alfr
West, Victor
Twain, Li

the South."

e Smith's influnta Constitution h described his ixture of unafrp satire, cominiscent gossip,

ed to tag Bill obably the most ne Smith himself no mention of 1, the Reverend o man of all my than he, and

#### IMENTS

page 8)

erely heredity o thoughts of our own; they ained into us. I think about lgrimage, this e eternities, is ve a pure and hat one micro-

ous to suggest a social comments iod, but, at the not to underestiimagination in governing ideas. iterature, philoswe separate for losely identified. , and the supercepts that carry ip with religions. ries, giving birth me, growing out are bred and someone is likely n if momentarily. to do anything about them, for they have begun to ferment into histories, social codes, and religions.

1. Walter Blair, Native American Humor, p. 3.

- 3. For example, The Jumping Frog of Calaveras County and Life on the Mississippi, pp. 260-261, 274-282.
- 4. E. W. Gould, Fifty Years on the Mississippi, p. 45-47.

- 5. Mark Twain, Notebook, p. 165.6. Harnett Kane, Deep Delta Country, p. 127.
- Mark Twain, Life on the Mississippi, p. 69

Bernard DeVoto, Mark Twain's America, pp. 151f. Shields McIlwaine, The Southern Poor-White, pp. 44-45.
 Mark Twain, Notebook, p. 178.

Dorothy Dondore, The Prairie and the Making of Middle America, p. 236.
 B. A. Botkin, A Treasury of American Folklore, p. 208.

Charles M. Russell, Trails Plowed Under. Garden City, Doubleday, Page and Company, 1927, pp. 191-194.

15. Mark Twain, Notebook, p. 196.
16. Mark Twain, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, pp. 687f.
17. Mark Twain, Tanana Control of the C

Mark Twain, Tom Sawyer, p. 327.
 Mark Twain, Huckleberry Finn, p. 443.

- Ibid., chap. 20.
   Mark Twain, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, p. 871.
   Mark Twain, Notebook, p. 195.

22. Mark Twain, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, p. 879.

23. Ibid., p. 731.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

Botin, B. O. A Treasury of American Folklore, New York, Crown Publishers, 1944, 918 pp. Blair, Walter, Native American Humor, Chicago, Amer-ican Book Company, 1937, 573 pp. Brashear, M. M. Mark Twain, Son of Missouri, Chapel Hill, The University of North Carolina Press, 1934, Chaps, I. II, III, IV, V.

Chaps. I, II, III, IV, V.
Clark, Thomas D. The Rampaging Frontier. New York,
The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1939, 320 pp.
Clemens, Samuel L. Mark Twain's Notebook. New
York, Harper and Brothers, 1935, pp. 158-214.
Clemens, Samuel L. The Favorite Works of Mark
Twain. New York, Garden City Publishing Co., Inc.,
1178 pp.
Clemens, Samuel L. Roughing It. New York, Harper
and Brothers, 1929, 2 vols.
Clouds, Par. C. The American Invarianties at Work.

and Brothers, 1929, 2 vols.

Clough, Ben C. The American Imagination at Work. New York, Alfred A. Knopf, 1947, 699 pp.

Cowie, Alexander. The Rise of the American Novel. New York, American Book Company, 1948, pp. 599-652.

DeVoto, Bernard. Mark Twain's America. Boston, Little, Brown and Company, 1932, 342 pp.

Dondore, Dorothy. The Prairle and the Making of Middle America. Cedar Rapids, Iowa, The Torch Press, 1926, Chaps. V-VII.

McIlwaine, Shields. The Southern Poor-White. Norman, Oklahoma, University of Oklahoma Press, 1939, pp. 40-74.

Meine, Franklin J. Tall Tales of the Southwest. New York, Alfred A. Knopf, 1930, passim.

West, Victor Royce, Folklore in the Works of Mark Twain. Lincoln, Nebraska, 1930, 88 pp.

BEAUTIFUL MARIANNE MOORE Grace Baer Hollowell

Of many words concerning This word, her word today Is by way of being By far the loveliest, quote,

"I am made to trust the author" Reminding this, there is in all Great Love, a tract, à hint of His Pride and His Prejudice

His that can comfort us both, When in the cult and the tumult of Him, His creatures even as Himself disappear, He blanks out the agony, the fear

That we could be left without Him, No longer the receivers of Life, To become as the flower-like women In some centuries become, pale,

White-capped, sad of mien, opaque of visage, From that unglad fate, this word you rescue, Giving back to it your own wonderful Passion and prejudice, comforting us both

By being not at all loathe to give, More than I am loathe to receive From you, Beautiful Marianne Moore More than a hint, more than a tract of His Pride, All-His-Beautiful-Prejudice.

### MOUNTAIN MAN Helen Price Stacy

I like a man who walks a rutted road And climbs up mountain stairs to reach a

Who measures friends by hillmen's ancient code

And gathers dreams atop a split rail bar. He sees the beauty in a star quilt sky And cups his hands to hold September hail; He sings a song as mountain fiddles cry And catches moonbeams in an old milk pail. But spinning dreams is not his only feat, For he is kin to earth, jack pine and oak. Behind his plow he furrows contours neat And builds his land with sturdy anvil stroke. He is an upland one, a hillborn man-One of the dreaming, working, loving clan.

### POETRY PAGE

#### DAPHNE AND APOLLO

Adele Mehl Burnett

A god
Once spied a maid.
Apollo was his name.
He chased, she fled, he caught her tight.
But no,

For in
His arms he held
No maid, but something hard
And rough. Fair Daphne had become
A tree.

Unfoiled,
Upon his bow
He twined the laurel leaves
And they became the emblem of
His love.

#### TO MY DOG AFTER INCOME TAX

Corinne Sherman

I wish that I could sit and beg
For chicken, lamb, and beef,
Then having feasted free of charge
Sink down in sweet relief.

I wish that lying on the rug
With all four limbs stuck up
Would be enough to keep from me
Stern retribution's cup.

I wish that I could sadly point
A long nose to the sky,
Then howl all night at that white moon
As she sails slowly by.

But I am your provider, Cute,
I have to work and pay,
And so my hair turns slowly white,
While you keep young and gay.

#### GORGEOUS MASQUE

Elizabeth Reeves Humphreys

We follow a narrow twisting lane Covered with golden coins Showered by trees On autumn sprees.

We see cavaliers in scarlet capes Ladies with tinted hair, And their yellow hose When the wind blows

Purple berries of amethyst And the headier red of rubies Are their jeweled rings . . . Autumn sings.

#### DANDELION

Charles E. Frazier, USAF

Dandelion with suit so green, Noblest soldier over I've seen, Why do you stand so tall and straight, Guarding the field and garden gate?

Oh! noble soldier with golden head, Why don't you rest or go to bed? Soon your gold will turn to gray, Then you'll die and fade away.

Many more will come in your wake, Spreading forth like a golden lake; Then you can lie and rest in the dew, Knowing no other has done more than you.

#### FAIR WARNING

Ben Greenwald

Who steals my purse steals trash
Or worse,
Until I harvest cash
From verse.

The manner in first book is pro thing in my caree sioned to write it, may have happen I am sure it cann

This is how it regular work at tl Liverpool Mercury ous income it p stories for which find a fairly rea numerous London existed in those da of the present cen the firm of C. Ar controlled three class-Pearson's, all long since defu close that it too write. One of the tion, a story of Mazarin, running words, caught the who was Pearson editor-in-chief. H usual twist resulti narrator (it was person) was the v course, a sort of lingering elements that beat behind hi sent for me, and a commission to lines. I should add were not only m also book publishe

It was a breat youngster of three never attempted to sustaining, an effor thousand words. No capacity to sustait eighty thousand wo call effort of that

Sent to Journal s on February 13, 1950, first time. The next nt Frank Swinnerton.

--26-

### How I Wrote My First Book

Rafael Sabatini

MASQUE Humphreys

twisting lane coins

scarlet capes

methyst d of rubies ings . . .

LION

zier, USAF

green, seen. Il and straight, garden gate?

olden head, go to bed? n to gray, e away.

your wake. golden lake; st in the dew, lone more than you.

RNING nwald

teals trash

The manner in which I came to write my first book is probably the least ordinary thing in my career. In fact, I was commissioned to write it. It is possible that this may have happened to other authors; but I am sure it cannot have happened often.

This is how it came about. I was doing regular work at the time on the staff of The Liverpool Mercury, and eking out the exiguous income it provided by writing short stories for which I was so fortunate as to find a fairly ready market amongst the numerous London monthly magazines that existed in those days. That was in the dawn of the present century. My connection with the firm of C. Arthur Pearson, which then controlled three magazines of fairly good class-Pearson's, The Royal and The Novel, all long since defunct—became gradually so close that it took all the stories I could write. One of these, entitled The Malediction, a story of France in the days of Mazarin, running to some four thousand words, caught the attention of Peter Keary, who was Pearson's managing director and editor-in-chief. He perceived in it an unusual twist resulting from the fact that the narrator (it was a story told in the first person) was the villain of the piece, but, of course, a sort of villain malgre lui, with lingering elements of nobility in the heart that beat behind his rascally conduct. Keary sent for me, and offered me there and then a commission to write a novel on similar lines. I should add in those days Pearsons were not only magazine proprietors, but also book publishers.

It was a breath-taking proposal to a youngster of three - and - twenty, who had never attempted to sustain, or thought of sustaining, an effort beyond some five or six thousand words. Not only did I doubt my capacity to sustain it through seventy or eighty thousand words, but the mere physical effort of that amount of writing ap-

Sent to Journal shortly before Sabatini's det on February 13, 1950, and here published for the first time. The next number in this series will be by Frank Swinnerton.

peared to me a daunting task. I did not, however, allow myself to be daunted. promptly agreed, betide what might. Within a fortnight I had plotted my lay-out, and I was at work. Four months later I delivered the script of a novel entitled The Lovers of Yvonne, which I thought superb, but which today appals me. Possibly a worse novel may have been written. Probably none ever

Pearsons, however, kept loyally to their contract, the novel was serialized both in the British and American issues of their magazine, and in book form, by their own firm in England and Putnam's in the United

It did not yield me the riches of Peru, yet the sum that I received was one that I could regard as substantial in those modest days. Apart from that the mere publication of that first book produced in my young heart an elation which endured until the reviews began to come in. It was not that they merely denounced the book as bad, but that an early critic having accused me of the grossest plagiarism, too many subsequent ones took up the chase of the hare thus started. It was said that if Stanley Weyman had not written Under the Red Robe, my Lovers of Yvonne would certainly never have been written, and I was held up to a contempt that would have been deserved if the accusation had been wellfounded. Actually, however, I had not read Under the Red Robe at the time, and the notion of the villain-hero exploited in that arresting novel had been independently evolved in the manner I have described. You conceive how I writhed under the lash.

The book had no sort of sale, nor deserved any. But this was far from a misfortune, because when some three years later I published by second book, it was widely accepted as my first. I have since done my utmost, with fair success, to see that The Lovers of Yvonne should not be dragged from the oblivion into which it rightly fell.

### Uncle Josh and the Traveling Salesmen

Wiley Thornton

There is now a stigma attached to salesmen in the mind of Uncle Josh. He just can't bring himself to trust anyone who has something to sell. Of course he doesn't say much about it. That's the kind of a man he is. When he doesn't particularly care for something or someone he seldom goes around talking about it. The best policy, Uncle Josh has always figured, is to stay away from the people whom you don't care for. This is what he tries to do.

0

Now there was a time when Uncle Josh trusted everyone—even his political opponents and all salesmen. He doesn't any more. After extensive research and by making a general nuisance of myself, I found out why.

Uncle Josh and Aunt Minnie had only been married a few years when the first experience with a traveling salesman occured. That man sold them a coal oil operating vacuum cleaner. Being a rapid talker he convinced them that the machine could practically do anything. Upon noticing Uncle Josh's picture of Woodrow Wilson hanging on the wall he casually remarked that Mrs. Woodrow Wilson used one just like it in the White House.

That sold Uncle Josh. He was a strict and rabid supporter of everything Woodrow Wilson advocated—in fact, he still argues that Wilson was the greatest man who ever lived.

The next day as Uncle Josh hoed cotton a few hundred yards from the house he heard a terrific explosion. Shortly thereafter he learned that the new vacuum cleaner had blown up. Aunt Minnie escaped injury. Together they somehow managed to extinguish the fire without serious damage.

This was the reason for Uncle Josh's prediction in 1917 that the White House would blow up during Woodrow Wilson's administration. People thought at the time his prediction was based on the fact of the nation being at war. Needless to say, it wasn't.

Not long thereafter another salesman called. That was the year the cotton worms were so bad and this man had the remedy. He was selling a white powder which was sure death to cotton worms. By actual count, he said, more than one billion worms had perished after the distribution of one gallon of the powder. Uncle Josh didn't ask him who counted the worms. It was selling for \$25.00 per gallon, so Uncle Josh purchased one gallon. He then shook the feller's hand and with gratitude in his eyes, told him that the powder would save a cotton crop valued at over \$1,000.00.

That very afternoon Uncle Josh used some of it. Anxiously he awaited the coming of the next day to determine the results.

On her way to the mailbox next morning Aunt Minnie noticed a strange sight. Thousands of worms were migrating in the direction of Uncle Josh's cotton patch. After closer examination she determined that the worms were coming from Sam Maybrey's field of cotton which was something like a half-mile away.

Desperate situations call for desperate measures. Uncle Josh hurriedly dug a small ditch around a part of the field and frantically pumped water into it. After pumping diligently for several hours, he sent Aunt Minnie to check on the situation. She reported back that the cotton worms could not only swim—some were even swimming upstream. Her brief survey of the situation also proved conclusively that every worm in that part of the country was determined to get its share of the white powder.

Uncle Josh sat down. He wiped the perspiration from his brow. Now he filled and lit his pipe and curls of smoke rolled upward.

"Minnie," he said, "I've been a Democrat all my life. Sam Maybrey is the only Republican in this part of the county, and now I've saved his cotton crop." 200000000

At the the Society Association, ing officers

DR. EDW. 8901 Car Normand

NELSON 1 205 E. B Kirkwood

W. C. GUI 317 N. I St. Louis

The M

200000000

At the meeting held on Tuesday, November 30th, at the Congress Hotel in St. Louis, the Society was reorganized, and the official name changed to "The Mark Twain Memorial Association." Chartered by the State of Missouri as a non-profit organization. The following officers were elected for the year 1954-1955:

<del>LECTOR CONTROL CONTRO</del>

HON. LEE MERIWETHER, President5211 Washington BoulevardSt. Louis 8, Mo.

DR. EDWARD HART, Vice-President 3901 Canterbury Drive Normandy, Mo. CYRIL CLEMENS, Secretary 841 N. Kirkwood Road Kirkwood 22, Mo.

NELSON E. LAVAT, Treasurer 205 E. Big Bend Road Kirkwood 22, Mo.

J. MARVIN KRAUSE, Attorney 407 N. Eighth Street St. Louis, Mo.

#### DIRECTORS

W. C. GUELS 317 N. Eleventh Street St. Louis, Mo. CARL BREIHAN 4939 Mattis Road St. Louis 23, Mo.

V. E. MICHAEL, M. D. 812 Olive St. Louis 1, Mo.

The Mark Twain Journal (founded as the Mark Twain Quarterly in 1936), is the official organ of The Mark Twain Memorial Association. Subscription \$3.00 a year.

# MARK TWAIN FOR YOUNG PEOPLE

By CYRIL CLEMENS

With an introduction by JAMES HILTON

I didn't get a chance to read "Mark Twain for Young People" as soon as it arrived, because my wife found it so absorbing, and so it is only now that I have been able to enjoy the whole vivid story without interruption. The very fact that you wrote with young people in mind (though with the assurance that adults also would read the book) gives it the direct simplicity of a fine yarn, and you have chosen the incidents so well that I read with the greatest eagerness. I thoroughly enjoyed the book.

Frank Swinnerton to Cyril Clemens

I have already read more of "Mark Twein for Young People" than my rigid regime to guard my one remaining eye allows. Put I am certainly and undoubtedly one of the kids for whom you designed the book, and how beautifully you have put into it just what we youngsters want to know and enjoy acquiring the knowledge of.

John Cowper Powys to Cyril Clemens

Cloth Binding, \$2.95 per copy

WHITTIER BOOKS, Inc.
31 Union Square West
New York City 3

January 19, 1955

Comtesse Jacqueline de Contades 21 Avenue Des Peupliers Villa Montmorency Paris XVI France

Dear Jacqueline:

Ruth and I have just returned after being absent from Washington for a long time and found your letter about Toni. Naturally I will tell the French Ambassador of my friendship with your family through many years.

Toni visited with us before we left on our trip and he has developed into a very fine young man which I shall be pleased to tell the Ambassador.

It is possible that Mrs. Spaatz and I may come to Europe in the late spring in which case we will see Helene and yourself.

Ruth joins me in love to all of you and best wishes for the new year.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

January 19, 1955

Mr. Harlow H. Curtice Office of the President General Motors Corporation General Motors Building Detroit 2, Michigan

Dear Mr. Curtice:

I appreciate very much your invitation of December 27 to attend the preview of GM MOTORAMA of 1955 in the Grand Ballroom of the Waldorf-Astoria, Wednesday, January 19. I regret very much that I was unable to attend but I have just returned to Washington after a long journey by automobile around the United States.

You will be delighted to know that I have been using a Buick automobile since last February and have driven it 30,000 miles with complete satisfaction. However, this is not for the purpose of General Motors' publicity.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

# GENERAL MOTORS CORPORATION GENERAL MOTORS BUILDING DETROIT 2, MICHIGAN

OFFICE OF THE PRESIDENT

December 27, 1954

General Carl Spaatz 1522 - 34th Street, North West Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

You are cordially invited to attend a special Preview of the GM MOTORAMA of 1955 in the Grand Ballroom of the Waldorf-Astoria in New York between 4 and 7 p.m. on Wednesday, January 19, 1955.

This occasion is planned to give our friends an opportunity to inspect our 1955 cars and the other exhibits preceding the public showing which opens Thursday, January 20, and runs through Tuesday, January 25. This Preview will provide n opportunity for some of our General Motors people to meet with business leaders, other friends and their wives. I hope to have the privilege of greeting you personally at the reception.

It is necessary that admission be by card only. I would therefore appreciate it if you would return to me the enclosed card indicating whether or not you will be able personally to attend. We will then arrange to transmit to you the credentials for two.

Very truly yours,

HARLOW H. CURTICE

January 18, 1955

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor, Mark Twain Journal Karkwood 22, Missouri

Dear Mr. Clemens:

I appreciate very much the clippings you sent me and also being voted a complimentary subscription to the Mark Twain Journal which I am sure I will enjoy reading.

I do not know whether President Eisenhower will run again in 1956 but rather expect that his sense of cuty will force him again to undertake the campaign and service following it.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

CYRIL CLEMENS, Editor
MARK TWAIN JOURNAL
KIKKWOOD 22, MISSOURI

9th December 1954

Dear General Spaatz

It gives us very great

pleasure to inform you that you have

been voted a complimentary life sub
scription to the Mark Twain Journal

which we hope you will enjoy reading.

Do you feel that President Eisenhower will run again in 1956?

The enclosed cutting may interest
you. Would you say that the facts
are correctly presented

Cyril Clemens

CYRIL CLEMENS, Editor
MARK TWAIN JOURNAL
KIRKWOOD 22, MISSOURI

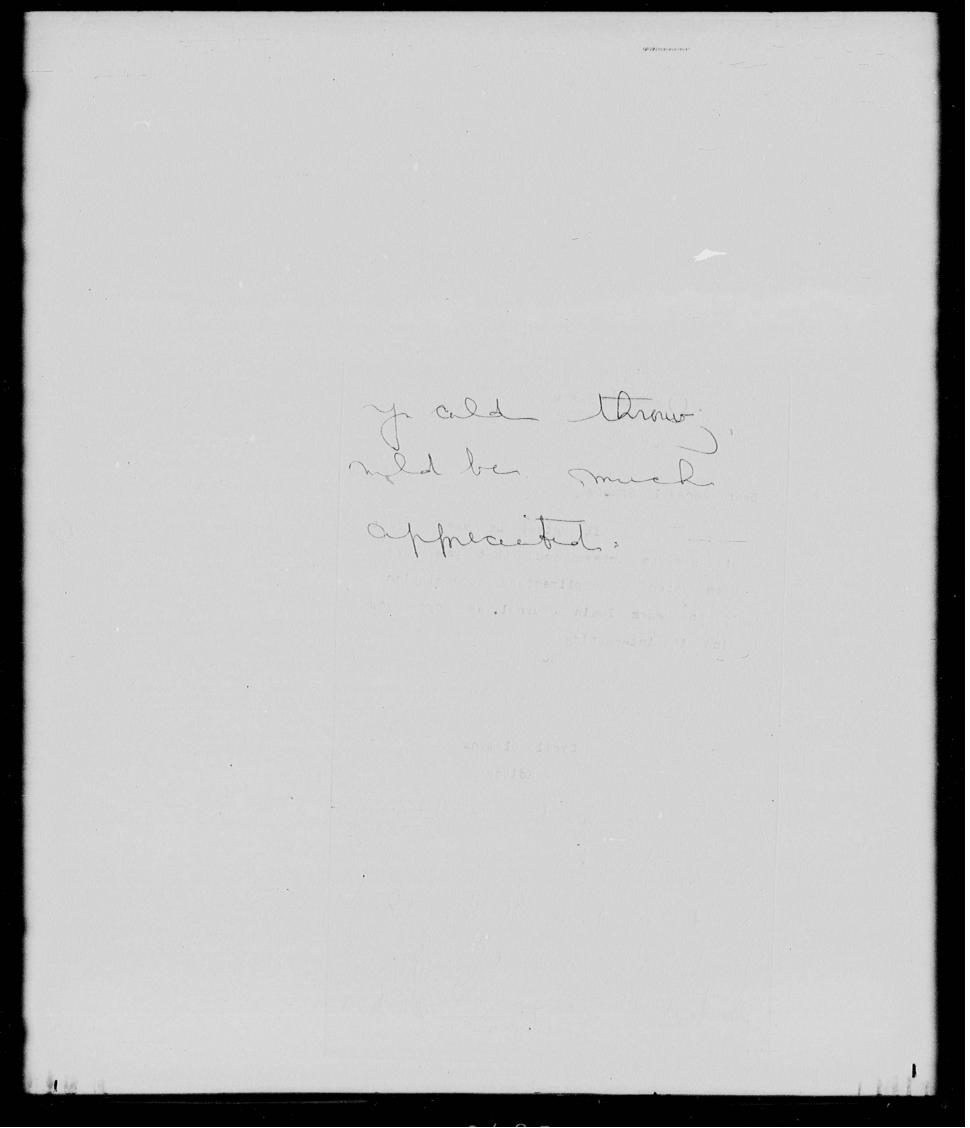
Dear General Spaatz

It gives us very great pleasure to inform you that you have been voted a complimentary subscription to the Mark Twain Journal. We hope you

find it interesting

Cyril Clemens

Editor



# AIR FORCE UNIT 'RIDES FENCES' TO CHECK RADAR

MARK IWAM JOURNAL KIRKWOOD 22, MISSOURI

Central Air Defense area, which includes 28 states in the middle of the country and stretches from Mexico to Canada.

The radar testers fly around the clock, winter and summer, going out beyond the border and then swinging back through the network.

In winter they buck northern blizzards and ice, and in summer they dodge southwestern thunderstorms.

### '55 MARCH OF DIMES ALMOST READY TO GO

Drive Starts Jan. 3-Results uary. of Mail Campaign Called Encouraging.

lot of money but it will be money joyfully spent." March of Dimes headquarters

March of Dimes headquariers has been opened in the Rialto Building, 220 North Fourth street. It will be an information center and meeting place for volunteer campaign workers. The

## PIANIST MALCOLM FRAGER

Planes Make Flights to See How Much Area Warning System Takes in.

We don't have to look food weather to make the tests effective," Gerwick said. "We generally find it anyway." The said of the plane at a time, boys riding fence, a team of fivers at Hill Air Force Base Goes out almost daily to check the invisible radar fence that helps guard the United States against air attack.

The mission of the 4677th Radar Evaluation Flight was disclosed in Washington boy the Air Force. The unit has been stationed at Hill, near Ogden, for about a year. There are only two others like it in the country—one at Hamilton Air Force Base, Calif, and one at Griffis Air Force Base, NY.

Maj. James A. Gerwick, Hill with the commander, says, "I think with the me will commander, says, "I think with the me will commander, says, "I think with the plane will be will be commander, says, "I think will be seen the same time, are people on the seen the same time, are project through to successful completion. At the same time, are project through to successful completion. At the same time, are project through to successful completion. At the same time, are project through to successful completion. At the same time, are project through to successful completion. At the same time, are project through to successful completion. At the same time, are project through to successful completion and adults now fighting for recovery."

Maj. James A. Gerwick has, in the St. Louis are a re nearly complete for the diversions in the St. Louis are a re nearly complete for the left state. Because of the h

CYRIL CLEMENS, Editor MARK TWAIN JOURNAL KIRKWOOD 22, MISSOURI

thurs., Dec. 9, 1954 ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH

# RUSSIA REPORTED **BOOSTING OUTPUT** OF ROCKET CRAFT

A.lso Has Developed Mother Plane to Carry Interceptors, Air Manual Reports.

LONDON, Dec. 9 (UP)—
"Jane's All the World's Aircraft" said today the Soviet Union is increasing its production of rocket-powered interceptors and farming out manufacture of some jet fighters to satellite nations.

The authoritative annual review of world aviation also reported that Russia has developed a mother-bomber that can carry two MIG-15 jets or a twinengined supersonic piloted rocket plane, although the experiments "did not seem to be on a large scale."

The plane that carries the twin fighters is a TU-4, an almost exact copy of the American B-29 but much smaller than the American B-36 which can launch and retrieve a jet fighter (F-84F Thunderjet). Jane's added that "it is quite certain that TU-4s were modified for airborne launchings of the Division of the American Banachings of the Division of the American and retrieve a jet fighter (F-84F Thunderjet). Jane's added that "it is quite certain that TU-4s were modified for airborne launchings of the Division of the American Banachings of the Division of the Banachings of

thurs., Dec. 9, 1954 ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH

# RUSSIA REPORTED **BOOSTING OUTPUT** OF ROCKET CRAFT

A.lso Has Developed Mother Plane to Carry Interceptors, Air Manual Reports.

LONDON, Dec. 9 (UP)—
"Jane's All the World's Aircraft"
said today the Soviet Union is
increasing its production of
rocket-powered interceptors and
farming out manufacture of
some jet fighters to satellite na-

some jet fighters to satellite nations.

The authoritative annual review of world aviation also reported that Russia has developed a mother-bomber that can carry two MIG-15 jets or a twin-engined supersonic piloted rocket plane, although the experiments "did not seem to be on a large scale."

The plane that carries the twin fighters is a TU-4, an almost exact copy of the American B-29 but much smaller than the American B-36 which can launch and retrieve a jet fighter (F-84F Thunderjet). Jane's added that "it is quite certain that TU-4s were modified for airborne launchings of the DFS (rocket) 8-346 built in the U.S.S.R."

The DFS was a German super-

U.S.S.R."

The DFS was a German supersonic rocket project. The Russians imported DFS parts from Halle in the Soviet zone after World War II and assembled the aircraft in the Soviet Union.

The plane is designed to fly near the speed of sound, Jane's said.

"Other rockets."

The plane is designed to riy near the speed of sound, Jane's said.

"Other recent developments have been the evolution from the ME (Messerschmitt) 163 and the 263 of a Russian rocket-propelled target-defense interceptor, and the pogression from the TU-4 and 'type 31' four-engined bombers to a four-jet swept-wing bomber unveiled momentarily on May 1, 1954," Jane's said.

The publication produced drawings of the new intercontinental four-engined jet atom bomber that startled Western military attaches when it flashed over Moscow at this year's May day aviation parade. It swept from horizon to horizon in 30 seconds.

Jane's reported Russia had some 360 factories producing aircraft and components distributed from the Polish border to the Sea of Okhotsk.

Though much of Jane's interest centered on the developments inside Russia, the United States and Britain were credited with making gigantic strides in aviation.

Jane's noted that the United States YF100A swept-wing jet was the first to exceed the speed of sound in level flight, setting a record of 755.149 miles per hour.

hour.

Both the United States and Britain are trying to solve the problems of vertical takeoffs and at "least four" vertical takeoff projects are under way in the United States. Brit testing the wingless "F. g. Redstead" that leaps straight up on the power of two jet engines.

January 18, 1955

Mr. James Bell Cress 1945 Byron Street Palo Alto, California

Dear Jim:

I just received your letter of the third of January. I have a portrait which might be suitable for placing at the Military Academy. It was painted by an artist who was a boyhood friend and is reasonably good.

We had a fine visit to the Rogue River this fall and caught plenty of fish.

It was certainly fine seeing all of the classmates at the Academy last June. We had a wonderful time.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

JAMES BELL CRESS Wear Footy: Herre you a picture sulfable for houging at West Point? We can working on gitting one of Bill somerwell - placed. Shis active was brot to a head by two requests for the one suitable pictures and will mable us to leave the ropes. But our unst acture in my opinion should he forward getting a kicture of you at the Kultary acadumy. you will doubthus be bury at the air Force academy but that is not whene you graduated. But her year to your Rule

July 16, 1954

Mr. Howard Cady, Henry Holt & Company, Inc., 383 Madison Avenue, New York 17, N. Y.

Dear Cady:

I hope you will pardon my long delay in answering your letter of June 15. In explanation, I have been absent from Washington for several months and am just catching up on my correspondence.

I would be perfectly willing to write an introduction to Galland's book but feel that I should know a little bit more about the contents than the brief synopsis you have given me. Would it be possible for you to give me in more detail some of his observations and particularly those concerning our own Air Force which, of course, would most interest the American people to whom I suppose the book will get its primary distribution.

I will be in Washington until the end of August. Thereafter I will again be absent for three or four months.

Sincerely,

General Carl Speats



### Henry Holt and Company, Inc. · Publishers

383 MADISON AVENUE...NEW YORK 17, N. Y.

EDITOR IN CHIEF

June 15, 1954

General Carl Spaatz 1522 34th Street N. W. Washington 7, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

Next fall we are publishing a book entitled THE FIRST AND THE LAST by Adolf Galland, commander of the Luftwaffe fighter forces. We feel that it is an honest, straightforward report on German operations 1938-1945. We also feel that it is very important that we have an introduction to the book in order that it may be properly presented to the American public for what it is: an enemy report. Naturally, you were the first person that occurred to us.

I am enclosing an editor's presentation of the book which I hope will give you an idea of its scope. I have just finished reading the English translation and find a great deal of information hitherto unknown to the American public.

It is our hope that you will be sufficiently interested in the subject to consent to write a short introduction. May I hope to hear from you?

Very sincerely yours,

Howard Cady

Howard Cady

HC/met

HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

THE FIRST AND THE LAST Pub. Date: October 1954 Pages: 320 EDITOR'S PRESENTATION

By: Adolf Galland Price: 53.95 Jacket: Letter -- design

#### Slogan

The rise and fall of German air power -- 1938-1945.

#### The Author

Adolf Galland assumed command of the Luftwaffe fighter forces at the age of 29. A veteran of the Spanish Civil War and numerous operational missions against the Allies, he found himself, late in the war, with the responsibility of defending German cities against Allied raids. His concept of defense called for increased fighter production, with the requisite priorities, and the development and use of jet and rocket aircraft which the Germans possessed in small numbers. Hitler, to the very end an offensively oriented thinker, preferred to concentrate upon retaliatory weapons such as the V-1 and V-2 missiles. The story of the conflict between Galland and Hitler makes this one of the most fascinating accounts to come out of the air war.

#### The Book

THE FIRST AND THE LAST deals with the beginning, success, and eventual failure of the German fighter forces. With vivid descriptions of the air war in Spain, the field days over France in 1940, and the Battle of Britain, this book adds much new material to the history of World War II. General Galland, who was charged with the responsibility of shifting from the offensive to the defensive after the deep penetration of Allied bombers into Germany, saw the gloomy portent of the heavy strikes against German industry. His fighters, which had once won freedom of the skies over Europe, dwindled to an alarming number. Hunted by long-range American fighters by day, harassed by RAF bombers by night, the Messerschmitts and Focke-Wulfs disappeared from the skies. Galland, when asked by Reich-Marshal Goering what he needed to stem the tide, replied, "Spitfires."

Thus the once-proud German fighter forces — the first in Europe — were destroyed piecemeal: The first became the last. The Germans, who had been the first to use massed fighter escort for bombers, the first to use fighters for close ground support, were unable to shift their concepts to meet a changing situation. The men around Hitler were unable to think in terms of defense. Galland, who envisioned squadrons of jet and rocket aircraft stemming the tide of Allied air attack, was doomed to disappointment. Hitler placed his faith in secret weapons, refused more fighter aircraft, while Galland watched the Fuhrer's dream of victory turn into a nightmare of defeat.

#### Sales and Promotion Suggestions

This will be the liveliest of all the German war memoirs. It reads well, and there is excitement and suspense as well as many fascinating descriptions of the war. This book will be of special interest to the thousands of U.S. bomber pilots and crews who flew missions over Germany.

SR 5/7/54 January 19, 1954

Mr. Tom Campbell Albuquerque New Mexico

Dear Tom:

Thanks ever so much for your nice Christmas message. I am sorry we did not get to see you during our last visit to Albuquerque but I believe you were out of town. We hope to see you next year when we go to the Clinic for the annual once-over.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl Spaats

September 22, 1953

Mr. Harry K. Coffey 1001 S.W. Tenth Avenue Portland 5, Oregon

Dear Coffey:

I certainly would like very much to attend the meeting of the Aeronautic Association in October. However, the plans for my entire year contemplate spending the month of October on the Rogue River. The forecast made by all experts is that October 8, 9, and 10 are the days when we will have the best fishing; in other words, the moon will be right.

I am sure that you will appreciate that I need the relaxation in order to stay alive long enough to do some more fishing.

Please give my best to the family.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

DR. C. C. CRISS, FOUNDER 1879-1952



HARRY K. COFFEY & ASSOCIATES
GEN. AGENTS FOR ORE, WASH, IDAHO & ALASKA
H. K. C O F F E Y, Manager
1001 S.W. TENTH AVENUE
PORTLAND 5, ORE.



UNITED BENEFIT LIFE INSURANCE COMPANY CMARIA

September 17, 1953

General Carl Spaatz 1522 - 34th Street, N. W. Washington, D.C.

Dear Tooey:

Your attendance in Portland, Oregon on October 8, 9, 10, 1953, is very important to all of us who are interested in the future of aviation because at this annual meeting of the National Aeronautic Association, we anticipate taking some very important steps in which you will be interested and should take a part.

In addition to our normal functions sanctioning air shows, air races, and timing record runs, fostering international air tours and air travel and supervising, administering and allotting the nation's outstanding trophies for aviation accomplishments, all coming under the Federation Aeronautique Internationale rules, our division of Soaring and Academy of Model Aeronautics will require an explanation of our Educational Program, we hope to be as successful, with your cooperation in this endeavor as we were in our promotion of the organization of the Civil Air Patrol.

Therefore, we expect to set up a program to promote aviation education for youth and the general public, to create a board for the development of National Aero Club facilities in air centers throughout the United States all affiliated so as to extend reciprocal accommodations.

The last and most important step to be taken at this meeting in addtion to usual business will be the establishment of a committee selected from the "Deans of Aviation" to work in conjunction with the NAA board of directors for the selection of trophy winners--those who would be entitled to citation for accomplishment for the advancement of aviation in the United States.

Mutual
WORLD'S LARGEST EXCLUSIVE HEALTH & ACCIDENT CO.



United
ONE OF AMERICA'S FOREMOST LIFE COMPANIES



I therefore urge that you put these dates on your calendar and notify us of the time of your arrival and accommodation you desire so that we may know that we can count on you.

With kindest personal regards, remain,

Sincerely,

Harry K. Coffey

Harry K. Coffey

HKC:GD

April 30, 1953

Mr. Cyril Clemens, Editor Mark Twain Quarterly Webster Groves, Missouri

My dear Mr. Clemens:

I was very glad to get your note of the 24th of April. I will try to think up some anecdotes and send them to you.

The ammunition shortage discussion has been rather confusing to me, and I would hesitate to state that all that was presented in the clipping you enclosed represents the actual facts of the case.

There was some difficulty, of course, in the early days of World War II in getting all the planes and guns that we needed. However, that situation was rapidly cleared up after we really got into the fighting and into production.

I am very glad to have the current Mark Twain Quarterly, which I find most interesting.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

YRIL CLEMENS, Editor
MARK TWAIN QUARTERLY
BSTER GROVES, MO.

24 April 53

Dear General Carl Spaatz:

of anecdotes about Mark Twain.

You may have one or two on tap
that you could send me. Perhaps
you have a favorite Twain yarn.

As you will probably agree, most
Americans have a favorite Twain
story.

The enclosed cutting has been called to our attention. Would you say that the facts have been correctly presented.

When you were in command, did you experience any difficulty in

securing the necessary munitions?

We take pleasure in sending you the current Mark Twain Quarterly.

You may find the articles on James Longstreet and General Eisen hower of interest

and Mrs spaatz

Cyril Clemens

5.276-18.00)

January 19, 1954

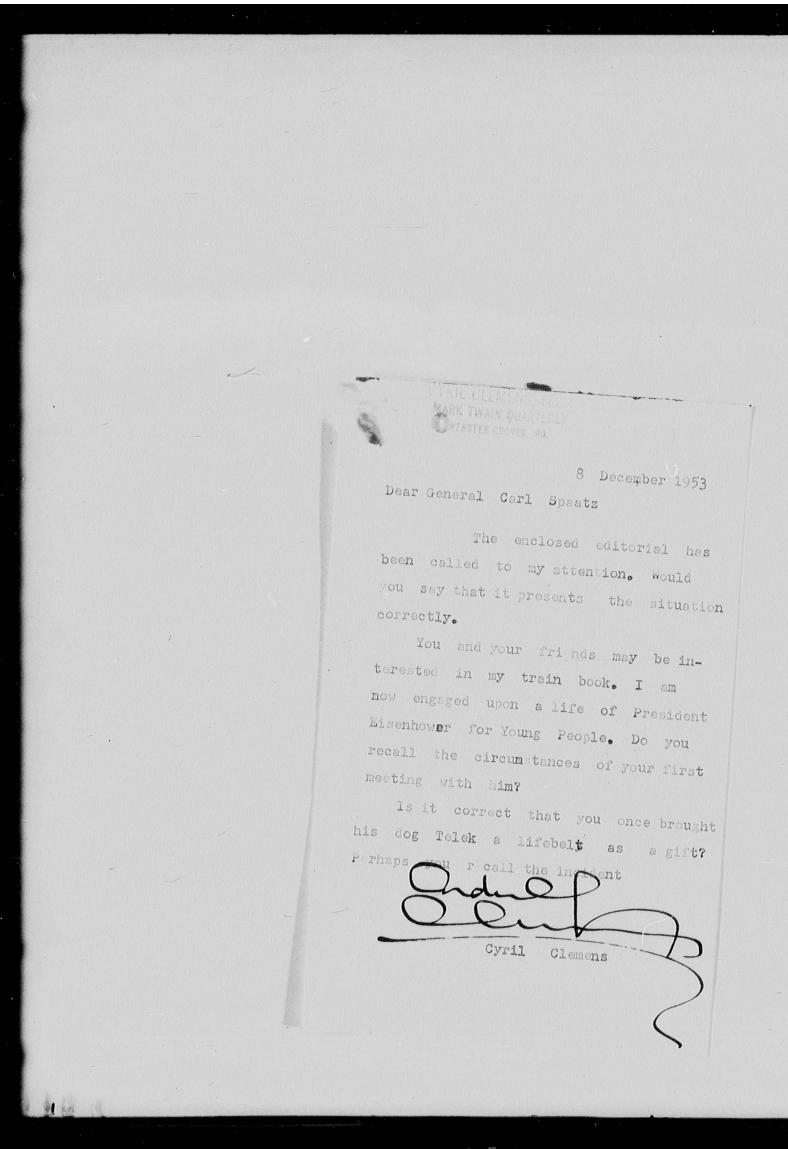
Mr. Cyril Clemens Mark Twain Quarterly Webster Groves, Missouri

Dear Clemens:

I have taken a long time to answer your letter of the 8th of December. Apparently you have undertaken quite a project in writing a life of President Eisenhower for young people. The first time I met Eisenhower was at West Point when he came in with the Class of 1915. I have a vague recollection of the incident you refer to about his dog Telek.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl Spaatz



December 4, 1953

Col. Benjamin F. Castle Milk Industry Foundation 1625 I Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.

Dear Ben:

I have just returned from a long absence from the city and find your letter of November 23 with the contribution to the Mayor Retter Memorial Fund. Thanks ever so much for your helpfulness. I am sure it is for a most worthy cause.

Hope to see you soon.

Sincerely,

General Carl Speats

## MILK INDUSTRY FOUNDATION

1625 EYE STREET, NORTHWEST

WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

November 23, 1953

General Carl Spaatz 1522 34th Street, N. W. Washington, D. C.

Dear Twoey:

It is a pleasure to enclose a small check in support of the fine work you are doing as Chairman of the Mayor Reuter Memorial Fund. Anything that will help those unfortunate children is indeed a worthy cause and I congratulate you on your unselfishness in assuming the burden of the chairmanship of the committee.

I haven't had the pleasure of seeing you in a long time but trust that before too many moons wane I will be seeing you at the Army - Navy Club.

Cordially yours,

Benjamin F. Castle

BFC:1m

Enclosure

December 4, 1953

Lt. Colonel James H. Curry, USAF Air Attache American Embassy Brussels, Belgium

Dear Curry:

Thanks ever so much for your note of the 16th of October. Flease pardon my delay in acknowledging it but I have been out of Washington for the past three months.

I am sure Mr. Joy found his visit to Brussels very pleasant. Thanks for all you did.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz



THE FOREIGN SERVICE
OF THE
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
OFFICE OF THE AIR ATTACHE
AMERICAN EMBASSY

Brussels, Belgium 16 October 1953

General Carl Spaatz NEWSWEEK 1227 National Press Building Washington 4, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

Mr. Joy was in Brussels during the weekend of 10-11 October. He was entertained by the Ambassador and Mrs. Alger and, knowing their hospitality, I feel certain he found the visit a pleasant one.

Sincerely,

JAMES H. CURRY Lt. Colonel, USAF Air Attache November 9, 1953

Brigadier General Merian C. Cooper Argosy Pictures Corporation 4024 Radford Avenue North Hollywood, California

Dear Coop:

This is a reply to your letter of October 27th in order to clear my correspondence record.

Inasmuch as we have already discussed the contents of your letter and also the "big document", there is not much more for me to say in writing.

However, Coop, I want you to know that you have been one of my heroes for many years and I treasure your continued friendship over all of this time.

Sincerely,

CAS:kv

General Carl A. Spaatz

Argosy Pictures Corporation 1024 Radford Avenue North Hollywood, California

John Ford

CHAIRMAN OF THE BOARD

Merian C. Cooper

PRESIDENT

October 27, 1953

General Carl Spaatz c/o Lt. Gen. Ira C. Eaker 10711 Sunset Boulevard Los Angeles, 24, California

Dear Tooey:

Don't be frightened by the size of this. The main letter is only sixteen pages long. The rest is supplementing documents, and I thought it might possibly interest you.

On retirement, I want to thank you for all you have done for me in the Air Force in both World War I and World war II. I shall never forget it. The thing I shall particularly not forget was when a red-headed, tough Major Spaatz took me up for the first time after Taylor and I crashed near that little village near Isscudum, which put Taylor out of commission for the rest of the war and I got a pretty bad head concussion. Your calm simplicity gave me confidence in flying again. I was scared at the beginning of that flight with you, but I can truthfully say that your easy nonchalance so reacted on me that I have never been scared - well not too much - in an airplane since -- and I have been shot over, shot down in flames, knocked down, crashed, and practically everything else that can happen in flying.

Thanks again.

Yours, as ever,

Coop

Merian C. Cooper, Brigadier General, USAF-Res. November 9, 1953

Mr. Leo M. Cherns
The Research Institute of America, Inc.
292 Madison Avenue
New York City, N.Y.

Dear Leo:

I have just gotten back to civilization, after spending the last month or so fishing on the Rogue River.

I am very sorry the State Department would not act more positively. I replied to your telegram through Glenn Jackson in Medford, Oregon, and hope that you received it in time.

Sincerely,

CS:kv

General Carl Spaatz

Leo. M.Cherne



September 28, 1953

General Carl Spaatz Newsweek Magazine 1227 National Press Bldg. Washington, D.C.

Dear General:

We missed you deeply at the Board meeting, but since you could not be there, you certainly deserve at least the pleasure of knowing that the Board expressed its unanimous appreciation for your efforts on the children air lift.

If only I had been able to do as well with the State Department as you did with the Air Force, the project would now be a reality. Unfortunately, the State Department will approve but will not request and the Air Force quite properly requires a request. I have not yet had a final no from the State Department but we're proceeding to make other plans involving commercial air craft and bus transportation while I will still continue to press for the cooperation which would make Air Force participation possible.

Meanwhile on October 24, IRC will begin one of the largest mass food distributions ever undertaken by a private agency. On that day we will begin the distribution in Berlin of more than 2,000,000 packages of butter to all refugees, Berlin unemployed, and we hope, over a million impoverished residents of the East Zone of Germany. We hope, too, that in one form or another we can begin the children air lift before the fall is over.

I hope your several months on the West Coast will be pleasant and the weather perfect.

With warm personal regards.

Sincerely

LC:ck

## UNITED STATES NAVAL ACADEMY

Annapolis, Maryland

IN REPLY REFER TO: 7010

9 November 1953

General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF (Ret.) 1654 Avon Place, NW Washington, D.C.

Dear General Spaatz:

I am taking the liberty of writing you for advice and information in connection with a study that I am undertaking on the subject of "Command Relationships in Amphibious Operations in World War II". This project has been authorized by the United States Naval Academy Committee for Naval History Fellowships which has awarded me the <u>James V. Forrestal Fellowship</u> for this purpose. The Office of the Chief of Military History, Department of the Army, for which I have recently completed two volumes in the series, <u>United States Army in World War II</u>, has granted me a year's leave of absence to pursue the study. I might add that I was co-author (with J. A. Isely) of the volume, <u>The U.S. Marines and Amphibious War</u>, Princeton University Press, 1951, and in the study now in hand will be pursuing further one of the most important aspects of the general theme of that volume.

As you are aware, the official records of World War II do not always provide the detailed information necessary for writing the full story of many aspects of the war. This is especially true in respect to matters concerning command relationships. For this reason, I am writing you and other officers of all the services who occupied leading roles in our amphibious operations in all theaters.

Enclosed is a list of questions which, I think, cover most of the problems arising out of command relationships in modern amphibious warfare. I would greatly appreciate it if you would examine the list and answer any or all of the questions insofar as you have the leisure to do so. I hope to elicit from those who know most about the subject not only information supplementary to the official records, but equally important, their personal ideas and opinions based on their experience. If you prefer not to be quoted, I shall of course honor your request to that effect.

Thank you very much for your consideration in this matter.

Sincerely yours,

Philip A. Crowl
c/o Department of English, History
and Government
U. S. Naval Academy
Annapolis, Maryland

Enclosure

## COMMAND RELATIONSHIPS IN AMPHIBIOUS OPERATIONS IN WORLD WAR II

- In the World War II amphibious operations in which you participated,\* were the relationships between ground, naval and air components governed by (a) the principle of unity of command, or (b) the principle of mutual cooperation? Which principle do you think is the more sound, and why?\*\*
- What provisions were made for the transfer of command of ground forces from the senior naval commander (or commanders) to the senior ground force commander (or commanders)?
- 3. To what extent, if any, did naval commanders retain control over ground forces after the troops had been established ashore?
- 4. Who had the final decision as to where and when reserve troops should be landed and committed—naval or ground force commanders?
- 5. Who had the final decision as to the assignment of amphibious shipping and the loading of troop supplies and equipment aboard ship?
- 6. Who had the final decision as to where and when supplies and equipment should be landed—naval or ground force commanders?
- 7. Who controlled close air support (if any) over the combat area—naval, air, or ground force commanders? How was this control effected?
- 8. Was any provision made for the transfer of control of close air support from naval to ground force or air force commanders after the troops had been established ashore?
- 9. In your opinion, was the organization of command in the amphibious operations in which you participated satisfactory? If not, would you explain?
- 10. On the basis of your experience, have you any specific suggestions to make as to the best methods of coordinating ground, naval and air components in amphibious operations?
- 11. Have you any suggestions as to where additional information on this subject might be obtained outside of the official records——i.e. through personal correspondence, in special studies prepared by staffs, service schools, and the like?

<sup>\*</sup> Please specify which amphibious operations you participated in.

<sup>\*\*</sup> By definition, "unity of command" in a U.S. joint operation vests in one commander the authority and responsibility for designating the missions and for controlling the action of all the forces (Army, Navy, Air Force, and Marine Corps) participating. When the principle of "mutual cooperation" is followed, the commanders of participating services are co-equal.

September 22, 1953

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor Mark Twain Quarterly Webster Groves, Missouri

Dear Mr. Clemens:

Thanks ever so much for sending me a copy of your little book, "Mark Twain and Dwight D. Eisenhower."

We were all very sad about General Wainwright's death. He was certainly a fine soldier and suffered greatly during his imprisonment.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

RIL CLEMENS, Editor
RK TWAIN QUARTERLY
WEBSTER GROVES, MO.

2 September 1953

Dear General Carl Speatz:

I am sending you a copy of my lille book, "Mark Twain & Dwight D. Eisenhover" which I hope you will find of some interest.

Too bad about General Wainwright's being near death. Did you know him well?

The enclosed cutting may interest you. Do you feel that General Gruenther is correct in his state-ments. The enclosed pictures may also

Cyril Clemens

July 21, 1953

Mr. Ken Christie Cities Service Green & White Quartet c/o National Broadcasting Company 30 Rockefeller Plaza New York, N. Y.

Dear Christie:

I certainly appreciate your sending the records of your quartet. Needless to say, I was intrigued as everyone else was with their singing at the recent Alfalfa party.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl Speats

July 10, 1953

General J. Lawton Collins Cuarters 8 Fort Leslie J. McNair

Dear Joe:

Thanks ever so much for your nice birthday message. I have been out of town for the past three weeks, hence the delay in answering it.

My best wishes for you in your new assignment.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats



WASHINGTON

22 June 1953

Dear Tooey,

Since I shall be out of the country on the 28th, I want to take this opportunity to wish you a very happy birthday. Gladys and I both hope that this day will be a most enjoyable one for you and Ruth, and that the coming years will bring you an abundance of all good things.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF-Ret. 1522 34th Street, N. W.

Washington 7, D. C.

May 28, 1953

Hon. T. O. Cowgill Mayor Cody, Wyoming

My dear Mayor Cowgill:

In reply to your letter of May 12, I regret very much that I will be unable to be in Cody on June 7. I will be in Cheyenne on the 1th and 5th of June but must be back in Washington on June 6th for a very important engagement.

Very truly yours,

General Carl Speats

## THE CITY OF CODY

CODY, WYOMING

T. O. COWGILL, MAYOR SCOTT NYSTROM ART MANORGAN ALBERT SCHULTZ REX VANDERHOFF DR. E. CHET RIDGWAY WALLY WALSH



May 12, 1953

JONES & FILLERUP
CITY ATTORNEYS
JOHN R. COLEMAN
CITY CLERK & TREASURER
VERA FEELEY
DEPUTY TREASURER
CHARLES H. STUMP
POLICE JUDGE

General Spatz USAF Bolling Air Force Base Washington 25, D. C.

Dear General:

You are undoubtedly aware that from June 1 to June 7,  $1953\ \text{marks}$  the 50th Anniversary of Powered Flight in the United States.

On June 7th, the City of Cody is dedicating its new airport and the first commercial plane will land here on a regular scheduled flight on that date.

The Frontier Airlines which will operate the Cody Field, and the City of Cody are planning a great celebration, both as a dedication service, and in celebration of the 50th Anniversary of this type of flying.

The City of Cody and Frontier Airlines urgently request you to be present at our celebration which will be at the Cody  $^{\rm F}$  ield on June 7, 1953.

Many notables from the Government Service and all Major Airlines will be represented here. We also expect the Governor of our state and also Governors from the adjoining states to be present. We have also invited our Congressional Delegation.

We will appreciate very much hearing from you and much more seeing you on June 7th. With kindest regards.

Very truly yours,

TOC/kh

C-C

May 19, 1953

Mr. Lee Brantly Vice President The Crowell-Collier Publishing Co. 640 Fifth Avenue New York 19, New York

Dear Brantly:

In reply to your letter of May 11, I have read with the greatest of interest the Collier's issue of May 23. You are certainly to be congratulated on this splendid article. Your interest in aviation throughout the years is well known to all of us and is most sincerely appreciated.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

### THE CROWELL-COLLIER PUBLISHING COMPANY

640 FIFTH AVENUE · NEW YORK 19, N. Y. PLAZA 9-1000

WOMAN'S HOME COMPANION
THE AMERICAN MAGAZINE
COLLIER'S, THE NATIONAL WEEKLY

May 11, 1953

General C. A. Spaatz 1522 34th St. Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

As a Tribute to Fifty Years of Powered Flight and as a contribution to the fine work of the Doclittle Committee in its efforts to carry through a real celebration of the anniversary, Collier's issue of May 23rd, as you will see from the enclosed copy, carries a dramatic forecast of the Commercial Plane and the Airport of the future.

In gathering the data for this job, Mr. James J. Haggerty -one of the nation's foremost experts on Aviation -- personally
interviewed leading Aviation designers, manufacturers and airline officials in both Europe and the United States. This
article, together with the Editorial, is the latest of 1269
features on Aviation which Collier's has carried in the 50
years since Kitty Hawk -- an average of one every two weeks.

Collier's believes that a healthy -- thriving Aviation industry is important to our Defense. This was demonstrated in the early days of World War II - and again in Korea -- when Commercial Transport equipment -- and personnel -- ready-at-hand -- contributed so much.

Any comments you care to make will be noted with great interest.

7

TLBrantly/M

May 19, 1953

Mr. Cyril Clemens, Editor Mark Twain Quarterly Webster Groves, Missouri

Dear Clemens:

This is in reference to your note of May 16. The quote you enclosed is substantially correct. It was contained in a Newsweek article written in 1950 after I had visited General MacArthur.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

CYPL CLEMENS, Editor
K TWAIN QUARTERLY
LEBSTER GROVES, MO.

16 May 1953

Dear General Spaatz:

The enclosed cutting has been called to our attention. Are you correctly quoted therein? Please return at your convenience.

When will your book appear?

Cyril Clemens

Your splendid Newsweek articles are exceedingly stimulation and a real contribution to American history.

Is Stonewall Jackson your favorite general in history?

May 15, 1953

Mr. Benjamin F. Castle 1625 I Street, N. W. Washington 6, D. C.

Dear Ben:

In reply to your letter of May 13, I am sending a recommendation to Judge Whitaker for the membership of Bobby Sharp.

Sincerelyk

May 15, 1953

Judge Samuel E. Whitaker 4921 Quebec Street N. W. Washington, D. C.

My dear Judge Whitaker:

I just learned that Scanlon and Castle have proposed Air Marshal Bobby Sharp for membership in the Burning Tree Club. I knew Bobby Sharp during World War II and since. He is a most congenial companion and I am sure the members of the Burning Tree Club would get much pleasure from their association with him if he is invited to membership.

Sincerely,

BENJAMIN F. CASTLE 1625 EYE STREET, N. W WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

May 13, 1953

General Carl Spaatz 1522 34th Street, N. W. Washington, D. C.

My dear Tooey:

Mike Scanlon and I have proposed Air Marshal Bobby Sharp (A. C. H. Sharp) for membership at the Burning Tree Club. I am sure that Sharp would be most appreciative if you would write a letter to Judge Whitaker saying that you know him and that you feel that he would be a congenial fellow member.

ordially yours,

Benjamin F. Castle

March 10, 1953

General Chou Chih-jou Chief of General Staff, MND Taipeh, Formosa

Dear Chou:

I very much appreciated the very fine hospitality you extended to me during my recent visit to Taipeh. All of the party enjoyed our contact with you and your officers and we thoroughly appreciated the kindness you showed us.

I am counting on the hunting trip in China at some future time.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

February 11, 1953

Mr. Cyril Clemens President International Mark Twain Society Webster Groves 19, Missouri

My dear Clemens:

I appreciate very much your nice note of February 6 with the Certificate as a Knight of Mark Twain.

I will try to be with you on the occasion of the Mark Twain Birthday Banquet November 30 in St. Louis. However, that is too far ahead for me to make definite plans and I will let you know some time during the late summer whether or not I can be with you.

Sincerely,

#### CYRIL CLEMENS, President

CYRIL CLEMENS, President

HON. HARRY S. TRUMAN, Honorary President

RT. HON. WINSTON JRCHILL, English Representative

RT. HON. CLEMEN R. ATTLEE, Honorary Member

G. BERNARD SHAW, Honorary Member

EDWARD CARDINAL MOONEY, Chaplain-General

GENERAL DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER, Honorary Member

MRS. FRANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT, Daughter of Mark Twain

HON. ALBEN W. BARKLEY, Knight of Mark Twain

INTERNATIONAL MARK TWAIN SOCIETY WEBSTER GROVES 19, MISSOURI

6 February 1953

Dear General Carl Spaatz

You are cordially

invited to address the

Msrk Twain Birthday

quet, Monday, November 30th

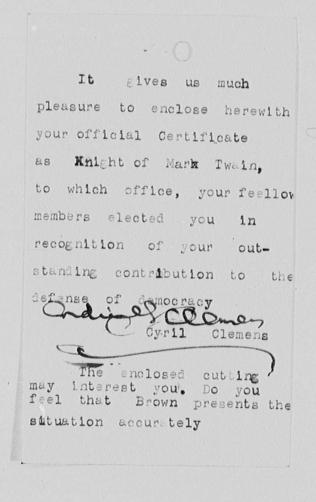
in St Louis. You hope you

and Mrs Spaatz can be with

us on this festive occasior

A Society whose purpose is to knit the whole world in bonds of cultured peace. —A. E. COPPARD

THE MARK TWAIN QUARTERLY
Is the Society's Official Organ



January 28, 1953

Lt. Col. George A. Carroll, USAF Reserve Information Officer Headquarters Continental Air Command Mitchel Air Force Base New York

My dear Carroll:

I am very sorry to be so late in answering your letter of Jamuary 6 but I have been either out of town or tied up so completely that I could not respond.

It was impossible for me to be at the Luncheon press conference in New York on January 22.

I have read what General Johnson said on this occasion and think it was a very excellent presentation of the contribution of the Reserve. I think Johnson is a marvellous selection for this job and hope he continues the good work.

Sincerely,

HEADQUARTERS
CONTINENTAL AIR COMMAND
MITCHEL AIR FORCE BASE, NEW YORK

IN REPLY REFER TO:

6 January 1953

General Carl Spaatz, USAF (Ret.) NEWSWEEK 1229 National Press Building Washington, D. C.

Dear General:

Lieutenant General Leon W. Johnson, our Commanding General, is planning a luncheon press conference for about a dozen aviation and military writers in New York City on Thursday, 22 January, at which he will wrap up in facts and figures the contribution of the Air Force Reserve during the  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years of the Korean war.

If you are in New York on that date, we would like very much to have you come. It would be at the Wings Club or a midtown hotel and I would advise you of the time and place next week.

Aside from the pleasure of your company, I am frank to say we would certainly like to see one of your columns built around the doings of Air Force Reservists on EAD the last couple of years.

Sincerely,

GEORGE A. CARROLL Lieutenant Colonel, USAF Reserve Information Officer January 2, 1953

Brigadier-General Charles C. Curtis, NGUS 2625 Allen Street Allentown, Pennsylvania

Dear Curtis:

Thanks ever so much for the lighter which you so kindly sent me. I appreciate it very much.

With best wishes for a Happy New Year, I am

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

December 2, 1952

General Carl Spaatz United States Army Air Forces, Retired c/o Pentagon Washington, D. C.

Dear General:

Since you have been a guest of the Honorary First Defenders, I thought you might like to carry a lighter as a remembrance of your visit. This is the one which they sent out during the past year to over 500 members of the Allentown units of the National Guard. The list included all members in Federal service, as well as those who were affiliated with the local units which were not inducted.

With kindest personal regards and best wishes to you and yours, I am

Sincerely,

Chas. C. Curtis

Brigadier-General, NGUS

CCC:AWB

P.S. The lighter is being sent you under separate cover.

C.C.C.

6 6

December 26, 1952

Mr. Harlow H. Curtice Acting President General Motors Corporation General Motors Building Detroit 2, Michigan

Dear Curtice:

In reply to your letter of December 24, I appreciate very much your invitation to be present at the special Preview of the CM Motorama of 1953 in the Grand Ballroom of the Waldorf Astoria on Friday, January 16.

I hope to be in New York for this occasion.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

# GENERAL MOTORS CORPORATION GENERAL MOTORS BUILDING DETROIT 2, MICHIGAN

OFFICE OF THE PRESIDENT

December 24, 1952

General Carl Spaatz 1522 34th Street, North West Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

I very much hope you will be able to attend a special Preview of the CM MOTORAMA of 1953 in the Grand Ballroom of the Waldorf Astoria in New York between 4 and 7 p.m. on Friday, January 16.

We plan on this occasion to give our friends an opportunity to inspect our 1953 cars and the other exhibits preceding the public showing which opens Saturday, January 17, and runs through Friday, January 23. This Preview will provide an occasion for some of our General Motors people to meet with business leaders and other friends. I hope to have the privilege of greeting you personally at the reception.

It is necessary that admission be by card only. I would therefore appreciate it if you would return to me the enclosed card indicating whether or not you will be able to attend. We will then make the arrangements to transmit to you the credentials for yourself and one guest.

Very truly yours,

HARLOW H. CURTICE Acting President May 16, 1952

Colonel Harry K. Coffey Civil Air Patrol Portland, Oregon

Dear Harry:

Thank you for your letter of May 7.

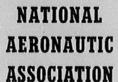
I must regret the invitation to be in Portland on December 17. My plans have been completed for the remainier of this year and December will find me in South Carolina.

ness. We will certainly miss you on the National Executive Board. I hope you can come back with us quickly. We missed you very much at the National Board meeting this week.

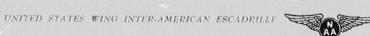
Mrs. Spantz joins me in semling best regards to Mrs. Coffey and yourself.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl Spaatz



1025 CONNECTICUT AVENUE, WASHINGTON 6, D. C.



UNITED STATES REPRESENTATIVE FEDERATION AERONAUTIQUE INTERNATIONALE

May 7, 1952

HARRY K. COFFEY

DONALD D. WEBSTER General Manager

WILLIS BROWN JON D. CARSEY ADMIRAL LUIS deFLOREZ ADMIRAL EMORY S. LAND EDWARD C. SWEENEY Vice Presidents

MRS. MARY M. BROWN EDWARD C. SWEENEY

MISS MAE SIMPSON WILLIAM P. MacCRACKEN General Countel

### EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE

Joseph T. Geuting, Jr. Chairman Jacqueline Cochran Harry K. Coffey Roger Fleming Louis E. Leverone Jennings Randolph

#### BOARD OF DIRECTORS

BOARD OF DIRECTORS
Miss Jacqueline Cochran
Harry K. Coffey
Frederick C. Crawlord
Arthur I. Currey
Lt. Gen. Ira C. Eaker, USAF, Ret.
Roger, Fleming
Joseph T. Geuting, Jr.
Olin Harrison
William Kite
Louis E. Leverone Louis E. Leverone Rudy C. Mueller Mrs. Frances W. Nolds John K. Northrop Mrs. Ruth Law Oliver Jannings Randolph Ben Regan L. L. Schroeder Earl F. Slick Col. Roscoe Turner
A. Paul Vance
John F. Victory
Harry W. Wallingford

General Carl A. Spaatz Headquarters Civil Air Patrol United States Air Force Bolling Air Force Base Washington 25, D. C.

### Dear General Spaatz:

HKC:GD

The Aero Club of Oregon, the largest membership in any chapter of the National Aeronautic Association at Portland, Oregon, with new addition to their building, are going to celebrate Kittyhawk Day this year, Wednesday, December 17th, in a big way and have asked that I write and see if you would find it possible to be with us on that occasion. We would certainly like to have

With kindest personal regards, remain,

Sincerely,

THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526

August 14, 1952

Mr. Harry K. Coffey Aero Club of Oregon Portland, Oregon

Dear Harry:

I appreciate very much the invitation in your letter of August 5 to visit Portland on December 17. At the present time I am uncertain just what part of the United States I will be in at that particular time but if at all possible I will join you in Portland on that occasion.

I will keep you informed as to my movements and the possibility of being there.

Mrs. Spaatz joins me in very best wishes to Mrs. Coffey and yourself.

General Carl Spaatz

NATIONAL AERONAUTIC ASSOCIATION

1025 CONNECTICUT AVENUE, WASHINGTON 6, D. C.



UNITED STATES REPRESENTATIVE FEDERATION AERONAUTIQUE INTERNATIONALE

August 5, 1952

HARRY K. COFFEY President DONALD D. WEBSTER

DONALD D. WEBSTE General Manager

WILLIS BROWN
JON D. CARSEY
ADMIRAL LUIS deFLOREZ
ADMIRAL EMORY S. LAND
EDWARD C. SWEENEY

MRS. MARY M. BROWN Secretary EDWARD C. SWEENEY Treasurer MISS MAE SIMPSON

MISS MAE SIMPSON Assistant Secretary-Treasure WILLIAM P. MacCRACKEN General Counsel

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE

Joseph T. Geuting, Jr. Chairman Jacqueline Cochran Harry K. Caffey Roger Flaming Louis E. Leverone Jennings Randolph

BOARD OF DIRECTORS
Miss Jacqueline Cochren
Harry K. Coffey
Frederick C. Crawlord
Arthur I. Currey
Lt. Gen. Ira C. Eaker, USAF, Ret.
Roger Fleming
Joseph T. Geuting, Jr.
Olin Harrison
William Kite
Louis E. Leverone
Rudy C. Mueller
Mrs. Frances W. Noline
John K. Northrop
Mrs. Ruth Law Oliver
Jennings Randolph
Ben Regan
L. L. Schroeder
Earl F. Slick
Col. Roscoe Turner
A. Paul Vance
John F. Victory
Harry W. Wallingford

General Carl Spaatz 1522 - 34th Street, N. W. Washington, D. C.

Dear Tooey:

This is a personal invitation to you to visit Portland on Wednesday, December 17, which is Kittyhaw Day, the first flight of man. The Aero Club of Oregon is holding an outstanding event at that time and it was the Committee's unanimous choice that you be selected and invited to be with us and talk to us about whatever you choose, and of course we know it naturally will be regarding aviation.

Mrs. Coffey and I would very much enjoy having you and Mrs. Spaatz come and stay with us. Looking forward to seeing you in Detroit the latter part of this month and having the pleasure of introducing you at the World's largest aeronautical club, remain,

Sincerely,

HKC:GD

Harry K. Coffey

July 21, 1952

General J. Lawton Collins Chief of Staff, U. S. Army The Pentagon Washington 25, D. C.

Dear Joe:

Thanks ever so much for your nice birthday note. Ruth and I have been vacationing and fishing in Florida for the past month. Hence, my tardy acknowledgement.

Sincerely yours,

GENERAL CARL A. SPAATZ



WASHINGTON

28 June 1952

Dear Tooey,

Just a note to wish you many happy returns of the day. Gladys joins me in hoping that this birthday is a happy one and that the coming year will bring you and Ruth an abundance of all good things.

Sincerely yours,

eccolina

General Carl A. Spaatz, USAF-Ret. 1522 34th Street, N. W.

Washington 7, D. C.

# KODAK-PATHÉ

R. P. SEINE 880 C.A.O

SIÈGE SOCIAL 39, AVENUE MONTAIGNE ET 17, RUE FRANCOIS 19 PARIS (VIII!)

General Carl A. Spaatz 1522, 34th Street North West NW Washington D.C.

June 10, 1952

Dear Touey:

We are having a very fine tour of the European capitals and have seen a lot of your old pals. I saw a great deal of Ike before he went back into the political arena and from what we read in the papers over here, he must be in that up to his ears.

We have just come back from Madrid where we saw Augue Kissner and his gang and Ambassador Anderson flew us back to Paris in the style to which we used to be accustomed. We are off to England Friday and will be there a couple of weeks before we sail back on June 27.

I am hoping very much that either you or Collingwood are going to be able to get me passed the doors of conventions, either as an office boy or in another capacity.

I have a room at the Conrade Hilton and expect to fly up there on Monday July 7.

Can you drop me a line to my London office, Kodak Limited, Kingsway, W.C.2., and let me know what can be done in lanything. I can also be reached at my New York Office, 342 Madison Avenue, telephone Murray Hill 7-7080 on Friday July 4 where I will be before going up to Maine for that week-end.

Julian is in his usual good form and I believe was out with your boss Malcom Muir last night.

Love to Ruthie,

EPCurtis:SC × Thurs July 3rd

Sincerely yours, Tonger serving

Led regular English water,

Sevelagis on sacation

June 3, 1952

Dr. Turner Catledge, M.D.M.C. Editor, New York Times New York, N. Y.

Dear Fellow Member:

The first thing I did upon receiving your very handsome gift was to write in it that I must acknowledge to you its receipt. However, it disappeared from my desk at home and only yesterday I found that Ruth had appropriated it for herself. Of course, I immediately recovered it and now have it in my possession again.

Last night we used it for an election poll of a group of ten assorted citizens including one multimillionaire, one lawyer with more money than he knows what to do with, one osteopath, also lined with money, two retired Air Corps officers, and their assorted wives.

The result of the poll was very interesting: five for Taft and five for Eisenhower. This may be only a coincidence but all the wives voted for Eisenhower and all the men voted for Taft. But I would not be surprised if that is how the Republican vote will be divided this election since the women seem to like sex appeal in their candidates.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spasts

JAMES BELL CRESS
1945 BYRON STREET
PALO ALTO, CALIFORNIA
2011 June 1952.

Dear Toohey:

Your prominence in Air Force Matters causes me to burden you with this letter. Please forgive a friend.

In 1941 I was in a citse air-support problema C.P.X. where incidentally Ike was Chief of Staff. Since about that time i've been doubly interested in close air support for infantity. This was increased by winding up as a doughboy and receiving most considerate treatment.

I note that Bradleys book states that under certain conditions where the infantry division in Europe ran around 40% casualties, the infantry rifle platoons had losses of 80-90 %. A general officer who was one of our best personal fighters wrote me that the losses recently have run in the area of 95%. It seems evident that something must be done for the infantry platoon, and one improvement that all intimately associated with ground fighting seem to agree upon, is better close air support. (this does not refer to isolation of the battlefield)

The May 17, Army Navy Air Force Journal reports:
"Sec. Pace sees greater use of aircraft by Army". In
the same issue page 1140, George Kenney is quoted as
saying at The Air War College graduation, "If there
is a chance that strategic bombing can bring the enemy to his knees, how much of that power should we
siphon off for the support of the ground forces who
can at best perform a holding mission." I've suspected this feeling by some airforce generals for a considerable time. Further, the present organization for
close air support is bad, with its split responsibility
and responsiblity with out authority. Besically it is
unsound and probably will never work satisfactorily
when the going is tough. Why let the Marines boast
that their close support aviation has it allover
that which the Army receives.

(2)

JAMES BELL CRESS 1945 BYRON STREET PALO ALTO, CALIFORNIA

You may not agree with the above, but every man with intimate experience in ground fighting, that I have talked to, and they are not few, does agree. As of today the good work of the Air Force and much of it is splendid, is clouded by this issue. So I'm suggesting, why does the Air Force not give the close air support to the Army? You might loose a few Generals, but in the opinion of many, you'd save lives, improve the standing of the Air Force and maybe strengthen the Nation.

If you or Ruth or both of you are out this way with a few moments to spare we'd be delighted to have you for a meal or better to put you up.

Sincerely

General Carl Spaatz, U.S. Air Force, Retired. The Pentagon, Washington, D.C. BENNETT CRAIN
ROSALIND M. SKEHAN
HAZEL E. HORTON

BENNETT CRAIN
ATTORNEY AT LAW
BOWEN BUILDING
WASHINGTON

NATIONAL 4286

May 20, 1952

General Carl A. Spaatz 1522 34th Street, N.W. Washington, D.C.

Dear Tooey:

Fallon, whom you met at the dinner Wednesday night sent me the enclosed as of May 1st. I have been carrying it around in my briefcase expecting to get it to you ever since I received it.

This is a different person from the other friend of Fallon's you tried to help.

I dislike to bother you but Fallon is of importance to the Civil Air Patrol.

Bennett Crain

May 7, 1952

Major General A. R. Crawford U. S. Air Force Weisbaden, Germany

Dear Crawford:

This will introduce Col. Clinton B. F. Brill, U.S.A.F. Reserve, at present on inactive duty. He is an associate of J. E. Greiner & Col., Consulting Engineers. The firm of J. E. Greiner is one of the outstanding organizations of its kind in the United States. They have been responsible for such projects as the Potomac River Bridge, the bridge across the Chesapeake Bay now being built, the Pennsylvania Turnpike and the Friendship Airport of Baltimore.

Col. Brill is coming to Europe in the near future in connection with the construction of airdromes by the Air Force in various European countries.

I am personally well acquainted with the head people of the J. E. Greiner Company and know them to be a thoroughly reliable firm.

I am giving this letter to Col. Brill to deliver to you personally.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

GEORGE H. FALLON

MEMBER COMMITTEE ON PUBLIC RKS
SUBCOMMITTEES:
ROADS CHAIRMAN
RIVERS AND HARBORS

FRANCES BURNS HOYLAND

## Congress of the United States House of Representatives Washington, D. C.

May 1, 1952

Honorable Bennett Crain Attorney at Law 815 15th Street, N. W. Washington, D. C.

Dear Bennett:

I am inclosing necessary information which will be helpful to you in the case of Second Lieutenant John M. Lescure, Jr., who is desirous of resigning his commission from the United States Air Force.

I shall appreciate it very much if you will talk to your good friend General Spaatz regarding this matter and stress its importance with all your persuasive eloquence.

Thanking you for any interest you may take in this matter, and with kindest personal regards, I am

Sincerely yours

h

To letter - Fallow to Bennett brain with

JOHN M. LESCURE, Jr., 2nd Lt. U. S. AIR FORCE AO-1912033 1700th Air Transport Group Continental Division Military Air Transport Service Kelly Air Force Base, Texas

Mr. Lescure during the last War was in the light tanks, saw action in Germany, upon his return to the States attended the University of Maryland approximately  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years and then joined the Air Cadets.

He attempted to become a Pilot but because of a slight hearing defect, he was put into navigation. His possibility of promotion in the Air Force is rather limited because of physical disabilities. He not only has a slight defect in his hearing but also is slightly colorbind. These matters have all been discussed by him with his commanding officers and his physical examination will bear out these facts. His commanding officers have agreed to his resignation. The papers will be in Washington for processing in approximately two weeks.

Since he received his Commission as a Navigator he has been required to be away from home for the better part of the time and in June of last year he was married and is expecting a child about the end of July of this year.

Attached hereto is a statement from the Group Surgeon of the Military Air Transport Service, Kelly Air Force Base, San Antonio, Texas. This report is self-explanatory.

COPY

OFFICE OF THE GROUP SURGEON 1700TH AIR TRANSPORT GROUP CONTINENTAL DIVISION MILITARY AIR TRANSPORT SERVICE KELLY AIR FORCE BASE, TEXAS

SUBJECT: R
Recommendation for Resignation of Commission

TO: Whom It May Concern

l. This is to certify that the undersigned medical officer has examined Mrs. John M. Lescure, and the diagnosis is as follows:

Psychoneurosis: Anxiety hysteria (phobic reaction) manifested as fear of being left alone, fear of losing her husband, fear of being sexually attacked by prowlers, fear of dirt expressed as a compulsion about cleanliness, violent dreams, borderline hallucinatory states occuring during a semi-wakened condition, and rejection of normal social life.

- 2. The foundation for this neurosis is a basic defect in her phychological development produced by her childhood experiences and environment; it has been precipitated by the frequent absences of her husband, John M. Lescure, 2nd Lt UDAF, AO-1912033, due to his duties as a navigator, and by the control of her living situation contingent with her husband's service in the Air Force.
- 3. The prognosis of this particular type of neurosis is good with competent psychoanalytic therapy; however, the expense and availability of such therapy make it prohibitive in Mrs. Lescure's situation. Without such thereapy, her psychoneurosis will become progressively more severe, and she may become actually psychotic unless the stress producing factors mentioned in the above paragraph are removed.
- 4. It is, therefore, recommended by the undersigned medical officer that her husband, John M. Lescure, 2nd Lt USAF, AO-1912033, be allowed to resign his commission as an officer in the United States Air Force for the following reasons:
- a. If the service engendered stress producing factors mentioned above are not removed, Mrs. Lescure's psychoneurosis will become progressively more severe and may actually progress to the stage of psychosis.
- b. Under continued concern and worry about his wife's condition, Lt. Lescure's effectiveness as an officer will be progressively impaired both in the air and on the ground to the point where in the air he will constitute a real hazard to the safety of others dependent on his skill and performance of duty and on the ground he will, be unable to maintain the degree of performance of duty necessary to contribute to efficient operation of the organization to which he is assigned.

/s/ John M. Berry JOHN M. BERRY 1ST LT USAF (MC) Group Surgeon

April 1, 1952

Mr. Cyril Clemens Editor Mark Twein Quarterly Webster Groves, Missouri

Dear Mr. Clemens:

Thanks so much for your letter of March 8 enclosing the editorial which appeared in the St. Louis Globe-Democrat.

Both Mrs. Spaatz and I enjoyed thoroughly our trip to Europe Last summer.

I will try to think up some impressions on Tom Sawyer and Huck Finn and send them along to you.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

CYRIL CLEMENS, Editor.
MARK TWAIN QUARTERLY
WEBSTER GROVES, MO.

8 March, 52

Dear General Carl Spaatz

we are arranging a symposium for Mark Twain. You may care to send some impressions and so honor his memory. You doubtless have memories of your reading Tom and Huck as a boy.

The enclosed editorial may interest you. Are you correctly quoted and the facts accurately presented. Please return unless you wish to keep for your files. It appeared in the St Louis Globe.

Democrat a few days ago.

We hope you and Mrs Spaatz

Cyril Clemens

March 18, 1952

Mr. Joe Crane P. O. Box 164 Mineola, Long Island New York

My dear Mr. Crane:

In reply to your letter of February 29, I have referred your communication to General Beau, National Commander of the Civil Air Patrol, for his action. You will undoubtedly hear from him shortly.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

March 11, 1952

Col. R. Potter Campbell 160 Prospect Street East Orange, New Jersey

Dear Potter:

In reply to your letter of March 7, I am enclosing a copy of the recommendation to Irving, as well as returning the papers you sent me.

I hope you will be successful in obtaining the position.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz

March 11, 1952

Major General Fred J. Irving Superintendent West Point Academy West Point, New York

My dear Irving:

I have just learned that Colonel R. Potter Campbell, class of 1916, has applied for the position as Director of the West Point Museum.

I have known Campbell, of course, since our days together at the Academy. I am sure that, if selected, he would fill that position in a marmer befitting the dignity of West Point.

I particularly remember Campbell's part in 100th Night and Color Line activities. The fact that he is a former president of the Dialectic Society and edited his class Furlough and Howitzer would indicate that he was outstanding in his class. He has also been successful in the field of organizing and financing companies, which necessitated wide public relations experience and sales ability, both of which should be a decided asset in handling the Museum.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

R. POTTER CAMPBELL 160 PROSPECT STREET EAST ORANGE, NEW JERSEY

7 March 1952

General Carl Speata USAF (Ret'd) 1522 34th Street Washington, 7, D.C.

Dear Toohey: -

As you know, I have been after a suitable connection for quite a while and I've just discovered that there is an opening at the Academy as Director of the West Point Museum which is a natural so far as I am concerned and for which I have applied.

To be acceptable the candidate has to be retired for physical disability, which I am, and not to be above the grade of Colonel - which I also am -; he must also have a flair for showmanship, possess executive and organizing ability and Public Relations experience, all of which I 'immodestly' claim to have. You'll recall my 100th Night activities and though you may not recall it I also was President of the Dialectic, produced the 1916 100th Night, edited the Furlough Book and the Howitzer, was Chairman of the Camp Illumination committee our last year, etc., etc. and the flair for that sort of thing has continued ever since. Between the two world wars as you may recall I was successful in the field of organizing and financing companies and the public relations experience and sales ability acquired would be a decided asset in handling the Museum.

I am told privately that the endorsement or recommendations of graduates would be most helpful and I am sure that your endorsement would be invaluable so I am writing to ask whether you would be kind enough to write Major General Fred J. Irving, the superintendent, and recommend me strongly for the job. I hope that your memory of me from 100th Night and otherwise is sufficiently clear and favorable so that you would be willing to write saying that you had heard I amapplying for the job and that you would like to recommend me for it in the strongest terms.

I will certainly appreciate it if you will be willing to go to bat for me in this instance and I can assure you that I can more than do an outstanding job in it and will not let you down. I enclose a copy of my application and copies of a few letters of commendation et al to bring you up to date. Will you please return them to me as they are my only file copy.

I am told that they are just about to make their selection so if you are kind enough to give me your blessing I hope you will do it promptly. Many thanks and my deep appreciation for anything you feel you can do for me in this matter.

Hym will rend me a copy of your little o'd apprecial of

March 17, 1952

Miss Gertrude Chorches 87 Steele Road West Hartford, Connecticut

Dear Miss Chorches:

Under separate cover I am sending a small gift for your Junior Hadassah Celebrity Auction, which I am happy to contribute for this worthy cause.

Best wishes.

Sincerely yours,

General Carl Spaatz, USAF Retired



Junior Hadassah Hartford, Connecticut

Feb. 26, 1951

Dear General Spaatz:

We are writing to you because of the familiarity of your name to the general public. There is to be a widely publicized County Fair, to be held April 1, 1952. Our chapter of Junior Hadassah, a charitable organization, has received permission to hold a Celebrity Auction in conjunction with the Fair.

We are seeking, not a monetary contribution, but rather, a gift to be auctioned to the general public which will have appeal because of its connection with you.

The Hartford Chapter of Junior Hadassah is holding this

project for the purpose of raising funds to support the child-ren's village of Meier Shfeyah in Israel. At Shfayeh children from every part of the world -- whose lives have been torn from the path of normal living by the ravages of war and unhappy social conditions -- learn to live constructive lives. We are proud of our work and of our children who have, through the years, matured into responsible leaders and workers of the Jewish state. For the sake of Israel, for the sake of humanity, we must continue our work to build healthy, happy and useful citizens at Meier Shfeyah.

We would greatly appreciate any item which you would be kind enough to send us. Your gift may be sent c/o Miss Gertrude Chorches, 87 Steele Road, West Hartford, Connecticut,

at your earliest convenience.

Sincerely yours,

General Chairman

President

March 11, 1952

Mr. Amon G. Carter Post Office Box 150 Fort Worth, Texas

Dear Amon:

I certainly appreciate your thoughtfulness in making available to me a sizeable chunk of the \$4750.00 steer. And I will hound Bascom Timmons until I get mine.

I appreciated very much your P. S. at the end of the letter. For a Texan it was not bragging too much.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats



FORT WORTH 1, TEXAS

March 5, 1952

EXECUTIVE ERNEST ALLEN
LIONEL BEVAN
JOHN S. BROWN
RAYMOND E. BUCK
AMON G. CARTER
EDGAR DEEN
E. L. DOBBS EDGAR DEEN
E. L. DOBS
MARSHALL A FULLER
R. K. HANGER
R. E. HARDING
J. LEE JOHNSON JR.
H. P. JONES
BEN E. KEITH
MARVIN LEONARD
OTTO MONNIG
J. M. NORTH
W. L. PIER
SID RICHARDSON
TOM B. SAUNDERS
GEORGE R. SHEPHERD
W. K. STRIPLING, SR.
GEORGE THOMPSON, JR.
W. R. WATT
H. H. WILKINSON H. H. WILKINSON ED H. WINTON

General Carl Spaatz 1522 - 34th Street, N.W. Washington, D.C.

Dear General:

This is the story of a Texas farmer boy whose education is assured. He was one of about 250 4-H Club boys who brought their young, groomed steers to our Fifty-Sixth Southwestern Exposition and Fat Stock Show which has just closed. Joe Willis of Odessa, Texas, age 12, owned and raised the 4-H Boy's Grand Champion, and when auction time rolled around, I just couldn't resist. The auctioneer sold him to me for the Star-Telegram right while my back was NOT turned for \$4750.00 and that's about \$4.75 a pound on the hoof - \$12.00 in the skillet.

Young Joe seemed very happy. I felt more stimulation from his smiles than I will even from one of these steaks. And, speaking of steaks, a prize one will be sent to you early next week. It will be delivered to you through the courtesy of the American Airlines and the Bascom Timmons organization, the news correspondents for the STAR-TELEGRAM in Washington. We hope it reaches you in good condition.

The Hired Hand at Shady Oak Farm tells me he put the finishing touches to the steer (that I doubt), but the Chef at the Hotel Texas, where it is now in the ice box, tells me to remind you that a Grand Champion steak needs 375 degrees for 15 minutes for rare, 20 minutes for medium, and 25 minutes for well done.

While you are enjoying this steak, just remember that you are doing your bit in the progress of the farmer boys of Texas in the effort needed in creation of food stuffs so that our America may remain AMERICA. That's about all there is to the story - no need to look under the table -Pass the ketchup!

Sincerely Established 1896

- 2 -

P. S. Like the Californian, while on my feet I might call your attention to the fact that Texas Christian University not only won the Southwestern Football Conference for 1951, but they have also won the Southwestern Basketball Conference. We are not bragging, but just make mention in passing of this unusual feat for one university to win both the football and basketball championships.

A. G. C.

February 19, 1952

Mr. Fred C. Grawford Thompson Products, Inc. 23555 Euclid Avenue Cleveland 17, Ohio

Dear Fred:

In reply to your letter of February 8, I will be glad to serve on the advisory committee of the Air Foundation in the preparation of a history of air events.

I shall be here in Washington for the next four or five months and prepared to meet with members of the working committee at any time.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaats

# Thompson Fraducts, Inc.

OFFICE OF THE PRESIDENT

February 8, 1952

General Carl Spaatz 1522 - 34th Street, N. W. Washington 7, D. C.

My dear General:

For a long time I have hoped that a history could be written of air events - such as shows and races - that have taken place during the past fifty years of the age of flight. The Air Foundation is now prepared to undertake such a chronicle. The book should contain many pictures and stories arranged chronologically, and biographical sketches of the fliers and other pioneers who played their part in this colorful history.

The job seems to divide into two parts:

- A search to locate the most interesting pictures, records and incidents folklore of aviation, I might call it.
   Then, the chronological integration of the material gathered.
- The actual writing of the history, which will include the pen sketches of the lives of the pioneers who contributed so much.

It has been suggested that two committees tackle this job under the sponsorship of the Air Foundation: one a working committee; the other, an advisory committee.

The first has already been made up as follows:

Fred R. Witt, Chairman

Director of Advertising, Thompson Products.

Ben T. Franklin

Manager of the Air Foundation and of the National Air Races, who will make the contacts necessary to seek out the information and pictures.

2

Frank K. Dossett

Historian of Thompson Products.

Charles H. Hubbell

Aviation Artist. (Has produced Thompson Products aviation calendar series for a number of years.)

Roy Rutherford

Free lance writer.

It is desirable that the other be made up of aviation old-timers and friends interested in the project. Attached is a tentative list of persons proposed for this advisory committee. We should be delighted to receive any suggestions you might have for others. Members will have no duties or responsibilities other than:

- 1. Contributing what stories they can from their own experiences.
- Helping to locate the pictures and infprmation needed and supplying leads as to other sources of material.

I hope very much that you can accept an appointment to the Advisory Committee. If you can, one or more members of the Working Committee will call on you in the months ahead. They will listen and take notes while you reminisce, and will ask your suggestions as to others whom they should contact for additional material.

It will probably take a good two years to do the whole job properly, but we want to take our time in order to be thorough and accurate. It may be that the book can be published by the end of 1953 - Kitty Hawk Day in that year would be an appropriate publication date to aim at.

Aviation covers such a tremendous range that we propose to confine ourselves only to that phase of aviation pertaining to air meets, races, shows, demonstrations, and similar public events that have been staged to arouse public interest.

Here's hoping you will join us in this venture.

Sincerely,

President, Air Foundation

FCC: TS

Enc.

ET:KS: -52

Invitation List To Serve On Air F Indation Advisory Committee (Air Event History)

Lawrence D. Bell Bell Aircraft Corporation P. Q. Box One Buffalo 5, New York

Major John Berry Cleveland-Hopkins Airport Cleveland 11, Ohio

Air Vice Marshal William A. Bishop 3490 Peel Street Montreal, Quebec, Canada

Rear Admiral Richard E. Byrd 9 Brimmer Street Boston, Massachusetts

E. W. Cleveland Cleveland Pneumatic Tool Company 3781 East 77 Street Cleveland 5. Ohio

Jacqueline Cochrane 435 East 52nd Street New York City 22

Ira C. Eaker
Hughes Tool Company
Florence Ave. & Peale St.
Culver City, California

Paul E. Garber Smithsonian Institution National Air Museum Washington 25, D. C.

John P. V. Heinmuller Longines-Wittnauer Watch Co., Inc. 580 Fifth Avenue New York City 19

Clifford W. Henderson P.O. Box 1 Palm Desert, California

Howard R. Hughes Hughes Productions 7000 Remaine St. Hollywood 38, California

S. Paul Johnston
Institute of the Aeronautical Sciences
Elizabeth
New York City 21

Alford J.
The Eyrie
Elizabeth

Charles S. Jones 38 Park Place Newark, New-Jersey Gen. George C. Kenney Air Adjutant General Headquarters, USAF Washington, D. C.

Brig. Gen. Frank P. Lahm 3360 Avalon Road Cleveland 20, Ohio

Lt. Gen. Curtis E. LeMay Commanding General Strategic Air Command Offutt Air Force Base Omaha, Nebraska

Col. Charles A. Lindberg Scott's Cove Darien, Connecticut

Glenn L. Martin Glenn L. Martin Co. Baltimore 3, Maryland

Wayne W. Parrish American Aviation 1025 Vermont Ave., N.W. Washington 4, D. C.

Major Augustus Post 58 West 57th Street New York City 19

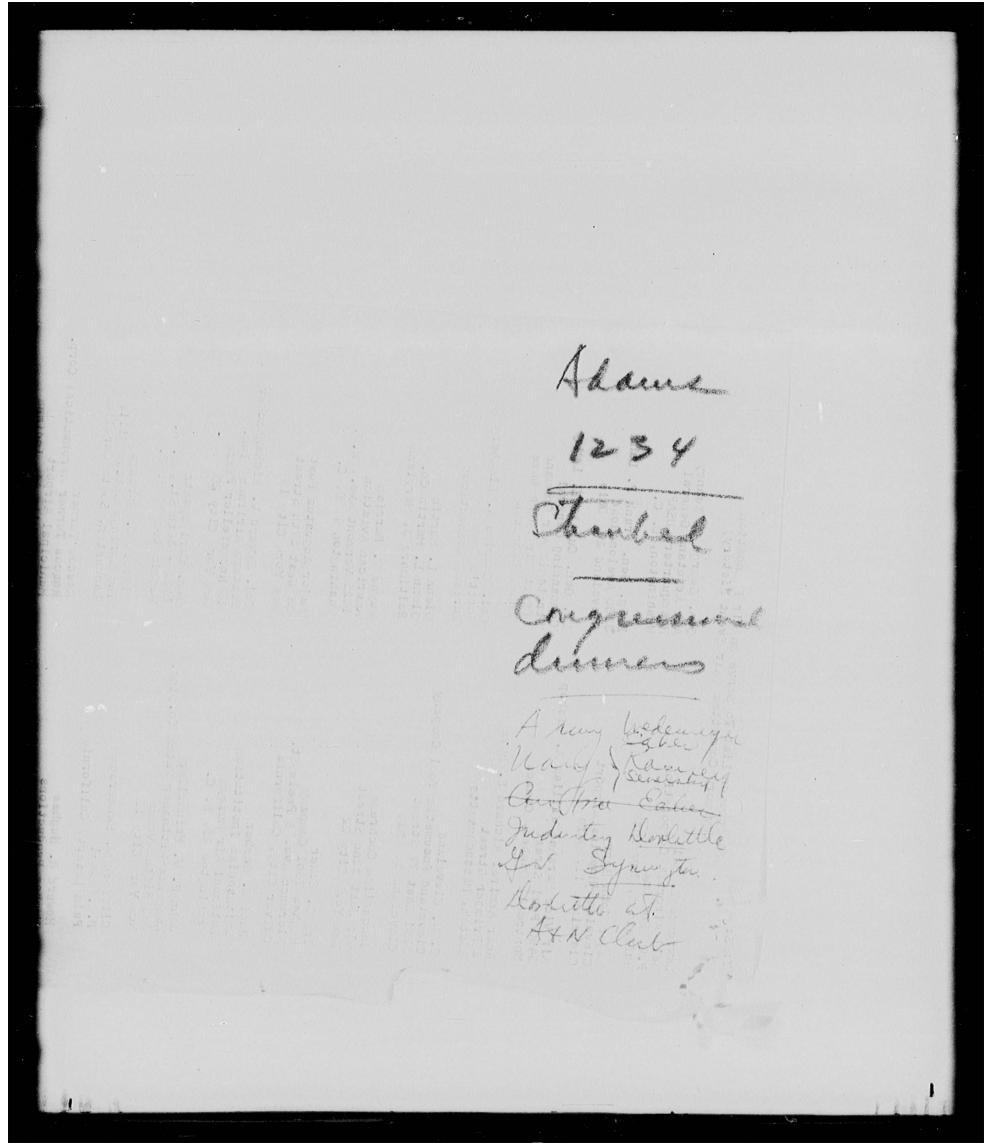
Col. Edward V. Rickenbacker Eastern Airlines, Inc. 10 Rockefeller Plaza New York City 20

Gen. Carl Spaatz 1522 - 34th St., N. W. Washington 7, D. C.

Filiott W. Springs
The Springs Cotton Mills
Lancaster, South Carolina

Roscoe Turner
Roscoe Turner Aeronautical Corp.
Municipal Airport
Indianapolis 44, Indiana

Alford J. Williams
The Eyrie
Elizabeth City, North Carolina





## American Association

FOR STATE AND LOCAL HISTORY

Sturbridge, Massachusetts

Education Bldg. Albany, New York February 4, 1952

ALBERT B. COREY President New York State Historian Albany, New York

EARLE W. NEWTON Secretary Editor, American Heritage Sturbridge, Massachusetts

S. K. STEVENS Treasurer Pennsylvania State Historian Harrisburg, Pennsylvania

Howard H. Peckham Association Editor Director, Indiana Historical Bureau Indianapolis, Indiana

CLIFFORD L. LORD Director, State Historical Society Madison, Wisconsin

LANCASTER POLLARD Supt., Oregon Historical Society Portland, Oregon

LESTER J. CAPPON

Institute of Early American Culture Williamsburg, Virginia Much . C. C. CRITTENDEN Director, Dept. of Archives & History Raleigh, North Carolina

Louis C. Jones
Director, New York State Historical Assn.
Gooperstown, New York

AUBREY NEASHAM Regional Historian, National Park Service San Francisco, Galifornia

JAMES C. OLSON Supt., Nebraska State Historical Society BC : BCR

FREDERICK L. RATH Director, The National Trust Washington, D. C.

FRANK O. SPINNEY Curator, Old Sturbridge Village Sturbridge, Massachusetts

GEORGE W. SPRAGGE 206 Huron Street-Room 216 Toronto 5, Ontario, Canada

General Carl A. Spaatz Newsweek 1227 National Press Bldg. Washington 4, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

HOWARD H. PECKHAM
Association Editor
Director, Indiana Historical Bureau
Indiana Bisterial Bureau
Statement concerning the spirit of West Point for
American Heritage. The Editor, Earle Newton, tells me
REGIONAL VICE PRESIDENTS that he has had to send the copy for the spring issue
EDWARD P. ALEXANDER to the press in order to have it published as nearly
Director of Interpretation
Colonial Williamsburg, Virginia on time as possible. He also tells me he has not inVIRGINIA L. GAMBRELL cluded the West Point article in it. Instead he is
Director, Dallas Historical Society saving this article for the summer issue which comes
CLIFFORD L. LORD
Director, State Historical Society
State Historical

We would be very happy indeed if you would consent to write a statement for the summer issue. A two column page with a suitable heading would make it possible for us to print around 800 words. I trust that this appears to be a reasonable limit to you. If we could have the article by around March 1, we should appreciate it very

Sincerely yours

Albert B. Corey President

January 29, 1952

Mr. Albert B. Corey President American Association for State and Local History Education Department Albany, New York

Dear Mr. Corey:

I appreciate very much the copy of American Heritage which you sent me.

With reference to a page in the spring issue on the spirit of West Point, I should be glad to attempt to write something. Please let me know how many words you desire.

Sincerely,

General Carl Spaatz



ALBERT B. COREY President New York State Historian Albany, New York

EARLE W. NEWTON Secretary Editor, American Heritage Sturbridge, Massachusetts

S. K. STEVENS Treasurer Pennsylvania State Historian Harrisburg, Pennsylvania

HOWARD H. PECKHAM Association Editor Director, Indiana Historical Bureau Indianapolis, Indiana

REGIONAL VICE PRESIDENTS

EDWARD P. ALEXANDER

Director of Interpretation
Colonial Williamsburg, Virginia

VIRGINIA L. GAMBRELL Director, Dallas Historical Society Dallas, Texas

CLIFFORD L. LORD Director, State Historical Society Madison, Wisconsin

LANCASTER POLLARD Supt., Oregon Historical Society Portland, Oregon

COUNCIL

LESTER J. CAPPON Institute of Early American Culture Williamsburg, Virginia

C. C. CRITTENDEN

Director, Dept. of Archives & History
Raleigh, North Carolina

Louis C. Jones

Director, New York State Historical Assn.
Gooperstown, New York

AUBREY NEASHAM Regional Historian, National Park Service San Francisco, California

JAMES C. OLSON Supt., Nebraska State Historical Society Lincoln, Nebraska

> FREDERICK L. RATH Director, The National Trust Washington, D. C.

FRANK O. SPINNEY Curator, Old Sturbridge Village Sturbridge, Massachusetts

GEORGE W. SPRAGGE 206 Huron Street-Room 216 Toronto 5, Ontario, Canada

## American Association

FOR STATE AND LOCAL HISTORY

Sturbridge, Massachusetts

Education Dept. Albany, New York

January 2, 1952

General Carl A. Spaatz 1522-34 Street N.W. Washington, D. C.

Dear General Spaatz:

I am enclosing a copy of American Heritage which is published by the American Association for State and Local History. This particular issue features the California Centennial and includes a number of other articles and stories of interest to our people throughout the country. The magazine is now in its third year. The members of the Association have published this magazine on a voluntary basis. American Heritage now has a circulation of 9000.

The spring issue for 1952 is to be devoted to New York State with particular emphasis upon the Hudson and Mohawk valleys. One of the feature articles is to be on West Point. It will, of course, be suitably illustrated. What we need, however, is a one page statement about the spirit of West Point, what it stands for and what it means to the nation. I am encouraged to ask you to write such a statement in view of the magnificent contribution which you made to the understanding of American people in connection with the recent expulsions from West Point. We in the American Association for State and Local History believe that the American people need constantly to be made aware of the moral values which our institutions are designed to uphold. We believe that this is an essential part of our heritage.

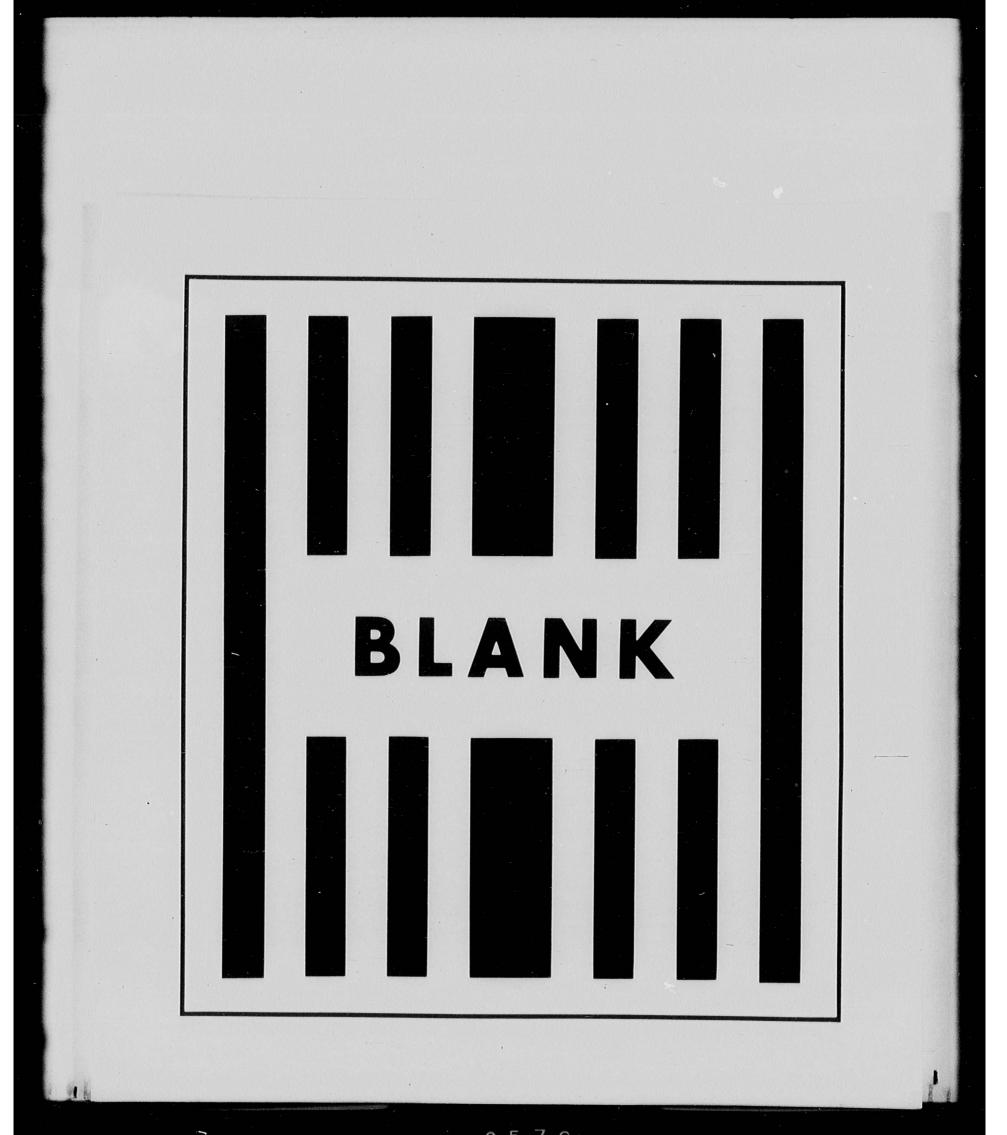
We shall hold a page of the spring issue for you in the hope that you will find it possible to write a statement on the spirit of West Point.

Sincerely yours

Albert B. Corey President

ABC: ECR

Encl.



THIS PAGE IS DECLASSIFIED IAW EO 13526